





# GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 05

*Ni Cang Tian*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

# Synopsis

---

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 401: Rampage

---

"Be careful with this guy. He has become crazy already. Don't stay too close to him." The middle-aged warrior with a scarred face snorted coldly then said impatiently, "At this time, if he really wants to die, I don't mind fulfilling his wish."

While he was talking, his eyes were cold as he was observing ShiYan aggressively. He looked like he wanted to finish ShiYan.

It was unknown if it was that warrior's hostility that drew ShiYan's attention, but he let out a loud roar and fiercely looked at everyone. His crazy, bloodthirsty eyes suddenly gazed at that middle-aged warrior.

"What are you staring at? Do you want to die?" That warrior revealed a cold, disdainful smile. "What's good about having Bedevilment? After all, you're only at the Nirvana Realm. Since you want to die, I will satisfy your wish."

"Tu Ke, this kid's a disciple of our Divine Radiant Cult. If you touch him, I will not forgive you," shouted ZhaoFeng.

"He's insane. You want to cover a madman?" That middle-aged warrior with his scarred face, whose name was Tu Ke, revealed a cold countenance as he contemptuously ridiculed. "This kind of person doesn't have a firm will-power. In this critical time, he let himself fall into bedevilment. I am afraid that even when he wakes up, he will not be of much use. You shouldn't care for him."

"Howl!"

However, at this point in time, ShiYan roared once again. He now looked like a crazy beast; his entire body poured out a white mist rushing toward Tu Ke.

Tu Ke wore a cold face, as he sneered. "Want to die?!"

"Tu Ke, don't do anything rash," ZhaoFeng shouted. "This guy is our Divine Radiant Cult's disciple. Dealing with him means dealing

with the Divine Radiant Cult. If you dare to kill him, I will not forgive you."

"Since when has Pure Land been scared of the Divine Radiant Cult?" Tu Ke laughed strangely. Seeing ShiYan rushing over, Tu Ke pulled out a corpse next to him, which he had captured and tied up. The body of this ancient corpse, which had lost its secret treasure, was badly damaged and had no power remained. After a blow from Tu Ke, a beam of blood-like light suddenly poured into the ancient corpse.

The ancient corpse dashed toward ShiYan. On the way, the bloody, flesh body of the ancient corpse fell off, leaving only a skeleton.

Under the repulsive force, the skeleton of the corpse abruptly burst out. Its hard thick, long bones turned into a stream of blood, splashing on ShiYan's body.

Clatter.

The sound of metal collision came up from ShiYan's chest. Sharp, bloody bones pierced through his body, which was like bombarding a hard stone. Light spurted out from ShiYan's chest; his clothes were torn down, but his skin remained undamaged.

Tu Ke squinted while his face revealed a glimpse of fright.

ZhaoFeng, LiYue, and others were also dumbstruck, looking at ShiYan with disbelief in their eyes.

Tu Ke had the Third Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base. Pure Land's secret martial techniques were famous for strange and aggressive features. This method of using a warrior's bones as attacking spears was called Variant Flesh-bone Spear, which was terrifyingly intimidating. Ordinary secret defensive treasures could barely resist it.

Although ShiYan faced that fierce Blood Spear's stabbing force with only his sturdy body, his whole body was totally unharmed.

That gave other people a bone-chilling and panicked feeling.

Is this kid an ordinary human? How come this guy's body could be even mightier than typical beasts?

The crowd couldn't help but have this thought in their mind. They all looked at ShiYan with frightened eyes. They subconsciously took one step backward, scared that ShiYan in the 'Bedevilment' state would consider them as prey.

"Ha ha ha, Tu Ke, you couldn't do it." ZhaoFeng was about to lend a hand to ShiYan, but when he saw ShiYan is still safe, he suddenly became happy and couldn't help but burst into laughter. "It looks like your Pure Land's secret techniques cannot compare to our Divine Radiant Cult's. This disciple didn't even use a secret treasure, and your Variant Flesh-bone Spear still couldn't harm him. It really makes me doubt if Pure Land has the unearned reputation."

LiYue also showed a contemptuous smile and said, "Well, despite having such high reputation, Pure Land seems to exaggerate their fame. From what I've witnessed today, it turns out to be just regular."

The faces of Tu Ke and the other Pure Land's warriors were all pale while their eyes became gloomy.

At this time, ShiYan once again roared loudly as he was crazily dashing toward Tu Ke. A bunch of starlight spots flashed out from his chest. It seemed that he was enhancing his defensive power.

Like a beam of starlight, ShiYan zoomed over and instantly appeared in front of Tu Ke. Terrible soul fluctuations flowed out from his red eyes.

Just with a look at ShiYan, Tu Ke's Sea of Consciousness was strongly stirred up. He had a feeling of being submerged in an endless sea of blood and besieged by many ancient corpses.

"This kid's eyes can shoot out mind attack. Be careful!" A Third



Sky of Sky Realm warrior suddenly shouted when he saw Tu Ke revealing a trace of unconsciousness.

Tu Ke's eyes instantly restored to their normal state. He felt his blood was chilled while his sturdy body twisting like a snake. His bones then produced a loud sound which constantly reverberated from inside of his body.

His bones burst out like fried beans popping. When the sound echoed from inside his body, Tu Ke's body suddenly emitted a dark green halo. This halo was like some kind of liquid covering his entire body. This dark green light was a little devilish. Amongst the misty drizzle, there seemed to be a malicious spirit lodging on his body.

Waiting for ShiYan to rush over, this green liquid quickly opened and turned into three green spooky ghost claws, which then stretched out and snatched ShiYan.

"Dark Green Ghost Hand!" Tu Ke sneered coldly and opened his mouth, spitting out a bunch of lights, which divided into three and went into the claws separately.

The three ghost claws, under the lights from his mouth, exposed three green eyes looked like ferocious ghosts from Hell peeping into the human world and spreading out icy, green lights.

A soul devouring thought spread out and directly infiltrated SY's Sea of Consciousness through his red eyes.

"You dare!"

ZhaoFeng roared angrily and couldn't help but finally take action. He launched a bunch of scorching Sun God Light toward Tu Ke. In the divine light, people could vaguely see the sun nourishing all creatures. Those creatures could survive and reproduce under the sunshine.

Another Pure Land warrior grunted, leaped up and instantly appeared next to Tu Ke. A round drum flew out from his sleeves.

As soon as the drum emerged, it bulged and produced a dull ‘thumping’ sound.

After releasing the Sun God Light, under the impact of that drum sound, creatures which appeared in the God light seemed to be destroyed one by one leaving no trace.

The Intent Domain lodging on the Sun God Light was smashed down. The intimidation of the Sun God Light also reduced significantly. That warrior took the opportunity to launch a blow. Five different lights from the round drum flashed up and disappeared, instantly shooting to the Sun God Light and destroying the power of that Sun God Light.

Crack crack.

Tu Ke's three ghost claws had now grabbed ShiYan's neck. The devil claws were as sharp as knives, mercilessly pressing ShiYan's throat, releasing a creepy sound.

As soon as ChiXiao, CaiYi, and others saw ShiYan encountering danger, they immediately rushed over, attempting to help ShiYan confront the enemy.

The two brothers LaoLi also shouted. They seemed to have some kind of divine power as the gloves on their hands released a fierce, torrential Intent Domain striking toward the group of the Pure Land's warriors.

The three ghost claws squeezed ShiYan's neck even more tightly. Although there was a horrifying sound, his neck wasn't torn apart but remained unscathed.

The Dark Green Ghost Hand revealed the ghost eyes staring at ShiYan's red eyes. A cold, evil god power penetrated his Sea of Consciousness attempted to make him unable to control his body or form an effective defensive force...

Wailing!

ShiYan roared crazily. A bunch of blood-red lights burst out from

his red eyes. An Intent Domain of destruction, violence, and bloodshed jumped directly into the ghost eyes of the three ghost claws.

Those three ghost eyes exploded one by one. The Intent Domain inside the ghost eyes that came from Tu Ke was fragmented.

Right after that, Tu Ke's body was also affected by that evil Intent Domain. His face suddenly changed as a small stream of blood light flashed up in his eyes.

ShiYan swung his arms which were now a purple hue. Violent power spewed out and aggressively shrouded the three Dark Green Ghost Hands.

Bang bang bang.

The three Dark Green Ghost Hands condensed by Tu Ke all burst open, turning into many green dots of light, which then dissipated into heaven and earth.

"How can it be?"

Tu Ke subconsciously screamed out loud. "You are only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm. How can you break the Dark Green Ghost Hands that I have condensed? Impossible!"

Tu Ke shouted while his face finally revealed a glimpse of fright. He hurriedly stepped backward.

ShiYan's figure wiggled a little bit. A huge purple-red fist suddenly appeared on Tu Ke's right side and fiercely hit him.

This kind of power was like a surging tide, bringing along the Intent Domain of destruction, bloodthirst, and craziness that instantly poured into Tu Ke's body.

When this horrifying energy struck his body, an explosive sound resonated from Tu Ke's body. His ribs even protruded through his skin.

Tu Ke screamed tragically. Blood kept flowing out like a river on

his left hip. In his screams, Tu Ke looked like he was encountering devils and hurriedly dodged away in panic, not daring to face ShiYan anymore.

He was terrified.

A few warriors, who were surrounding and watching them, wore a frightened look. Their eyes glued on ShiYan in fright.

Although ShiYan was only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, which was one level lower than Tu Ke, he could still injure Tu Ke severely. What kind of situation was this?

"ShiYan, you're really powerful."

LaoLi burst into laughter. An arrogant divine power flowed around his body. Together with his brother LaoLun, he was dealing with a First Sky of Sky Realm warrior of Pure Land who was now covered in blood. It seemed that this warrior didn't have even the slightest resistance left.

ShiYan fought with a warrior who was one level higher than him and defeated his opponent. ZuoShi's eyes sparked strange lights. Seeing ShiYan who was in his Bedevilment displaying his intimidation, her heart was moved a little bit as she felt that ShiYan somehow had an unspeakable evil charm in this state.

# Chapter 402: Mistaken

---

Ten ancient corpses were floating in the galaxy. Each of them had an ancient formation, the center of which was inlaid with a secret treasure.

After ShiYan had attacked Tu Ke, the Divine Radiant Cult's members ZhaoFeng and LiYue,, after hesitating a little bit, both dashed toward the Pure Land's warriors to take action. The fight between the Divine Radiant Cult and the Pure Land affected most of the other warriors.

Seeing ShiYan gazing crazily at Tu Ke, ChiXiao, CaiYi, LaoLi, and the others were afraid that the Pure Land's warriors would join forces to kill him. Thus, they also rushed up and stared at those warriors.

Pure Land had only two Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors. Tu Ke was shrouded by ShiYan's attack as he was exhaustedly struggling to deal with ShiYan's pursuit. The other Third Sky of Sky Realm warrior was besieged by the unity of ZhaoFeng and LiYue and was strenuously resisting the opponent's attack.

The strength of ZhaoFeng and the other Divine Radiant Cult's warriors were not inferior to that of the Pure Land's warriors. Together with the power of ChiXiao, CaiYi, LaoLi, and the others, the Divine Radiant Cult had gained the upper hand. At this moment, Pure Land's warriors kept screaming.

Other warriors stood aside to watch them. When they saw the Divine Radiant Cult and the Pure Land fighting with each other, they were a little hesitant, but tried to avoid the fight and continued to deal with the ancient corpses.

If those ancient corpses were not destroyed, the secret treasures on their chests would not fall, and thus, they would not be able to obtain those secret treasures.

These people had joined together to deal with ancient corpses because of those secret treasures. Unless those treasures fell out of the corpses, they would not attack each other.

However, once the secret treasures fell from the corpses, these warriors would then immediately fight against each other.

Every time anyone was lucky enough to get a secret treasure, that person would be extremely happy, hurriedly storing it in his Storage Ring, keeping guard together with his fellows to prevent someone from stealing it.

The situation was unbearably chaotic.

The only people that were not affected by this fierce battle were grandfather ZuoXu and his niece, ZuoShi.

When ShiYan let out a roar, ZuoXu's Sea of Consciousness trembled and his mind was damaged. He knew that his realm was not high enough, and thus, he would be easily defeated in the hands of those Sky Realm warriors. Hence, he didn't make a move to get those secret treasures.

Moreover, he was worried for ZuiShi's safety as well, afraid that the fight might spread to her. Thus, he decided to stay back to help protect her.

In the fierce battle, once ZuoXu and ZuoShi saw the danger coming, they would immediately create a few phantoms. Then, with the help of these illusory phantoms, they could escape from the risk at ease.

They didn't seek for merit but safety. ZuoXu and ZuoShi used all means to make sure that they were unharmed.

Everyone's goal was the secret treasures on the ancient corpses. When those warriors saw ZuoXu and ZhiShi weren't showing desire nor had any action to prevent them from taking the secret treasures, they left ZuoXu and ZhiShi in peace, which helped the two of them become the safest ones in this place.

ShiYan was still in his bedevilment state as he was being covered with a violent, crazy, and bloodthirsty aura. His whole body hovered around in a thick white layer of mist in which there seemed to be substantial fluctuations. Anyone who came close to him would be instantly affected by this negative power, and that person's Sea of Consciousness would become a mess.

ZuoXu quietly observed and realized that wherever ShiYan passed, the warriors who were fighting there all tried to avoid him.

For those who didn't avoid him, if the white mist hovering around ShiYan's body touched their bodies, their sockets would redden, and their faces then wore a wild, bloodthirsty expression.

Not only was he under the bedevilment state, but he could also pull other people into this kind of craziness. The thick white mist was filled with negative feelings enough for a regular warrior to instantly become the most ferocious beast. That warrior would lose his mind and would not even spare his companions next to him.

ZuoXu was secretly aghast, as he understood deeper about ShiYan. He strictly warned ZuoShi that before he restored his consciousness, she absolutely must not get close to ShiYan to avoid being affected by his negative emotions.

ZuoShi grinned and didn't care. She just curiously looked at ShiYan while her eyes flickered with strange and excited lights.

The one most filled with regret in the field was Tu Ke. He was hit on his left hip by ShiYan's bombardment. A violent, bloodthirsty force penetrated his body, breaking some of his ribs as well. Right now, that violent, bloodthirsty evil force still stayed inside his body and was slaughtering freely, which prevented him from using his full strength.

In this state, although Tu Ke still had spare power to launch his strikes, many martial techniques of the Pure Land couldn't destroy ShiYan's body after hitting it hard. They couldn't stop ShiYan

even just a bit.

ShiYan's body was trembling as the coercive power of his body was like tens of thousands of galloping horses. At this moment, regardless of the defense force of his body or the burst of his body's energy, they both reached a level that he had never achieved.

Under the bedevilment state, his strength seemed to become easier to urge. When various types of mysterious martial techniques engraved in his mind were cast out, not only were they not influenced by the state of bedevilment, but they also had a massive increase in effect.

His normal power was already incredible, but the bursting power had become more perfect and terrifying when it was released from his hands.

The Second Sky of Rampage, the state of bedevilment, and all kinds of power perfectly burst out.

Tu Ke now realized that he had mistaken ShiYan.

Although ShiYan was clearly at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, his momentum suddenly skyrocketed. His frantic, evil energy torrentially flowed in his body together with different surging spirits which were enough to affect a person's mind. Whether it was a physical attack or mind invasion, Tu Ke couldn't bear either of them.

He had used all kinds of secret techniques but couldn't harm ShiYan's body. On the contrary, he was too frustrated under ShiYan's attack that the situation had become more and more unfavorable to him.

"ZhaoFeng!" Tu Ke avoided ShiYan's attack as quick as electricity and couldn't help but shout, "Is this kid really a disciple of the Divine Radiant Cult? I knew that the Divine Radiant Cult had a few extraordinary saplings, but I have never heard of this guy!"

"Humph!" ZhaoFeng showed a trace of disdain, coldly sneered.



"The Divine Radiant Cult's internal situation is much more profound than you can imagine. The occasional appearance of one or two outstanding young guys is normal. The Pure Land's ancestors also had this kind of metamorphosis. Unfortunately, those people haven't entered the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist yet. You have provoked the fight this time, so just consider it as the misfortune you have to bear."

ZhaoFeng revealed a cold sneer again and then, together with LiYue, he rushed over to another Third Sky of Sky Realm warrior of the Pure Land to bombard indiscriminately. Facing the unity of these two people, this Third Sky of Sky Realm warrior looked extremely strained as he didn't have any way to take the initiative in the offense. He could only use some defensive methods to deal with ZhaoFeng and LiYue.

In this chaotic situation, a few people who were affected by ShiYan's negative emotions slowly moved toward ShiYan for an unknown reason as if they were controlled by some evil force. Moreover, they were compelled to unite with ShiYan. Following ShiYan's moves, they rushed toward Tu Ke, starting to besiege and attack him.

Although these people only had the First Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base, they were not afraid of death and didn't take into account their casualties. They were even willing to sacrifice their own lives to fight and kill Tu Ke for ShiYan.

A tall and mighty warrior, who had red eyes like ShiYan's, crazily roared and howled, took the opportunity when Tu Ke dodged to move to his side, and then tightly shackled him.

Bang bang bang.

A tremendous thundering sound came up from that warrior. Numerous lightning bolts shot out from his entire body and quickly wrapped around Tu Ke

Tu Ke suddenly paled. He shouted, "Get out!"

A piece of fish scale-shaped light came out from Tu Ke's body. That thin piece was dark blue and extremely sharp, bombarded the warrior.

In a short time, the warrior's body was full of blood splashing everywhere. Even his skin and flesh were split open and cut into pieces.

However, in this situation, this warrior still didn't let go of his opponent. He continued to hug Tu Ke tightly without the fear of death. He seemed to be ready to sacrifice his own life. ShiYan took this opportunity to take action.

Another warrior whose eyes were also red stayed behind that warrior. He also rushed toward Tu Ke and wrapped around Tu Ke from behind, increasing the pressure to prevent Tu Ke from forcefully struggling.

ShiYan gasped for breath while his eyes were flooded with evil lights. He didn't say a word and instantly appeared in front of Tu Ke.

ShiYan raised his arms. In this critical time, the Life and Death Seal merged into one and quickly flew out toward Tu Ke.

His Life and Death Seal flashed up and disappeared, penetrating his head.

Tu Ke's eyes became dull. His face had a painful look. It seemed that he was struggling hard, wanting to chase out the evil forces invading his head.

Boom Boom.

Two Earth-shaking explosive sounds came up from inside of Tu Ke's head. His head was like a watermelon being pounded forcefully on the ground and then bursting out. A mix of brain and blood suddenly splashed out.

And just like that, Tu Ke, the Third Sky of Sky Realm warrior, was killed by ShiYan. Even his head had exploded.

Many warriors who were still fighting for the secret treasures couldn't help but raise their heads to look when hearing the explosion. Their faces all changed as their eyes flooded with fear.

ShiYan, who had just killed Tu Ke, still had red eyes and was dashing over to the nearest warrior in an attempt to kill him, too.

It was another warrior in the center of the lake, who also had the Third Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base.

The next chosen victim had just killed an ancient corpse, took the secret treasure whose shape was like both knife and fork and put it into his storage ring. He was laughing and cheerfully shouting, "Sacred level Secret Treasure! Sacred level Secret Treasure! Hahaha, this trip was worth it. This trip was worth it."

While laughing, his two eyes flickered with divine lights. He then looked around to find another target to continue to snatch the secret treasure off it.

However, at this time, he looked in ShiYan's direction.

ShiYan's eyes were still red as a bunch of blood-red lights shot out from his sockets. The blood lights were three meters long or so. They were like two flows of scarlet blood floating out from his eyes, bringing people a feeling of terror.

# Chapter 403: Diamond Martial Spirit

---

Just taking a glance at Shi Yan immediately startled that man. His Sea of Consciousness violently trembled. A murderous desire rebelliously surged up in his heart, generating a crazy desire of killing all creatures.

Not good!

Shuddering inside, he quickly stopped smiling and started to condense his strength, ready to deal with Shi Yan's attack.

The person who was under his bedevilment state hardly had his consciousness. As long as he considered someone a target, the external environment could barely change it. The only thing that one could do was kill the person who was in the bedevilment state, or else, he would pursue and kill the other person.

That warrior's mind was as bright as snow. That was why when he realized Shi Yan's state, he knew what he should do.

"Stop. Let us handle this guy first. This guy's existence can only disturb us and is a threat to everybody." That warrior turned his head and coldly harrumphed, stopping the other fellows of his team from attacking the ancient corpses and asking them to divert the target.

This team came from the Martial Spirit Palace in the Divine Great Land, which was one of the seven ancient factions in the Divine Great Land. They all had a long history. This sect was the one who had dominated the Divine Great Land for tens of thousands of years. In this Sect, all kinds of martial spirits were multiplied to the extreme; almost all of their warriors had a special martial spirit.

Speaking of Xiao Ling, who was the leader of this team, he was a protector outside the Martial Spirit Palace and was nominated to be the elder in the future.

As long as Xiao Ling could enter the Spirit Realm and pass the Martial Spirit Palace's assessment, he would be qualified to be ordained as one of the Elders of the Martial Spirit Palace. Regardless of his position in the Martial Spirit Palace or the access to wealth, it was far better than his current position as a protector.

He came to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist to find some Sacred level secret treasures to prepare for the Martial Spirit Palace's assessment.

The seven ancient factions in the Divine Great Land didn't really get along well. They still harshly fought with each other. Xiao Ling had also killed quite a lot of warriors from other forces in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist this time. All along the way on his journey, he nearly hadn't encountered any setbacks.

Even if Shi Yan didn't find him, maybe because of the secret treasures Shi Yan's team possessed, he would find and kill Shi Yan's team in the end.

The fact that Zhao Feng and Li Yue fought with Tu Ke was exactly what he wanted. Therefore, when the people of Zhao Feng's group and Chi Xiao's group united to fight against Tu Ke's team from the Pure Land, he didn't participate, and just stared at the ancient corpses and killed them, taking this opportunity to harvest more secret treasures.

He actually had his own calculations. He wanted to wait for Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and Tu Ke to fight until both sides were all severely injured, and then he would jump in and clean up the mess by defeating Zhao Feng and Tu Ke, and swooping the leftover benefits.

When Shi Yan rushed towards him, he observed around a little and realized that Tu Ke had died. The people of Zhao Feng and Li Yue's group had a significant advantage.

This was obviously not what he wanted to see.

Therefore, the fact that Shi Yan came to him suited his purpose. After a loud roar, other warriors from the Martial Spirit Palace understood his mind. They all coldly sneered and looked at Shi Yan, wanting to take the opportunity to exterminate him who was under the bedevilment state.

There were seven warriors from the Martial Spirit Palace, including Xiao Ling. Among them, Xiao Ling and another warrior, Xiao Hai, were both at the Third Sky of Sky Realm. As for the remaining five warriors, three of them were at the Second Sky of Sky Realm. This team was the strongest one in the small lake. These seven people all made Shi Yan their target. They had absolute confidence.

"Not good!" Zuo Shi couldn't help but scream anxiously, "Grandpa, Shi Yan's in danger. Those seven people are very dangerous. I am afraid that Shi Yan won't be able to withstand."

Zuo Xu's face also changed and became grave. He nodded and said, "Two Third Sky of Sky Realm, three Second Sky of Sky Realm, and another two First Sky of Sky Realm warriors... This unit is much stronger than the Divine Radiant Cult's team and the Pure Land's team. Shi Yan's only on his own; he will apparently suffer a great loss."

"What should we do, Grandpa?" Zuo Shi anxiously and helplessly said, "I am only at the Earth Realm; I am afraid I cannot help him."

"Don't think about giving him a hand." Zuo Xu shook his head and grabbed her. "If you go there, you will instantly be killed. Even if I go there, I cannot change anything."

Zuo Shi showed a worried face and then turned towards Zhao Feng and Li Yue, shouting, "Shi Yan's in danger."

While Zhao Feng and Li Yue were dealing with the remaining Nirvana Realm warriors, they heard Zuo Shi. They both turned their head to throw a quick glance over. Zhao Feng suddenly shouted, "Xiao Ling you scum, you guys are such shameless. You

deal with only one kid of ours when you have that many people. Don't you feel any shame?"

"He comes here to die himself. Don't blame us." Xiao Ling grinned while his left arm turned slightly golden, performing his Diamond Martial Spirit. His entire body had an invincible ardor that nothing could defeat. It seemed that with only his left arm, he could break all the barriers of the world.

The Holy Land of the Martial Spirit Palace discovered the Metal Space of the Five Elements Space in the Divine Great Land. For Xiao Ling to cultivate his Diamond Martial Spirit to the peak, he had arduously cultivated in that metal space for thirty years. This helped his Diamond Martial Spirit absorb more than ten different functional metals from that metal space. His entire body could be instantly metalized, turning same as metal-class secret treasures.

Diamond Spirit Martial was the Sacred level Martial Spirit which had been spread for more than hundred thousand years. Once it was activated, the user's whole body would be metalized. Not only would the body have a solid defense like diamonds, but the arms and legs would also turn into powerful weapons, which were extremely terrifying. The intimidation was also incredibly shocking.

At this moment, Xiao Ling only metalized his left arm. He looked at Shi Yan and rushed over, directly condensing ten kinds of strange metal powers in his body without using any other means, and just simply launched a punch towards Shi Yan.

Strange metal lights burst out.

His metalized arm suddenly became like a shining golden sword, directly stabbing on Shi Yan's chest with a loud bang.

Shi Yan crazily rushed forward as metal-collision sounds came up from his chest. While dashing forward, he was held back a little bit by this blow, halting in the midst of the strange void.

Ten kinds of strange metal powers pierced through his chest through this punch.

The mysterious power in front of his chest immediately gathered and turned into countless fine beams of energy lights, wrapping around those ten kinds of metal power and preventing them from harming his body.

Safe and sound!

He was stagnant in the air for a while, and then suddenly let out a roar. A bunch of bloody red lights shot out from his eyes.

The two beams of blood light, which were full of brutal, horrible, and negative feelings, instantly dashed toward Xiao Ling, piercing through Xiao Ling's neck and quickly penetrating his body.

"Damn! Freak!" Xiao Ling cursed. His body immediately turned into a gold hue. Gold and silver lights were both radiated from his body skin and quickly covered his entire body.

In a split second, a strange metal power in Xiao Ling's blood came out from his body and then covered his whole body, making him turn into a metal prodigy.

Shi Yan's surging spirit went inside Xiao Ling's body through his neck and then ran all the way along his nerves to his head.

Xiao Ling sneered coldly. His eyes turned gold and silver respectively, and so did his cheeks. That made his body look very strange, which gave people a feeling of watching something inhuman.

The negative madness which flowed inside Xiao Ling's body was blocked by the strange metal power, and thus it couldn't penetrate his head.

"That kid has some tricks, indeed. No wonder why even Tu Ke died in his hands. But don't think that killing Tu Ke also means you can kill me as well." Xiao Ling grinned and said, "Tu Ke isn't my opponent. Once I'm metalized, among the warriors who have



the same realm as me, who can break my body?"

Xiao Ling was extremely arrogant and simply didn't lay his eyes on Shi Yan.

When the other six warriors of the Martial Spirit Palace saw Shi Yan unable to harm Xiao Ling, they were not in a hurry but scattered to stop the other warriors who were following Shi Yan.

Those warriors who were affected by Shi Yan's surging spirit were all at the First Sky of Sky Realm. They all had red eyes and seemed to be enslaved by Shi Yan. As soon as they saw him fight with someone else, they immediately rushed up and didn't even care about their lives.

As the six Martial Spirit Palace's warriors saw that those warriors were only at the First Sky of Sky Realm, they looked even more relaxed, laughed and firmly launched their strikes. All kinds of rare martial spirits were cast out from their bodies.

Either it was the soul fluctuations, or an earthy figure or a watery corporeal body.

These Martial Spirit Palace's warriors had the understanding of martial spirits which was much more profound than a majority of other warriors. When they activated their martial spirits, they seemed to turn into another state, halting the warriors who were affected by the impact of Shi Yan's negative emotions.

"You deal with this guy. I'll go help that stinky kid." Zhao Feng told Li Yue with a solemn face. "This kid is exceptional. If we introduce him to the Gods Sect, they will definitely reward us. As what I've seen, this kid is not just a thing in a small pond. If we help him now, he will bring us unimaginable benefits."

Li Yue's eyes brightened, as she understood immediately. She nodded and said, "Don't worry. I will handle this guy and then come over to help you."

The Divine Radiant Cult had a rigorous reward doctrine. If

someone introduced a talented person to the Sect, the recommender's position would be promoted. Seeing Shi Yan kill Tu Ke even though he was only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, Zhao Feng now treated him as the most potentially powerful warrior of the Gods Sect in the future.

Although Zhao Feng seemed to be generous, he was actually tendentious. He knew that if he could make Shi Yan join the Gods Sect and become their most brilliant star, he would also be promoted accordingly, having more rights and wealth.

Through Shi Yan, perhaps he could learn some mysterious inherited techniques of the Gods Sect, and thus enter the Spirit Realm.

Therefore, as soon as Xiao Ling wanted to destroy Shi Yan, he immediately felt anxious. He didn't care about himself almost defeating his current opponents to rush over to Shi Yan.

"Xiao Hai, deal with Zhao Feng." Seeing Zhao Feng coming over, Xiao Ling revealed a cold smile and spoke to his fellow.

Xiao Hai nodded, indicating that he understood. He then turned into a blurry silhouette, which was actually a meandering figure, dashing towards Zhao Feng.

Xiao Hai had already blocked Zhao Feng even before the latter could come close to Shi Yan. As both were at the Third Sky of Sky Realm, Zhao Feng didn't dare to be careless, and quickly refined his power to deal with Xiao Hai.

## Chapter 404: Hit to deform it!

---

"Kid, you're indeed powerful. You will definitely become a brilliant talent of the Divine Radiant Cult," Xiao Ling grinned. "This is certainly not what I want to see. Killing you is to weaken the future power of the Divine Radiant Cult. I will not let you grow."

Xiao Ling's entire body had been metalized, dashing towards Shi Yan while launching an all-conquering metal Intent Domain to strike him.

Shi Yan didn't seem to know that Xiao Ling had been metalized. His whole body's muscles were convulsing, but he still started to fight back.

Since both of them didn't use any secret techniques or any secret treasures, they looked like two barbarians fighting each other.

When the mutated Petrification Martial Spirit collided with Xiao Ling's Diamond Martial Spirit, it was like stone against stone. It was unexpected that the Petrification Martial Spirit did not have the lower hand.

Dang dang dang!

The ear-splitting metal sounds resounded from the bodies of the two of them.

When Xiao Ling engaged in close combat, his metalized body, which should supposedly be not at all inferior, got hit unexpectedly under Shi Yan's bombardment and produced chinking sounds. This kind of violent energy impacted his 'body' and agitated his blood and flesh, making his 'body' that was made from dozens of different kinds of strange metals became unbearable.

In the battle, although Xiao Ling's body was unharmed, it was severely shocking that the seven holes on his face were bleeding.

His face looked even more ferocious.

On the contrary, under the bedevilment state, Shi Yan didn't seem to be facing anything unusual. His face didn't have any blood stain, as if he wasn't suffering from tiredness or pain. He instinctively used his fists to contend with Xiao Ling's attack and his metalized body.

In the bedevilment state, Shi Yan had a lust for endless destruction. This lust unlimitedly expanded, making him insane and become someone who only knew killing and destroying instinctively.

This was another kind of completely giving vent.

Xiao Lings's head-on attack just gave Shi Yan a goal to give vent to. With the crazy bombardment, Shi Yan kept releasing his desire for destruction, which seemed like he had just entered a mysterious Intent Domain.

While Shi Yan was fighting with Xiao Ling, seven hundred twenty acupuncture points in his body continued to purify the negative energy and transform it into a kind of strange power that was useful for his body.

It was unknown how long this fight went for, but the negative energy that was running in his acupuncture points finally started being washed away.

A lump of mysterious power leaked out, and in just a short time, Shi Yan became conscious for a moment while his eyes glinted with a divine light from his moment of enlightenment.

Mysterious force flowed all over his body, and together with the Profound Qi, it crashed into the Blood Vein Ring. A barrier inside the Blood Vein Ring was broken, and A memory directly flew out from the Blood Vein Ring, drilling into his head.

In an instant, in this mysterious realm, his whole body trembled. His mind sublimated, his Sea of Consciousness churned up, and a

flow of Soul Consciousness suddenly grew up.

The size of his Sea of Consciousness expanded three times in such a short moment.

The transformation of his Sea of Consciousness was a sign of his realm breakthrough, which was inexplicable. Shi Yan had directly entered the First Sky of Sky Realm, and the ancient Profound Qi tree inside the Profound Qi's halo was doubled.

An instinctive insight suddenly shone into his heart. Shi Yan went insane again. The blood of his whole body quickly condensed together with the negative energy.

His body, which had originally expanded because of the mutated Petrification Martial Spirit, now shriveled. His formerly purple body turned into a horrible blood red.

Many drops of bright red blood blended with the negative forces unexpectedly dripped out through his pores. However, they didn't fall but covered his body instead.

It looked like a blood cocoon.

From afar, Shi Yan looked like he was being covered fully with blood. The blood scent gave people a wicked feeling.

Xiao Ling's face changed suddenly.

Anyone who saw the fight between Xiao Ling and Shi Yan would realize that the changes in Shi Yan's body were faster. At this moment, the aura from Shi Yan's body was already doubled.

Violently overbearing energy surged up. A kind of evil energy, which could even destroy heaven and earth, massively flowed out from Shi Yan's body.

Boom!

Shi Yan launched a blow on Xiao Ling's chest, which had been metalized and thus made it concave.

The sound of broken bones arose from Xiao Ling's chest. His

bones, which were tempered by dozens of exotic metals, didn't seem to be able to withstand this level of bombardment and thus directly burst out.

Xiao Ling couldn't help but scream in agony, subconsciously wanting to dodge.

But it was too late.

Shi Yan's power skyrocketed like a ferocious beast. He rushed over and snatched Xiao Ling while bombarding violent, brutal fists on his body.

Xiao Ling's metalized body was distorted. It looked like a piece of metal that had been hammered until it deformed.

Xiao Ling kept screaming in pain but couldn't avoid his attack. He was hit until blood splashed everywhere, and his body was being deformed, gradually becoming shaped like a long strip. He looked like a secret treasure being forged into a sword by a blacksmith.

Other warriors who were still dealing with the surrounding ancient corpses were all dumbstruck, looking at Shi Yan with disbelieving eyes, as if they were looking at a ferocious ghost.

Everyone's backbones were chilled; they looked at Shi Yan in fear. Each of them could see his evil power bursting out right now.

Xiao Ling's body had been knocked out. Diamond Martial Spirit, which was known as a rare defensive force, could not bear his beating, and finally got distorted.

The divine light in Xiao Ling's eyes gradually dimmed. One gold eye and the other silver one also restored their original state.

"He was killed."

"Yes, Xiao Ling was dead."

"Is that kid a human? Xiao Ling's Diamond Martial Spirit is known as the strongest defense of the Martial Spirit Palace. Isn't it

true that when the warriors at the same level relied only on their body strength, they basically couldn't break the Diamond Martial Spirit's defensive power?"

"Same level warriors? That kid clearly was at the Nirvana Realm only."

"Is Xiao Ling too weak, or is that brat too strong?"

"What do you think?"

"I believe that kid is exceptional."

All the warriors were boisterously discussing. They all wore bitter faces and had a feeling that they could barely defeat Shi Yan.

Xiao Ling was dead, but Shi Yan didn't seem to know it. He kept staring at Xiao Ling's dead body and constantly punching it like he was making noodles.

"Da-ge!" Xiao Hai's eyes were cracking open while his face showed extreme misery. He rushed over to Xiao Ling and raised his face up while roaring.

"It serves you right." Zhao Feng sneered coldly and felt overjoyed as his judgments were right. This kid Shi Yan was absolutely a talent, probably the brightest star of the Divine Radiant Cult in the future. As long as he got attached to this infinitely talented Shi Yan, his position in the Divine Radiant Cult would definitely rise in the future.

Boom.

Xiao Ling's body directly burst out into two parts from his abdomen. Blood and flesh splashed everywhere.

Shi Yan only stopped when Xiao Ling was totally smashed. He stood in a daze, not seemed to be knowing what was going on. He looked like he was thinking and wondering by himself.

No one dared to disturb him.

Everyone looked at him from a distance Even if he was in a daze,

no one dared to take this opportunity to ambush him.

They were all shocked by his performance.

Tu Ke's head had been blown off. Xiao Ling's Diamond Martial Spirit was broken into two parts by his brutal punches. Shi Yan's cruelty made people feel chilled to their bones and terrified.

Many people stopped their fights with the ancient corpses and looked at Shi Yan from afar with cautious faces, as they were afraid that even a tiny move could arouse the fierceness inside him.

Anyone who was his target ended up with a miserable fate. This was proved by the deaths of Tu Ke and Xiao Ling.

No one dared to make any move.

Zuo Shi struggled a little bit as she wanted to see the situation. However, Zuo Xu dragged her back tightly, not allowing her to come close to Shi Yan.

Cai Yi, who had killed a First Sky of Nirvana Realm warrior, was also staring at him while wearing a complicated countenance.

Forget it.

Cai Yi had been ready to find a chance to kill this malicious Shi Yan. However, after this incident, she decided to give up this stupid thought and forget what had happened to her at the bottom of the lake before.

"Da-ge, Shi Yan this young man is too strong. He seems to be even more terrible than our bloodline."

Lao Lun was startled and then spoke to Lao Li.

Lao Li nodded with a grave face. "He has helped us a lot. Without him, we should have died several times. Although there is no real friendship in this Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, we should still treat him honestly and pay back his favor. This is the most basic moral standing. When other people help us, we must bear it in mind."



"I understand."

"Hahaha, good boy. I'm not wrong taking you with me." Zhao Feng burst into laughter, not caring about Xiao Hai crazily screaming over there, and then shouted to Shi Yan, "Wait until the trip in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist ends. I will definitely report to our predecessors, telling them that there is a seed of our Gods Sect in the Endless Sea."

The Divine Radiant Cult's disciples were agitated and revealed a trace of joy.

Shi Yan's body slightly shocked. After giving vent, it seemed that he had gradually restored his mind. The trace of daze in his eyes also diluted a little bit.

Half a day later, Shi Yan suddenly turned his head around; his two eyes had already been restored to their normal state. The evil and ruthless aura also vanished into thin air.

"Where is that bitch Ai Ya?" He looked at Cai Yi and asked.

Under his scrutinizing look, she gently shook her head and said, "After I came here, I don't know where she headed to."

"If I find that bitch, I will teach her a lesson," Lao Lun said with a cold voice.

"Shi Yan," Zuo Shi finally cried out in joy, "Are you alright? Are you really awake? Do you know who I am?" She waved her arm hard and showed a cheerful face with an excited look.

Shi Yan grinned and nodded to her, "It's good that you guys are okay. I was afraid that I would harm you. Even I myself cannot control that state earlier."

"Don't worry. We are all fine," Zuo Xu embarrassedly smiled, wiped off his sweat, and secretly let out a sigh of relief.

# Chapter 405: Sky Realm

---

"Kid, you seemed to have had a breakthrough, right?" Zhao Feng came near Shi Yan, looked at him seriously and cried out, "Have you entered the Sky Realm?"

Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and the others were all startled. They looked at Shi Yan with surprised faces.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded, "It seems so." While talking, he couldn't help but look at his right hand and then wear a weird face.

Earlier, when the mysterious power in the acupuncture points in his body had fused with his blood, it condensed in his right palm, forming three drops of strange, dark red blood.

The three drops of blood in the blood vessels of his palm transmitted a strong, surging energy fluctuation.

In his palm, he realized that the three drops of blood were like rubies, crystal clear and very beautiful. The skin and flesh of his palm didn't seem to be able to cover the dazzling light radiating from these three drops of blood. The Immortal blood!

Shi Yan secretly shouted while his face was full of surprise and joy. He had long heard from the Yang family that they had the Immortal Martial Spirit. Under some specific circumstances, they could condensate the immortal blood, which had exceedingly marvelous effects.

That year, Yang Tian Emperor had also borrowed immortal blood to know that Shi Yan was still alive and had some connection with the Ice Cold Flame.

According to the Yang Family, this immortal blood was magically useful. He only knew that the immortal blood could help them achieve many complicated purposes.

Three drops of blood in his palm had violent power fluctuations; they were totally different from the blood in his body. The power

of these three blood drops even contained his mental fluctuations, as if his soul was lodged in these three drops of blood, giving him a feeling that these three drops had an incredible vitality.

He didn't know the magical effect of the immortal blood, or how to use them. However, these three drops of blood were formed nevertheless, which made him extremely happy.

He had fallen into the bedevilment state, and he didn't know how he had entered the Sky Realm or condensed these three drops of immortal blood. The trip to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist could be described as an abundant harvest.

Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and the others had dropped their jaws with horrified eyes.

Especially Cai Yi and the two brothers, they and Shi Yan were on the same team in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. They still remembered the first time they had met Shi Yan, when he was only at the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm. After only a few months, from the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm, he had broken through the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm and now entered the Sky Realm.

Such an incredible cultivation progress!

If they hadn't witnessed how Shi Yan had broken through the realms step by step with their own eyes, Cai Yi, Lao Li, and the others wouldn't have believed that anyone could have had such a continuous breakthrough like him.

"Hahaha, powerful! This kid really knows how to surprise others. Not only could he kill Tu Ke and Xiao Ling, but he could also break through the Sky Realm. His future is limitless!" Zhao Feng was very excited. In his eyes, the more powerful Shi Yan was, the nobler his status in the Divine Radiant Cult would be. Thus, introducing Shi Yan to the Gods Sect could bring him so many benefits.

Shi Yan took off the Storage Ring from Xiao Ling. Holding the

Storage Ring in his hand, Shi Yan coldly looked at Xiao Hai, who was standing not far from there and said, "Still not convinced?"

Xiao Hai and other three Martial Spirit Palace's warriors now amounted to the side looking at Shi Yan with hatred but not daring to take any actions.

Hearing Shi Yan's provocations, Xiao Hai tried to press down his anger, and suddenly walked over to the remaining warriors of the Pure Land. Seeing Xiao Hai and his fellows coming, those warriors immediately reacted. The Third Sky of Sky Realm warrior among them whispered, "We have to unite to be able to resist the people of the Divine Radiant Cult."

Xiao Hai nodded and stood together with the Pure Land's warriors, still not daring to take any actions.

At this time, the strongest side here was undoubtedly the group of Shi Yan and Zhao Feng of the Divine Radiant Cult. After their unison, they had overwhelming advantages. Even if the Martial Spirit Palace and the Pure Land united, they could not be better than Zhao Feng's group.

Of course, there were not only the Martial Spirit Palace's and the Pure Land's warriors in Xiao Hai's group. Around ten other warriors, who were at the Second Sky and the First Sky of Sky Realm, also gathered with Xiao Hai's group, as they seemed to know the current subtle situation.

The situation in the field was now obvious.

Zhao Feng, Shi Yan, and their fellows were in the same group. The rest were together in another group. They all cautiously looked at Shi Yan, Zhao Feng, and the others, as they were afraid that the people of Zhao Feng's group would suddenly launch a fatal blow.

"Do you want to kill them?" Cai Yi asked.

Chi Xiao didn't say anything and looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was stunned for a moment. He looked at the remaining teams that were now united, and after looking at Zhao Feng and Li Yue, he suddenly spoke up with a smile, "We are evenly matched. If we desperately fight with each other, no one can gain any benefits."

Zhao Feng nodded slightly and said with a lower voice, "If we actually start a fight with them, although we will not have a significant loss, the damage is still inevitable. Right now, everyone sees us as a threat, so continuing to fight with them is not necessary."

"The Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist still has one exotic land. A lot of warriors should be gathering there. If we consume too much strength and encounter other stronger warriors there, we will suffer a great loss," Li Yue frowned and said.

"Okay."

Shi Yan looked at Xiao Hai's group and said with a darkened face, "So, we will continue to kill ancient corpses to harvest more secret treasures?"

"We should do that." Zhao Feng smiled and said, "I don't think those people dare to provoke us. So, we can rest assured while killing the ancient corpses to find secret treasures."

Ancient corpses floated around in the air as they seemed to be affected by a particular force, which prevented them from leaving the place.

These ancient corpses had a formation technique on their bodies. If warriors didn't take the initiative to attack them, the corpses would not proactively attack. Only when these corpses realized that they were threatened would they fully resist.

The power of the ancient corpses came from the secret treasures on their chest. The strength of eleven ancient corpses was equivalent to a standard Sky Realm warrior, so their threat was

not that big.

After discussing what to do, everyone began to act.

Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the other people of the Divine Radiant Cult started to choose their own ancient corpses to kill. Chi Xiao, Cai Yi and the other warriors also focused on the surrounding floating corpses.

Shi Yan was not in a hurry to take action. On the contrary, he forcefully broke Xiao Ling's Storage Ring and explored it carefully.

Xiao Ling's Storage Ring was divided into three small spaces. One space had a stack of various types of cultivating materials and many refining mineral stones. The other one was to store daily necessities and food, while the remaining space kept the crystal stones and bottles, as well as some secret treasures.

The fork-and-knife-shaped secret treasure, which Xiao Ling had collected recently, was releasing a blue halo. One would feel a bone-deep chill on touching it, as there was a terrifying icy power emitting from the secret treasure.

When Shi Yan touched it, his fingers also felt a little cold. If it weren't for the Ice Cold Flame to have tempered his body, perhaps his fingers would have been frozen already.

This secret treasure had the ice attribute.

Shi Yan secretly nodded and put that treasure back into his Storage Ring. He also put on Xiao Ling's Storage Ring, as it was such a waste if he didn't take those that were given for free.

When Xiao Hai watched Shi Yan put Xiao Ling's Storage Ring on his finger, his eyes flooded with hatred. However, he still didn't dare to rush over.

Shi Yan didn't care about him either, just threw a quick look at him and sneered.

The flame of hatred was getting stronger in Xiao Hai's eyes. He

revealed a pernicious face and kept breathing heavily. He seemed to be reminding himself not to act rashly.

At this time, the disciples of the Divine Radiant Cult were staring at an ancient corpse. It had a green armor on its chest, which seemed to shrink inside the formation, and thus was not very clear. The armor emitted a shining green light like a piece of jade.

Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others surrounded that ancient corpse, not letting it out of their sight. That green armor would definitely fall into the hands of Zhao Feng's group.

He looked at Cai Yi and Chi Xiao. They were also staring at another ancient corpse. A silver dagger was inlaid on its chest. It released silver light which seemed to be the power source of this ancient corpse. The corpse didn't have a life, but under their attack, it discharged many waves of sharp silver light.

The silver light was extremely keen. Even Chi Xiao didn't dare to touch it. While dealing with this ancient corpse, he always tried to avoid it as he was afraid that the silver light on that corpse would hit his body.

Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi didn't even move. They just stood beside him, surprisingly watching Chi Xiao and the others kill that ancient corpse.

Looking at Zhao Feng's group and then Chi Xiao and the others, Shi Yan knew that if it continued like this, they would certainly kill the ancient corpses and take the secret treasures.

Shi Yan raised his head to look at the floating corpses, and then looked around to choose one ancient corpse for himself. Through hunting and killing these ancient corpses, he could collect some secret treasures.

At this time, a throbbing beam of the soul in his Sea of Consciousness churned up. His eyes flashed up, he immediately held his breath and meditated to perceive this soul throbbing.

It was the Ice Cold Flame's call.

The Ice Cold Flame went to the Black Turtle mountain range in the north and then suddenly used his spirit to call him to come without any known reason.

Over many years, he still maintained the spiritual communication with the Ice Cold Flame. Thus, he had soon formed a marvelous connection with it. In a certain range, he could feel the Ice Cold Flame's aura and be aware of the spiritual consciousness that the Ice Cold Flame released.

Although he didn't know why the Ice Cold Flame had called him, he knew that the Ice Cold Flame would not harm him. The thing was that all the corpses at the bottom of the bridge had been destroyed while the entire ancient city was flooded with four kinds of disasters. Going to the Ice Cold Flame's location now would make him encounter the threat of those four disasters, which made Shi Yan a little bit cautious.

But the Ice Cold Flame was calling urgently.

Shi Yan's face changed slightly. He carefully considered for a moment and then decided to take the risk.

Although the four disasters were terrible, he had just reached the Sky Realm. His body was sturdy, and he also had the Third Sky of Rampage. All of these made his confidence skyrocket.

"You guys stay here. I will go down to check."

After informing Zho Xu and Zuo Shi, he immediately flew down to the bottom of the bridge and disappeared, not even waiting for the other two to utter a word.



# Chapter 406: The Mysterious Gate

---

"Where is Shi Yan?" Chi Xiao killed the ancient corpse opposite him and hurriedly shouted as he realized that Shi Yan had disappeared.

Zuo Xu pointed to the corpse bridge not far from there. "He went down there."

"What?" Chi Xiao's face changed. He asked with a puzzled look, "Why did he go down?"

At this time, everyone was fighting for the secret treasures on the ancient corpses. It was strenuous for everyone coming here with the target of finding secret treasures. However, right at the time of harvesting, Shi Yan suddenly went back down.

Not only did he not understand, all the warriors who realized this unusual thing also showed suspicious faces.

Zhao Feng and Li Yue didn't understand it either. Everyone was fighting for the secret treasures now. If they also went down to look for Shi Yan, they might be shrouded by the four kinds of disaster. Even if they could luckily survive, they were afraid that they could not find the secret treasures here.

Therefore, although Zhao Feng and Li Yue had a doubtful look, they didn't go down to find Shi Yan.

Seeing that Shi Yan had gone, the warriors here let out a sigh of relief as they thought that they could relax a little bit.

In their eyes, Shi Yan's threat was greater than anyone else's.

Having such a dangerous competitor as Shi Yan absent obviously made them happy, and they didn't care why Shi Yan went back down.

"Grandpa, will Shi Yan be alright? Why did he go back down? Zuo Shi stood on the stone ladder looking down, but her sight was

blocked, and she couldn't see anything.

"He definitely has his own plan. We cannot use common sense to evaluate this kid. If there weren't anything important, he wouldn't have gone down at this time." Zuo Xu calmed her down. "Don't worry. That kid will be okay. He is smarter than anyone else. I think that if he has decided to go down, he should have detected something."

Hearing Zuo Xu's words, Zuo Shi felt less worried. However, she still stood there, looking down.

At the small silver lake, four kinds of disasters were covering the whole area. Shi Yan had his entire body shrouded with starlight while his face was solemn. He could feel the power of the Star Shield. He took a deep breath and walked over the silver lake.

Frost, lightning, flames, and storms, the four kinds of disaster raged in the ancient city and enclosed everything.

Looking ahead, he realized that under the influence of these four kinds of disaster, the ancient city's walls had collapsed. Many one-hundred-meter-high stone fortresses had fallen, turning into piles of stones.

Hundreds of thousands of different beasts gathered outside the silver lake. All of them opened their mouths which looked like basins of blood, shooting icy lights from their eyes, looking at the weaving points of light in the sky.

As soon as Shi Yan appeared, those beasts immediately wanted to jump over and rip him off.

Shi Yan's face became colder. He looked at the flock of beasts, not daring to act rashly. He only continued to use the Star Shield to resist the impact of the four kinds of disasters.

With so many beasts like this, even if he were arrogant, he didn't dare to do anything reckless.

Once he was submerged by those beasts, he would definitely not

be able to escape death given the situation that he could not use the Gravitational Field.

The Ice Cold Flame's cry still came from the north. It seemed to know that Shi Yan was down here, and thus, it left that place in the north and quietly approached him.

As Shi Yan felt the Ice Cold Flame's movement, his mind then relaxed a little bit. He continued to retreat in the lake, using the Star Shield to resist the disasters.

These four kinds of disasters had a terribly destructive power. Under the destruction of this power, the Star Shield was draining its star power fast.

"That will not last long." Shi Yan frowned, thinking of a solution.

It was not easy to gather star power, let alone absorb the starlight. He had to gather this star power little by little every time, unlike the Profound Qi which could also be restored through absorbing heaven and earth aura or crystal stones.

Once the star power was drained out, even if he had many fanciful tricks, he would hardly be able to use them, which would weaken his strength.

As the trip in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist had not ended yet, if the star power was soon depleted, the remaining journey would be difficult.

With that thought, Shi Yan decided to risk his body and the Dark Shield to fight against the disasters.

He immediately used his Profound Qi as the energy source for the Dark Shield. As soon as the Dark Shield appeared, his body also turned purple while the magical power burst out from his muscle fibers.

He retrieved the Star Shield.

The strange power of the four kinds of disasters quickly reduced

the defense energy of the Dark Shield. The Profound Qi crazily infused the Dark Shield with more energy.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.

A strange sound came from the Dark Shield. Under the influence of the four kinds of disaster, the power of the Dark Shield reduced quickly. In only half a minute, one-third of Shi Yan's Profound Qi that was injected into the Dark Shield was already consumed.

"These kinds of disaster are really powerful. I am not sure my body can withstand them or not."

Shi Yan suddenly wanted to fight with them to see if his Petrification Martial Spirit could withstand this level of disasters.

He suddenly retrieved the Dark Shield. The four kinds of disasters including flames, frost, lightning, and storms instantly covered his entire body and then seeped into his pores, penetrating his body.

So painful!

Pain spread out in his whole body. When flames, frost, lightning, and storms infiltrated his body, a terrible pain expanded all over his body.

This pain was unbearable to ordinary people. It would probably be too painful, and they would go unconscious and lose all means of defense.

However, Shi Yan always wanted to try his limit, and also his willpower. Thus, under this pain, he just gritted his teeth and resisted, not fainting immediately.

The strange power in his muscle fibers was like countless threads that quickly gathered in his body. Every single fiber of his muscles seemed to be convulsing and releasing its energy.

The power of his muscles resisted the invasion of the four kinds of disaster. His purple skin seemed to have a tremendous defensive

force. Under the four kinds of disasters, his body suffered no split or crack.

The Ice Cold Flame turned into a bunch of cold lights, flying over from the north, crossing the beasts and hovering above Shi Yan's head.

"I will take you to a place where there seems to be something. However, that place has horrifying barriers, and even I couldn't enter. But, maybe you can." The Ice Cold Flame sent out a message and turned into a snowflake right in front of Shi Yan's chest.

With Shi Yan as the center, an extremely cold air spread out.

In a short instant, Shi Yan became a huge ice sculpture. His whole body emitted terrifying cold air. The ice block helped Shi Yan resist the impact of the four kinds of disasters.

"Your strength has been restored?" Shi Yan asked with surprise.

"Not completely yet. I have recovered seventy percent, so it is actually enough," The Ice Cold Flame sent out a message. When it released the chill, even the beasts had to be scared. When the chill diffused, those gathering beasts immediately moved backward.

The Ice Cold Flame was still constrained by the Blood Vein Ring, and thus couldn't release its real power.

Right now, it was out of the Blood Vein Ring, turning into a snowflake attached to Shi Yan's body. The cold air that it released could freeze the whole ancient city.

Shi Yan suddenly remembered the scene when he had first met the Ice Cold Flame.

At that time, the Ice Cold Flame, with its cold aura, had frozen an island. Moreover, it had condensed an Ice Cold Beast. The icy power that the Ice Cold Flame had displayed at that time was earth-shaking, and even God Realm warriors could hardly deal with it.

The Ice Cold Flame, after all, was the ancient Heavenly Flame. After ages of absorbing the heaven and earth's cold aura, it was the coldest thing and the most mysterious living being in the world.

It was different from the Earth Flame. As for the Earth Flame, the time it had become a Heavenly Flame was too short. So, in the comparison to the Ice Cold Flame, even if it could absorb the Sun Refined Spirit, the Earth Flame was still far behind the former.

At this time, the Ice Cold Flame had been releasing its real power. With Shi Yan as the center, the cold air spread out and began to freeze everything.

The frost power coming from the mountain from the north also seemed to be controlled by the Ice Cold Flame. A flow of frost power started to become a terrifying one among the four kinds of disaster. Under the growth of the Ice Cold Flame's energy, the frost power also burst out more heavily.

The beasts that were accidentally hit by this cold air would be frozen immediately.

However, Shi Yan was different.

There was an icy power of the Ice Cold Flame in his body. His bones and tendons had soon been tempered by the Ice Cold Flame, which allowed him to adapt to the icy power here.

Furthermore, the Ice Cold Flame was very careful to not spread the icy power all over his body. Therefore, although he was frozen, under his body's surging force, he could still move comfortably. But of course, it wouldn't be as fast as normal.

"That direction!" The Ice Cold Flame communicated with Shi Yan, pointing forward.

Shi Yan didn't say any word and urged his power to move towards that direction, dragging along a thick ice rock.

Along the way, the Ice Cold Flame continued to release the cold air which tightly attached to the icy power of the ice rock to reduce

the impact of the four kinds of disaster to the minimum. Hence, Shi Yan's body wasn't being affected much by those kinds of disaster.

The cold air spread out wherever Shi Yan passed by. Although the beasts wanted to attack him, they couldn't bear the invasion of the icy power and thus had to retreat immediately.

Without the Gravitational Field, but with the use of the mysterious icy power of the Ice Cold Flame, Shi Yan was still unharmed in the middle of those beasts.

Moving towards the direction that the Ice Cold Flame indicated, Shi Yan went all the way back to the collapsed ancient city. Inside an old temple in the southwest of the city, he saw the dead body of a huge beast.

That beast had only one eye. Inside the eyes, lights interweaved, and the four kinds of disasters were condensing and accumulating, vaguely forming a mysterious Heavenly Gate that led to another mysterious place.

# Chapter 407: Blacksmith' Secret of Success

---

"The energy fluctuations are very violent there. Except for the four kinds of terrifying disaster - the lightning, frost, flames, and storms, there're also three layers of barriers. Even I could not break inside." The Ice Cold Flame sent a message to Shi Yan.

Standing under the enormous beast, Shi Yan frowned and quietly observed the beast's massive pupil.

After sensing for a while, he realized that the energy fluctuations there were intimidating. Without using the external force, he didn't believe he could enter that Heaven Gate.

"Isn't it true that you have a secret treasure that could break all kinds of barrier?" The Ice Cold Flame communicated with him again. "Maybe you can use that secret treasure to enter the Heaven Gate to find out the secrets in there."

Shi Yan was startled and then beamed a smile.

He took out the Sky-breaking Shuttle, pouring his divine sense into it to connect with the soul inside. "Can I enter that Heaven Gate?"

The Sky-breaking Shuttle suddenly emitted immense light. The edge of the Sky-breaking Shuttle faintly pointed to the Heaven Gate, shooting out a ray of fine silver light, shining on the Heaven Gate.

Half a day later, a response was sent to him. "You can go inside, but I need half of your Profound Qi to break the barrier."

Shi Yan thought for a while and slightly nodded. "Ok. I will pour the Profound Qi into you. Get through the channel. I want to go in there."

After talking, Shi Yan poured the Profound Qi from his body into the Sky-breaking Shuttle.



Under the massive Profound Qi infusion, the Sky-breaking Shuttle suddenly discharged bright silver light hitting that Heaven Gate.

Bang.

A shocking quiver came from the Heaven Gate as a bunch of bright silver lights emerged from there.

Shi Yan didn't think too much, immediately turned into a bunch of stars which followed along that bright silver light to directly penetrate the Heaven Gate and disappeared instantly.

In a vast expanse of space, there was only a decayed mummy.

This mummy wore a blue gown, and it was sitting cross-legged. His left hand held a very thick, old book and seemed it was carefully reading the content of the book.

It should be a God Realm warrior who had condensed his great power to build this strange space.

In this space, Shi Yan immediately remembered the space that he had entered before, which had been created by the Stars God Ouyang Zhi. The scene here was not as bright as that space but very similar.

This space here should also be built by a God Realm warrior. This one was not the same type of Heaven Gate that had been created for so many years like the Chasm battlefield, but it had been created by a God Realm warrior out of sheer boredom.

This Heaven Gate didn't seem to be too mysterious nor dangerous. The territory area was also limited.

Standing in this strange space, Shi Yan looked around and saw only misty white fog all over the place. He couldn't see farther anyway.

Hesitating for a while, he didn't rush to check that mummy yet. Instead, he walked around but got nothing.

In this spacious area, there was nothing else except this mummy.

All the mysteries were in that ancient corpse perhaps. Shi Yan slowly walked to the mummy while the rest of his Profound Qi was quietly gathering. The Star Shield and the Dark Shield then spread out together to guard against any dangers that might bounce up from that ancient mummy.

Beyond his expectation, until he came close to that corpse, he didn't encounter any dangers nor felt any barriers.

When he was close to the corpse, he could see four words on the old book that the ancient corpse was holding in his hand – 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success.'

What?

Shi Yan's heart slightly bounced while his eyes were brightening.

Is this the secluded place of the ancient blacksmith?

Lingering here for quite a long time, through his subtle observation, he knew that this place should be the gathering place of blacksmiths. There were many furnaces, forging materials, which were no longer useful, and also some secret treasures that had been refined.

Obviously, in this strange space, there existed many powerful blacksmiths. Although Shi Yan didn't know why all of them had disappeared, he could be sure that everything here was related to blacksmiths.

In the ancient time, blacksmiths and alchemists were both crucial parts of the warrior's world.

Whether it was in ancient time or modern time, blacksmiths and alchemists both enjoyed a distinguished position. Every blacksmith or alchemist was an extraordinary warrior. Secret treasures refined by blacksmiths and pellets refined by alchemists were the important factors to enhance warriors' strength.

If a warrior held a powerful weapon as well as all kinds of pellets, then whether in practice or battle, a blacksmith with profound realm could create Sacred level secret treasures. Such a blacksmith like that would have all the respect from other warriors.

The reason that the Spirit Treasure Sect could dominate the Divine Great Land for so many years was thanks to having many blacksmiths and alchemists. If it didn't have a big number of blacksmiths and alchemists with high levels like that, perhaps it might not be able to become one of the seven ancient factions of the Divine Great Land.

In short, blacksmiths in this world were absolutely precious, and they received respect from all warriors. The more powerful a blacksmith was, the better privilege he could have.

Although this blacksmith had been weathered for so many years, he still maintained his reading posture. Shi Yan didn't know at which level this blacksmith was, but if he could build the Heaven Gate, he was at least a God Realm warrior. A blacksmith would consider being a powerful blacksmith as their important pursuit. Levels were only a necessary condition.

In general, a blacksmith with God

Realm cultivation base might also be a Sacred level blacksmith and could refine Sacred level secret treasures.

A Sacred level blacksmith.

Shi Yan line of sight moved while his eyes brightened.

In the entire Divine Great Land, the god-level blacksmith seemed to have disappeared a long time ago; the most powerful blacksmith now was only at the Sacred level who could refine sacred level secret treasures.

Even the Spirit Treasure Sect only had two Sacred level blacksmiths, who were the most powerful protection for the Spirit Treasure Sect's domination in the Divine Great Land.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He stared at the old book 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success' in the mummy's hands. His heart pounded fast as he couldn't stop the desire to possess that book.

He didn't know if it was dangerous.

Shi Yan stretched his hands out to catch the 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success.' His skin turned to purple while many spots of starlight were twinkling on the back of his hand.

He was very cautious.

When one of his fingers touched that 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success,' a brutal surging spirit suddenly burst out from the old book.

Instantly, Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness swayed. His spirit seemed to be locked by a mysterious soul barrier; he couldn't even think.

Truly powerful!

Shi Yan reacted decisively, retrieving his hands, holding his breath, and reinforcing his mind.

As soon as his fingers left the 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success', the surging spirit also disappeared.

It seemed that as long as he didn't touch the old book, there would be no spiritual fluctuations released. However, with a slight touch, those surging spiritual beams would lock his mind and directly imprison his spirit.

With a cold face, Shi Yan didn't dare to retake actions. He carefully looked at the old book and didn't find anything unusual. After Shi Yan pulled his finger back, there was no spiritual sense.

He knew that the terrifying spiritual surging was definitely from the old book. Maybe it came from its pages.

Every page might also have a strong spiritual fluctuation. As long as he touched it, he would suffer from the impact of that energy.

Although he had reached the Sky Realm, he didn't know what to do with these horrifying spiritual fluctuations.

He had a deep understanding of various types of Upanishads, and his perception of souls was much more profound than that of a typical warrior. However, if he couldn't resist this kind of terrible spiritual surging now, he believed that other Sky Realm warriors would absolutely find it difficult to feel safe under the impact of those fluctuations.

No matter what, he needed to take the book first. This old book was definitely a precious treasure of the blacksmiths.

Shi Yan's eyes changed a little bit. He gritted his teeth and made up his mind. No matter how evil this book was, he had to keep it in his Storage Ring, and then, he could slowly explore its secrets later.

He reached out again. This time, he pointed the Storage Ring toward the old book and then waited until the Storage Ring touched that old book then he quickly triggered his mind.

A flow of light flashed. That old book disappeared and stayed inside his Storage Ring.

As long as his fingers didn't touch the book, the violent spiritual fluctuations would not burst out.

His mind sensed it a little bit, and then he realized that the old book was retrieved by the Storage Ring indeed. He then let out a sigh of relief. He looked at the ancient corpse and wanted to see how abnormal that book was.

Boom.

A loud noise suddenly came up from that ancient corpse. It then turned into a strange plume of smoke and disappeared into thin air in this strange space.

The old book and this weathered ancient corpse seemed to have a close connection. Since the book disappeared from the corpse's

hand, it seemed not to need to exist anymore and then disappeared just like that.

Not only that, when the ancient corpse turned into ashes, this space also began to crack, as some splits appeared.

Shi Yan's face changed. He didn't overthink, immediately communicated with the Ice Cold Flame.

A bunch of silver light flashed up, and Shi Yan quickly drilled into it. That bunch of light brought Shi Yan flying outside, following the channel that the Sky-breaking Shuttle had broken through earlier.

In the cold space, Shi Yan turned into a column of starlight and returned to the ancient city from that strange space.

# Chapter 408: Restore the original shape

---

The space was destroyed.

All four kinds of disaster in the ancient city seemed to be attracted by that Heaven Gate, as they crazily rushed into the Gate which was about to break in pieces.

Shi Yan stood below, looking at the disasters blowing into the Heaven Gate, and then watching the space rifts in the sky. His face looked shocked.

The Heaven and Earth had a mutation. The sky revealed a beam of dazzling light in which, space's chaotic movements could be seen. In the burst of violent roars, that Heaven Gate bulged, finally turning into a small spot of light and disappearing above the ancient city.

The ancient city suddenly restored its quietness.

Even the beasts that had been gathering also seemed to know that there was no more meaning to continue to guard, and so, they all left the ancient city.

The four surrounding mountains collapsed in an instant, and razed to the ground. The weaving galaxies in the sky slowly faded like a river drying out. And thus, it also quickly lost its previous mysterious look.

A graceful figure had a glimpse down from the sky and then turned into a beam of light, flying away. Shi Yan frowned, stared at that beautiful figure for a moment while he was wearing a grave look.

Although he was far apart, he could still recognize that figure was Ai Ya, who had earlier gone missing. He didn't know why this woman was in the sky or what had happened to her. Her leaving made Shi Yan feel that this ancient city had nothing else to be attached to.

Sure enough, at the weaving point, many warriors also began to fly away, not continuing to linger in the ancient city for any longer.

These people seemed to know that the ancient city no longer had secret treasures, and thus, they would harvest nothing if they continued to stay.

The book 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success' in the ancient mummy's hand seemed to be the reason of this ancient city's existence. Since Shi Yan took the book, all of the strange treasures of this place also disappeared, which meant that this ancient city had no more mysteries left.

The beast's bones also exploded into pieces in the Heaven Gate, scattering in every corner of the ancient city.

Several figures in the sky seemed to look at Shi Yan, who was standing below, and thus, they slowly descended near him.

Shi Yan frowned and looked at the sky, realizing that they were Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others. Shi Yan let out a sigh of relief and put down his guard.

While jumping into the Heaven Gate, he had consumed much of his spirit. Therefore, his current state was not very good. If the warriors in the sky considered him as their target to kill, he would be in danger given his situation at the moment.

Zhao Feng and the others slowly landed.

"Kid, why did you come here?" Zhao Feng shouted with an astonished face. "Kid, what the hell are you doing here? Why has this strange place restored its normal state? Even the galaxy and the ancient corpses in the sky also disappeared. What did you do?"

Li Yue, Chi Xiao, and the others also looked at him with puzzled faces.

When they were still fighting with the ancient corpses in the sky, they realized that the ancient city had a big change. The ancient



corpses went into the space rifts one by one without leaving a trace.

After observing everything around, they realized that the ancient city's mutation seemed to be related to Shi Yan's deeds. They were all astonished and immediately came down here.

The warriors from other forces saw the change of this ancient city. They knew that it was no longer necessary for them to continue staying here, and thus, they all left and went to another exotic land.

"I don't know what happened." Shi Yan shook his head, not wanting to tell them about what really happened to him.

The 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success' of the blacksmith there might be the most precious treasure in the ancient city. Although he didn't know how valuable this book was, since this Blacksmith's Secrets of Success was kept in his Storage Ring, the ancient city immediately had such a big change like this. Thus, he could already know how crucial it was.

In the Grace Mainland, blacksmiths were extremely rare. And so, this secret treasure was even more precious.

If people knew that he had taken this 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success', perhaps he would encounter a lot of troubles and might arouse some high-class blacksmiths of the Grace Mainland, who still maintained a good relationship with God Realm warriors.

If those blacksmiths knew that he had this precious refining method, they would come and find him at any cost and would deprive this 'Blacksmith's Secrets of Success' from him.

After spending a long time in the Grace Mainland, he had realized the cruelty of this world. He knew that as long as he had a powerful strength, he could do whatever he wanted in this world. No legal morality could control him.

"You didn't find anything unusual?" Zhao Feng asked while his

eyes flashed a trace of surprise. He seemed to be very curious as he always felt that this ancient city's mutation certainly had something to do with Shi Yan.

Cai Yi was also puzzled. Her beautiful eyes glinted with a beam of strange light. She hesitated a bit before speaking softly, "I always have a feeling that we have all been too focused on fighting above, but the things we got there are far less than the harvest here. Although I don't know what you got, since this strange land suddenly lost all of its mysteries, it is certain that the most precious treasure here has been taken."

Zhao Feng's and Li Yue's eyes brightened as they both felt that Cai Yi was right. They looked at Shi Yan with complicated faces.

"Kid, tell us. We are really curious." Zhao Feng grinned. "Curiosity can get people killed. I know that. But I still want to know what you have harvested after all. I want to know what the most precious treasure in this exotic land is."

Shi Yan still shook his head while his face remained cold, "Nothing."

Everyone knew that Shi Yan didn't want to say about it.

Zhao Feng and Li Yue looked at him for a long while. As seeing his determined attitude, they then helplessly stopped asking.

Both of them considered Shi Yan as the brightest star of the Divine Radiant Cult in the future. As they still hoped to rely on Shi Yan to enhance their positions in the Divine Radiant Cult, they obviously didn't want to offend him at this point in time. So, they didn't continue to ask him.

As for Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and Zuo Xu, they all had to rely on Shi Yan to be safe all the way on the trip. When facing Shi Yan, they always felt that they owed him many favors. Therefore, seeing Shi Yan unwilling to say anything, they naturally stopped asking.

"Hmm, I don't think it's necessary for us to continue staying here

any longer." Shi Yan smiled and looked up at the sky. "Should we leave this place?"

"I just saw Ai Ya," Cai Yi said with a dark face. "That bitch has had her calculations against us all the way. At the critical point of time, she wanted us dead to get more precious treasures. If I have a chance, I'll give her a lesson for sure."

The two brothers flashed a hateful look as they also resented Ai Ya.

"She's the first one who left this place. If I am right, she will go to another exotic place. Perhaps, we will have the opportunity to see her again." Shi Yan nodded and said with a cold voice, "This woman has a wicked heart. She has never considered us her companions. If I have a chance, I'll handle her."

"If so, then let's go together!" Zhao Feng burst into laughter. "Kid, I still want to ask you many things. Hmm, I think that you also need to know more about the Divine Radiant Cult. Our Divine Radiant Cult in the Divine Great Land dominates the entire area, and we are the oldest sect in the Divine Great Land. You are so outstanding, and if you go to the Divine Great Land, the Divine Radiant Cult will obviously invite you to our sect's Holy Land."

The Divine Radiant Cult?

Shi Yan was agitated at heart while his face changed slightly.

According to Zhao Feng, the Divine Radiant Cult was the place that could protect him as they highly respected young outstanding warriors. Moreover, it was one of the most powerful ancient factions in the Divine Great Land.

This sect had secret methods, which were related to various types of mysterious martial arts, along with different techniques to use martial arts. This sect's secret methods were way more improved than those of the other three divine Sects.

If he had the opportunity to come to the Divine Great Land, he

could use the Divine Radiant Cult's power. Therefore, it seemed that if he stayed in the Divine Great Land, he would have a lot of convenience and benefits.

If it was possible to use the power of Divine Radiant Cult to enhance his cultivation base, expand his knowledge, and help him understand the Upanishads more, it was not bad at all.

"Uh, I think I will go to the Divine Great Land, but not at the moment." Shi Yan contemplated for a while then talked to Zhao Feng with a smile. "I still have one thing to do in the Endless Sea. After I have done the business here in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, I will go back to the Endless Sea. Then, once everything there is settled, I will visit the Divine Great Land."

"There is nothing interesting there," Zhao Feng muttered, "Compared to the Divine Great Land, be it the level of warriors or martial techniques or martial spirits, they are all far behind than ours. Our Divine Great Land is the gathering center of all warriors in the Grace Mainland. We have all kinds of wonderful things that you could never believe. You can have anything you want."

Shi Yan nodded. "You don't need to persuade me. After I settle down the matter in the Endless Sea, I will certainly travel to Divine Great Land."

"We will talk more. I will tell you about the Divine Radiant Cult, and how to find us when you go there in the future." Seeing Shi Yan determined to go to the Endless Sea, Zhao Feng didn't continue to talk him out of it. "I can be your guide there."

"Alright," Shi Yan nodded with a smile.

Zhao Feng looked very joyful; his attitude was also friendly.

At this time, a bunch of burning fires suddenly flew over from afar, aiming at Shi Yan.

The fires were extremely hot, covering the entire area. Under that scorching heat, warriors beside Shi Yan all felt uncomfortable

and hastily gathered their strength to resist.

Zhao Feng's eyes shot out a light, staring at that Earth Flame and suddenly shouted, "That is the burning power of the Sun Refined Spirit!"

Li Yue's eyes lit up while she expressed a frightened look.

## Chapter 409: Nine types of Heaven Flames

---

Shi Yan didn't say anything, but just smiled and stretched out his hand. The Blood Vein Ring shot out blood light, and the incoming Earth Flame disappeared into his Blood Vein Ring.

At the same time, the Ice Cold Flame also went into the Blood Vein Ring.

"That's the burning power of the Sun Refined Spirit!" Zhao Feng's eyes reflected the hot flames, looking at Shi Yan with surprise. "Kid, didn't I feel it wrong?"

"Yes, it does have the burning power of the Sun Refined Spirit," Shi Yan nodded.

"For those who use the sun power to cultivate, the power of the Sun Refined Spirit is the most precious treasure. If I can use the Sun Refined Spirit to cultivate, I think my martial technique will have a great breakthrough." Zhao Feng shot out a sharp look. "If I can use the Sun Refined Spirit, my comprehension will be more profound, and perhaps I will enter the Spirit Realm."

Shi Yan slightly smiled and shook his head. "It belongs to me."

"If possible, I want to borrow it to cultivate later. I don't need the Sun Refined Spirit energy. I only need to observe it a bit closer to find the traits of the power being released from the Sun Refined Spirit, and how the fiery flame burns. Is it okay?" Zhao Feng laid his eyes on Shi Yan with a begging look and a longing face.

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, hesitated a little bit and then said, "If only that's the deal, then no problem."

Zhao Feng was overjoyed and burst into laughter.

"What is that bunch of burning fire after all?" Li Yue couldn't help but ask.

"Well, just see it as a new Heaven Flame which comes from a ten-

thousand-year-old volcano, that was lucky enough to absorb the Sun Refined Spirit. Right now, I don't know how great its potential is, but if we say the Heaven Flames are required to have consciousness, then it should be a Heaven Flame," Shi Yan explained.

"Heaven Flame?" Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and even Cai Yi looked at him with astonished faces.

"I have heard that there are a total of nine Heaven Flames existing in this world. Adding this one would make it ten." Zhao Feng sighed, "The legend about the Heaven Flames has been circulated in the Divine Great Land, but people who have a Heaven Flame are extremely rare. Each type of Heaven Flames has its unique effect and its own mysterious force, that makes people envy. You're very lucky to have it."

"Do you know what the nine types are?" Shi Yan's heart moved slightly while he pretended to ask.

He had also heard rumors about the Heaven Flames. It was said that, in this world, there were a total of nine types of Heaven Flames, and there were also rankings among them.

However, be it in the Quiet Cloud or the Endless Sea, no one seemed to know what types these nine Heaven Flames were.

Zhao Feng and Li Yue came from the Divine Great Land, which was the gathering center of all warriors. Warriors who knew about these nine types of Heaven Flames could only come from the Divine Great Land.

"Primal Chaos Sacred Fire, World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, Immemorial Demonic Flame, Purgatory True Flame, Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, Vermillion Bird True Flame, Ice Cold Flame and, and Vanishing Corpse Flame." Zhao Feng's eyes brightened while speaking. "These nine types of Heaven Flame are the names we already know. The mysteries of these nine Heaven Flames have been spread in our

Divine Great Land. However, we still don't know what magical effects these nine Heaven Flames have. Perhaps, only those who possess the Heaven Flames can know their magical effects as well as their threats."

"Primal Chaos Sacred Fire, World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, Immemorial Demonic Flame, Purgatory True Flame, Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, Vermillion Bird True Flame, Ice Cold Flame and, and Vanishing Corpse Flame." Shi Yan murmured while his eyes also slowly lit up.

"Primal Chaos Sacred Flame is ranked first, and the Vanishing Corpses Flame is ranked last. Each type of Heaven Flame seems to be able to integrate with the warriors. Once warriors can fuse with the Heaven Flames, they are able to obtain much more than just their power." Zhao Feng looked at him enviously.

Previously, the Ice Cold Flame had been on Shi Yan's chest. When the Earth Flame entered the Blood Vein Ring, because its burning power was too strong and also the fact that the Ice Cold Flame had been trying to reduce its power, other people didn't know that the icy light column was actually the Ice Cold Flame, one of the nine Heaven Flames.

If they knew the Ice Cold Flame and the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame were both here, Shi Yan wondered how surprised they would be.

Shi Yan already got what he wanted to know, so he stopped asking about the Heaven Flames. He smiled and looked at Zhao Feng and the others, "How was your harvest up there?"

Zhao Feng held a happy face and excitedly said, "We have four secret treasures which are all sacred level ones. Three of them are of the first grade of the Sacred level, and the remaining one is of the third grade of the Sacred level. Ha ha ha, this is really a good harvest. Even in the Divine Great Land, secret treasures are very rare. Only a few important people of the powerful parties can have



the third grade of Sacred Level Secret Treasures. Ha ha ha."

Getting to the exciting part, Zhao Feng couldn't help but burst out laughing.

The secret treasures that blacksmiths created were divided into five levels - mortal level, mystery level, profound level, sacred level, and god level. Each level was divided into seven grades; the first grade was the lowest and the seventh grade was the best. As Zhao Feng got a third grade Sacred level Secret Treasure this time, no wonder he was so excited.

"How about you?" Shi Yan looked at Chi Xiao and Cai Yi.

"Two pieces of first-grade Sacred level Secret Treasures." Chi Xiao smiled, took out a silver dagger, raised it up and said, "I have this."

Although Chi Xiao looked calm, his eyes were extremely excited. Since he could get the secret treasures in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist this time, once his mind connected with it, his strength would be greatly improved.

With this Sacred level Secret Treasure, Chi Xiao could become the strongest member of the Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire, and the supreme warrior in the Quiet Cloud. Thus, he was obviously very happy.

"Not bad, not bad," Shi Yan constantly nodded. "Where is the other one?"

"In my hand." Cai Yi chuckled, but didn't take out the secret treasure from her Storage Ring. However, she also looked very satisfied. "I'm quite lucky. It was unexpected that I could harvest something in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist this time."

Lao Li and Lao Lun both revealed a trace of envy and complained that their luck was not good, as they couldn't harvest anything.

"Kid, should we leave here or not?"

Zhao Feng realized that there was no one left in the ancient city, and thus, he was a little anxious. "The others have left already, probably to go to the other exotic lands. We should also go soon. Hopefully, we can harvest the God Soul. If we are too late, we will not get anything."

"You know the direction?" Shi Yan asked in astonishment.

Zhao Feng hauled out a compass which was similar to the one Ai Ya had and raised it up. "The Spirit Treasure Sect has forged this stuff. It can identify the direction of any area, so we will not be lost if we have it."

"That's good." Shi Yan's eyes brightened while he beamed a smile. "If so, we can go now."

"How about you?" Zhao Feng looked at Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and the others, "Are you going with us?"

As Chi Xiao and Cai Yi got the secret treasures, their confidence had been increased significantly. Thus, they nodded readily.

The two brothers hadn't harvested anything, but still hoped to be able to get something in another exotic land. Obviously, they would not give up midway. Therefore, they nodded, indicating that they would also go with them.

Zhao Feng actually didn't want to be on the same team with them. However, in consideration for Shi Yan, he didn't say anything. He took out the compass to identify the direction, and then said to Shi Yan, "You guys follow us. The other exotic land is quite far from here. It will take a maximum of two days to get there."

"Good," Shi Yan nodded.

Zhao Feng and Li Yue exchanged glances, assigning something for their warriors who kept up with them. After that, they led the way, flying out.

Since the Heaven Gate had exploded, everything here restored to

its normal state. Even the divine thunder which had covered outside also disappeared.

Shi Yan used to worry about the divine thunder before. Anyway, his Profound Qi had been consumed by half, and if the divine thunder were still outside, he would have to use the power of the Sky-breaking Shuttle to break through. By that time, his Profound Qi would be drained completely, and if he encountered danger, it would be difficult for him. Although Chi Xiao and Cai Yi had a profound cultivation base, he didn't want to lay his life in someone else's hands. Therefore, he would have to spend some time first to use the Demon crystals to restore his Profound Qi before leaving.

Without the divine thunder outside, he didn't have to be that cautious. He flew up to the sky together with Chi Xiao and the others, catching up with Zhao Feng's group.

Half a day later, Zhao Feng's group encountered a flock of level six beasts above a mountain. However, it didn't take them long to wipe those beasts out.

Since the warriors in Zhao Feng's team had quite low realms, their Profound Qi had been consumed significantly. Zhao Feng had to stop to let them rest for a while, using the Demon Crystals to restore their Profound Qi.

Shi Yan took this opportunity to haul out the Demon crystals inside his Storage Ring and restored his Profound Qi together with Chi Xiao, Zuo Xu, and Zuo Shi.

The three people of Chi Xiao's group were quite poor before. With Shi Yan's support, they could now have enough Demon Crystals to restore their Profound Qi.

These three people had drained a lot of their Profound Qi on the way, and were in a situation where they had no more Demon Crystals.

However, after the fight in the ancient city, they had got some

Demon Crystals from some dead warriors, and Shi Yan had also given them some more. Therefore, they now had enough demon crystals to use.

Entering the Sky Realm, Shi Yan's ancient Profound Qi tree seemed to grow double or so. As he was restoring the Profound Qi, his progress speed was apparently slowed down. When he and Chi Xiao restored the Profound Qi, it would take quite a lot of time. Even after the warriors in Zhao Feng's team had fully restored their Profound Qi, Shi Yan and Chi Xiao were still using Demon Crystals to restore their Profound Qi.

As Zhao Feng knew that he would rely on Shi Yan a lot in the future, he didn't urge him to hurry. Instead, together with Li Yue and the others, he waited for Shi Yan and Chi Xiao to stand up and then continued the trip, going to another strange land.

Their trip was much easier as they didn't encounter any beast this time.

Two days later, they finally arrived at another exotic land.

The outskirts of this exotic land had thick, gray smoke hovering. However, there was no divine thunder inside that smoke to rock Shi Yan's mind.

Following Zhao Feng's team, Shi Yan, Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and the others also descended in this strange land.

## Chapter 410: The abnormal underground

---

This was a small island, with ancient green trees and blossoming flowers everywhere. The aura of Heaven and Earth was vibrant on this island.

Different from other regions in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, the periphery of this island was full of smoke hovering around, but there was none inside the island.

All that people could see was towering old trees, which were incredibly dense, covering the sky. Like a paradise, this place didn't have any beasts either, making them relax and feel that cultivating here would be very comfortable.

Shi Yan's team went through the fog and landed. Afterward, they quietly released their soul consciousness and then immediately realized that their soul consciousness wasn't restricted. When their soul consciousness spread out, various dynamic living activities in the island could instantly be reflected in their Sea of Consciousness.

"Nobody's here." Zhao Feng had a cultivation base of Third Sky of Sky Realm. He released his soul consciousness, which had soon enveloped the entire island. But there was no trace of any life. A place with dense Heaven and Earth aura and verdant blossoming flowers like this should not be this empty.

The warriors from the Divine Great Land were certain that there was a part of warriors who had come here to find the existence of the God Soul. Those should have spread out their soul consciousness to find the abnormality on the island, as well as possible opportunities.

Chi Xiao, Li Yue, and others were wearing doubtful faces. They also released their soul consciousness, but got nothing either.

"It's not right," Shi Yan frowned, "There must be something

strange here. Otherwise, some warriors should be here. If we can come here, the others certainly can too. If we can spread out our soul consciousness, the other warriors also can. So basically, when we land here, we should immediately be detected. It's impossible that no soul consciousnesses are exploring the area."

"Everyone should be careful. I don't think this place is normal. Perhaps, it's even more dangerous than the previous exotic land." Zhao Feng's face darkened. "Everyone gather in one place. Don't scatter. We are going to the center of the island together, and explore it a bit."

Everyone nodded and gathered.

Towering trees expanded all over the island. With a quick look, this island was totally covered with dense forests. Those old trees would limit the vision of those walking in these forests, and they would not be able to see far.

Shi Yan's team was slowly moving deeper into the island. They were not anxious, just paying attention to everything in the surroundings. As long as there were any signs of trouble, they would carefully observe them.

Thump thump.

Dull sounds resonated from under their feet. A vibration came up from deep under the ground of the island. The vibration frequency was slow, but it seemed to rush straight to the human mind.

Thump thump thump.

Everyone's heart gradually beat faster. The tremor from underneath the island seemed to be able to drive the heartbeat, making the hearts of those people pound faster and faster.

"What?" Zhao Feng's eyes glinted with a bunch of strange light. "Do you guys all feel it?"

Everyone's faces were solemn. They all nodded.

Zhao Feng took a deep breath and said with a grave face, "I think there exists something abnormal underground. We should be careful. If our heartbeat reaches a certain speed, we'll probably get crazy. The faster the heartbeat is, the more influence it will have on our judgment and reasoning, making us too nervous, and dominating our emotions."

After pausing for a while, Zhao Feng looked at Shi Yan and said, "Especially you."

Shi Yan was a little embarrassed as he gently nodded. "Don't worry. I had reasons to have lost my mind before. I will not suddenly lose my mind again. The impact I have this time should be consistent with yours."

"Who has a soul consciousness that can penetrate into the subterranean ground?" Li Yue hesitated for a while before her face slightly changed, as she seemed to realize something. "My soul consciousness cannot even go ten zhangs (1 zhang is equivalent to 3.33 meters -TL) underground. There seem to be some barriers inside the ground of this island that prevent the soul consciousness from penetrating."

After hearing what she said, everyone else immediately sent their soul consciousness into the ground to verify her words.

Shi Yan's soul consciousness also suddenly dashed to the ground. However, when it reached the depth of only five zhangs, it encountered obstacles.

With the barrier that prevented soul consciousness from penetrating underground, they seemed to have countless ropes tying their soul consciousness up. The deeper it drilled down, the stronger the pulling force was.

After reluctantly spreading out to the depth of six zhangs, Shi Yan had released all of his soul consciousness and couldn't penetrate even a centimeter further.

"I can affirm that," Zhao Feng solemnly looked at everyone and said, "If nothing unexpected happens, I'm sure this island's abnormality should be in the center of the earth. So, we should look for the entrance to go there. I think that if there are other warriors, and they should be in the center of the earth. If they can go down there, we also can."

"Well, there must be an entrance." While talking, Cai Yi took out a sapphire bangle from her Storage Ring. As soon as the bangle emerged in her palm, it immediately shed three columns of azure light, which penetrated straight down into the ground, piercing the earth's barriers all the way downward.

Cai Yi slowly closed her eyes while tightly holding the bangle.

When the three light columns struck straight to the ground, Cai Yi knitted her eyebrows tightly as she seemed to sense something serious. Half a day later, her graceful body suddenly trembled. She then opened her eyes and said with surprise, "Somebody is fighting down there."

Everyone was shocked.

"This sapphire bangle is from an exotic land. During the past two days, I've sensed carefully and realized that my sapphire bangle could detect different energies. When these three azure light columns penetrated the earth earlier, they realized that at least ten different kinds of energy are competing. It's obvious that there must be a variety of warriors engaging in the battle." Cai Yi held the sapphire bangle while calmly explaining to everyone. "Those people underground should have realized something already. Otherwise, they would not have been fighting now." Zhao Feng grinned. "It seems that those people have met some sacred level secret treasures, and they are fighting each other only because of those treasures. Our guess is right. The strange things of this island are all underground."

"Look for the entrance." Shi Yan cracked a smile out of the corner



of his mouth, "Separate to seek. It looks like there's no danger in this island. Everyone scatter and shout when you find it. Although this island is not small, if we spread out, it'll be easy to find the entrance."

"Scatter," Zhao Feng instructed his people from the Divine Radiant Cult, and then flew away first towards the center of the island.

Cai Yi, Chi Xiao, the two brothers also spread out as per Shi Yan's order.

Shi Yan didn't move yet, just standing still on his spot.

Seven people from the Divine Radiant Cult, Cai Yi, Chi Xiao, and the two brothers had divided into three directions. With many people like this, it should not take long to search the entire island. Even if he didn't put any effort into this, he still could enjoy the result. That was why he was this leisurely.

Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi were about to scatter to search for the entrance, but as they saw him stay back, they were stunned for a moment and also stood still.

"Grandfather Zuo, after this thing, you should return to the Merchant Union." Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then suddenly said with a solemn face, "Don't get back to the Endless Sea. Although I am not sure how the current situation is right now, I'm certain that the Endless Sea is very chaotic. Since I left the Endless Sea, Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area should have massively invaded the Endless Sea. It has been such a long time, so I think perhaps the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers have come to the Endless Sea together. If you take that way, you will obviously encounter dangers."

Zuo Xu's face changed slightly. He said with fright, "Demon Dwellers? Dark Dwellers?"

Shi Yan nodded.

"Isn't it said that these two alien races have disappeared from the Grace Mainland? In the Merchant Union, there are some ancient legends about the existence of these two races. However, we have never seen any of them. Have they actually come to the Endless Sea? They are in the Endless Sea now?"

"Yes, everyone living there is in tragedy. These two races have killed a large number of warriors. The Kyara Sea and the Hengluo Sea are now covered with corpses. Many civilians have also been affected. Hmm, it's impossible to tell everything in just a few words."

Talking about the Endless Sea, Shi Yan also felt very depressed. Since he left the Endless Sea, he knew that the great race war would break out.

Cao Qiu Dao of the Cao family and Yang Yi Tian of the Martial Spirit Palace were two powerful persons. If the two of them united, together with other forces in the Endless Sea, it would be hard to say who would win given the situation that the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers didn't come to the Endless Sea at the same time.

There was one thing he was sure that this war would not easily end soon.

After the Yang Family hid in the Fourth Demon Area, there was no news from them. Although Chi Yan said that Yang Tian Emperor was dead, Shi Yan always felt that the said person could not easily die like this. Yang Tian Emperor was the most famous outstanding warrior in the Endless Sea, who was also extremely wise.

He should have some support.

When the Yangs were there and fighting in the Endless Sea, he had to go back.

The more chaotic the area was, the easier it was for him to

enhance his cultivation through the Mysterious Martial Spirit. He had reached the Sky Realm, so he needed a lot of Profound Qi to make a breakthrough. Since the Endless Sea was this chaotic, this was apparently a suitable place for him to cultivate.

Lin Da and Xia Sheng Chuan were dead. Shi Yan was now more confident than before when he faced the Devil Emperor Chi Yan.

With the emergence of Bo Xun, Di Shan and Yu Rou had to betray him because of their race. For Shi Yan, this was a great humiliation.

He came to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist to kill and get back what belonged to him.

## Chapter 411: Sentimental Selection

---

"If that place is so dangerous, why do you still want to go back?" Zuo Shi was puzzled. She gently asked, "Shi Yan, you can temporarily return to the Quiet Cloud. I think if your family knows that you have broken through the Sky Realm, they will be delighted. If you go back to the Merchant Union, the Shi family and the Zuo family will unite and perhaps can dominate the God-blessed Empire and the Fire Empire."

"The Quiet Cloud is too small...", Shi Yan shook his head. "If the time comes, I will let you go to the Merchant Union so that you can find a more suitable place to cultivate."

"Found it!" Lao Li screamed from a distance.

Shi Yan was startled. He then said to Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi, "Let's not talk about this now. Let's go over there to see what mystery lies in the underground of this island."

When Shi Yan, Zuo Xu, and Zuo Shi came, Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and Cai Yi already stood in front of a dark hole. Some other warriors of the Divine Radiant Cult quickly rushed over as well.

This was not a big hole where cold aura flew out continuously. Standing in front of the cave entrance, they could sense fresh breeze blowing onto their bodies, making them feel a bone-deep chill and give them a feeling that some kind of danger was hiding inside that cave, which terrified everyone.

Not long after that, Li Yue also arrived with the remaining disciples of the Divine Radiant Cult, looking at the entrance of the cave.

"This is it." Zhao Feng cocked his head to look a bit and then shook it. "I can't see anything. Perhaps there's also something blocking the soul consciousness."

While they were talking, a silhouette suddenly rushed out and

shouted, "RUN!"

An arm-sized rattan like a ghost hand thrust out from the cave and trapped that man instantly. As it had wound around the man, it released a strong suction force all of a sudden. The man's blood flowed towards the rattan, and in just a short amount of time, all of his blood had completely been drained.

Everyone's eyes were wide opened. That man died even before he could have exited the cave.

Everyone's face was frozen.

"Zuo Shi and grandpa Zuo, don't get in. Find a safe place outside and wait." Shi Yan acted decisively and told the two of them hurriedly, "It's very dangerous in there. You will not be able to help with anything, but you can get us bothered."

His words were rude.

Zuo Xu's eyes flashed a trace of sadness as he knew his cultivation base was too low. He reluctantly nodded, held Zuo Shi's hand and said, "Zuo Shi, don't go there. Shi Yan's right. We really can't help with anything."

Although Zuo Shi wanted to try, she still followed her grandfather's advice. She looked at Chi Xiao and Shi Yan worriedly, and said with a low tone, "You should be careful. It's strange in there. If it's too dangerous, come out immediately. Don't take anything. Only if you're alive can you enjoy the benefits. If you're dead, then there is nothing left."

"Ok." Shi Yan smiled and nodded, "I know. I will consider staying alive as the primary task. If I realize that it's something I can't handle, I will come out immediately."

"Can we go now?" Zhao Feng was excited, rubbing his hands and said with a smile, "The more dangerous the place is, the more chances that secret treasures will be there. Everyone should be careful. Don't let the rattan entangle you."

Everyone nodded with solemn faces.

Zhao Feng didn't say anything else, laughed out loud and jumped down first.

Li Yue and the others from the Divine Radiant Cult didn't hesitate either; they all followed Zhao Feng, plunging down into the cave.

Chi Xiao and the two brothers also followed him.

"You leave first." Shi Yan looked at Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi.

The two of them were a little hesitant but didn't say anything. They then left the cave and disappeared into the jungle.

Only Cai Yi and Shi Yan were left.

Cai Yi didn't hurry to jump down but looked at him with a longing face.

She was wearing green clothes; her face was white, and her eyes were like they could speak. She kept looking at Shi Yan with a begging attitude.

"Are you anxious?" Shi Yan calmly asked.

"After the battle in the previous exotic land, I think that you have trusted me." Cai Yi said with a serious face. "I'm different from Ai Ya. I will not be shameless like her. I know that you have helped us a lot all the way. I will not return evil for good, I promise."

"This reason is not enough," said Shi Yan with an emotionless face.

"It is certainly dangerous down there. As my soul has your formation technique, I can't utilize all of my power." Cai Yi angrily stared at him. "What's wrong with you? I have begged you like this. Although I did something bad in that lake, didn't you do the same? Cai Yi's face reddened as she was shy.

Shi Yan sneered and said, "Yes, I also did something wrong in that place. But it was just because I saw you wanted to harm me. I

was so angry that I did it. If you guys didn't do that to me, I definitely would not have done anything."

Speaking of the charming scene at the bottom of that lake, he couldn't help but remember Cai Yi's beautiful body, while his eyes also changed slightly, becoming burning.

Under Shi Yan's scrutinizing eyes, Cai Yi was very embarrassed. She fiercely stared at him and growled, "Leave it then."

After talking, she was about to jump down into the cave.

"Alright, let me remove it for you," blurted Shi Yan.

Cai Yi's beautiful eyes suddenly brightened. She halted, burst into laughter, turned around to look at him and gently said, "I knew it. It's not like you don't have any feelings. You're actually very nice. As long as the others have good intentions toward you, you will not harm them. Otherwise, you would not care for Zuo Shi that much."

After Zuo Shi appeared, Shi Yan always cared for Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi on the way.

Cai Yi secretly observed him for a while then realized that the care didn't come from love, it was just because they knew each other before. He didn't mind encountering dangers, and instead, always helped the two of them.

After a long time of observation, Cai Yi finally realized that Shi Yan was not cold and ruthless as she'd imagined. She was actually envious of Zuo Shi, as Shi Yan cared for her a lot.

After understanding more about Shi Yan, her hatred towards Shi Yan gradually faded, and moreover, she wanted to have a good relationship with him.

"If I was really ruthless, you and the two brothers should already be dead." Shi Yan slightly harrumphed and said, "If I didn't save you and help you go to the corpse bridge, you think that you could have survived?"

"I know you are kind." Cai Yi smiled. She looked thrilled and fresh as her mood was good. "Can you remove the formation technique for me now?"

Shi Yan nodded, closed his eyes and used a soul connection to enter her mind to remove the formation technique that he had left in her soul before.

Cai Yi suddenly let out a sigh of relief, grinned like flowers blossoming, which could mesmerize other people.

She nodded to Shi Yan and said with a low voice. "You aren't bad indeed. If I knew about it soon, I definitely would not have done it in that lake. However, you already saw my body, and I will remember it carefully. Hmm."

After talking, Cai Yi moved to the cave, released a colorful band of five-colored light and slowly went into the cave.

Shi Yan was bewildered.

Quietly watching Cai Yi's graceful body slowly diving, Shi Yan shook his head after a long while, grinned and went into the cave.

In the dark cave, Shi Yan could only see the colorful light from Cai Yi's body. He accelerated and appeared next to her in only three seconds.

This cave seemed to be very deep. The two of them had been plunging down for a while, but still didn't see anything. No light came up from the cave either.

"Shi Yan, honestly, do you like Zuo Shi? Although that girl doesn't have a high realm, she's very charming. It's normal if you like her." While flying down, Cai Yi suddenly turned her head to look at him and asked curiously.

"Why does it matter to you?" Shi Yan harrumphed and said, "You should care about yourself. Don't let the rattan here shackle you. If it happens, I'll just ignore you."



"You will not," Cai Yi said with a smile. After the formation technique in her mind was removed, she seemed to have solved the knot. She seemed to no longer hate Shi Yan. Her face glowed. "Although you look cold, you are not like that. I know it."

"Did you fall in love with me?" Shi Yan pouted and coldly looked at her. "Although I did touch you, I will not take responsibility. Don't think I will love you because of this. I'm very ruthless. I'm only interested in your body, not you. I don't like a woman who is too cunning."

"Right. Perhaps I love you already." Cai Yi was half real, half joking, but she was not angry either. "I have heard that if a man is interested in a woman's body, then loving her is not too distant a thing. Anyway, you have seen and touched my body already. Well, you can just forget that girl Zuo Shi and be my man."

"If you want to flirt with me, you should consider the time and situation." Shi Yan rubbed his nose and said reluctantly, "If I knew this, I would not have removed the formation technique for you. I just realized that since your mind is free from the formation technique, your brain seems to have had some problem. If you want to die, I don't care. But don't talk nonsense to me. It affects my vigilance."

"Such an emotionless guy." Cai Yi glanced at him with enchanting eyes.

The two of them flew down shoulder to shoulder. Her body emitted a flashing light. Shi Yan could see every change on her face, smell the fragrance from her body, and hear her sulky words. He calmed down again and felt that this subterranean trip didn't seem so terrible as he'd imagined.

## Chapter 412: Swallow hollow spirits

---

Shi Yan and Cai Yi had plunged down side by side for around ten minutes before they finally got to the center of the underground.

This place looked like a fantasy land, with a huge swamp area in the center.

Many bizarre trees like rattan grew in the swamp. Those trees were strangely humanoid; each of them was ten meters high, slowly moving in the swamp. Gloomy ghosts were wandering around, scattering out cold evil thoughts which could affect people's Sea of Consciousness.

These gloomy ghosts emitted green light while the swamp water was dark green, making the swamp look more eccentric and gloomy like a world of ghosts.

More than ten Nirvana Realm and Sky Realm warriors were scattered in all directions around the swamp. Everyone's faces were solemn while fighting with the gloomy ghosts and the humanoid monsters.

When a warrior died, his blood would be sucked completely, and his immortal soul would quickly be assimilated by the gloomy ghost. It then also turned him into a ghost, staring at other warriors with human auras and releasing terrible spirit fluctuations.

In the swamp, warriors were battling everywhere. Among them was Zhao Feng's team, who were ten meters away from Shi Yan's left side. They were fighting against those rattan trees and the ghosts, their faces looking quite serious.

After arriving, Shi Yan and Cai Yi didn't have time to stop, as they immediately came to aid Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others.

"Shi Yan, be careful. Those rattan monsters and the hollow spirits are extremely tough to deal with. Swords and a variety of

attacking forces are ineffective on these hollow spirits. Only soul attacks with intent domains can destroy them. These rattan monsters are some sort of strange creature, an organic combination of flora and fauna. They can absorb human blood and use it to grow their power. Don't let them wrap you."

Seeing Shi Yan coming over, Zhao Feng immediately raised his voice to remind him to pay attention to those rattan monsters and hollow spirits.

"You can use your force to bombard the rattan monsters. These things are malicious. They have sharp thorns; once they pierce through someone's body, they will target the blood vessels and suck all of the warrior's blood. At any cost, don't let them wrap you. As for the hollow spirits, they have a terrible soul corrosion force. Once the hollow spirits drill into your Sea of Consciousness, they will control your it." Chi Xiao was dealing with a rattan tree. His entire body was filled with thick smoke, and he seemed to flash on and off in that smoke. Once the rattan tree came, he would hide inside the smoke, making the rattan tree unable to identify his location.

The two brothers Lao Lun and Lao Li were fighting against hollow spirits, and thus, didn't have spare time to remind Shi Yan. Now, when Shi Yan came, they had a little bit free time to tell him about the strengths and weaknesses of the rattan trees and hollow spirits.

Three rattan monsters had their roots extended into the swamp, but they still could move dexterously, as if they had legs.

Ten hollow spirits shrouded Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others, as they seemed to understand the rules. They launched attacks together, releasing violent soul vibrations towards the Divine Radiant Cult's disciples and Chi Xiao.

Facing these soul fluctuations, Zhao Feng and Li Yue could deal with them easily. However, the two brothers were strained in

fighting them. The two of them wore strange faces and kept moving backward while guarding their Sea of Consciousness, as they were afraid that these hollow spirits would occupy their minds.

After observing everything for a while, Shi Yan realized that there were many warriors with empty eyes and green pupils. They were attacking other warriors together with the hollow spirits.

Those people were obviously warriors as well. However, their Sea of Consciousnesses seemed to have been occupied by the hollow spirits, thus getting completely under the hollow spirits' control. They had no sense of their own, and just automatically attacked the other warriors.

After coming here, Shi Yan and Cai Yi joined the battle immediately together with Chi Xiao, Zhao Feng, and the others, attacking the rattan monsters.

With a quick glance, Shi Yan realized that there were many warriors in the swamp fighting the rattan monsters and the hollow spirits. With a rough count, he guessed there were at least seven or eight teams of warriors.

It seemed that there was also fighting in the place further than here. However, because of the far distance, Shi Yan could hardly see clearly. Before coming to this island, his Profound Qi had been recovered through the Demon Crystals. The Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame had also restored seven or eight parts of their power. They were now hibernating in the Blood Vein Ring and could always correspond to his call to come out.

With many battles like this, he was not worried, easily dealing with those rattan trees as well as observing the situation around.

"Watch out!" Cai Yi shouted to Shi Yan. "Behind you!"

A shining green hollow spirit turned into a green light column that passed by Lao Li and rushed towards Shi Yan.

This hollow spirit was formed from a soul, didn't have a body and just some extremely violent soul fluctuations. Evil thoughts pierced into his mind first, and the hollow spirit immediately caught up with it, directly flying straight into his Sea of Consciousness.

Before Shi Yan could turn his head, he was immediately aware of his brain tingling, as if countless steel needles piercing through his head, becoming extremely painful.

He had been just negligent for one moment, and that had given the hollow spirit the opportunity to penetrate his mind.

The green light suddenly disappeared into his head.

The complexions of Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others changed dramatically. Cai Yi was also worried. She shouted, "Shi Yan, quiet down your mind. Don't let the hollow spirit control it."

With this kind of hollow spirits' penetration, it was difficult for other people to help him. Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others could only stare at the hollow spirit jumping into his Sea of Consciousness.

Each warrior's Sea of Consciousness was the place where the host soul dwelled. The penetration of others' soul consciousness into someone's Sea of Consciousness would make it chaotic and raging, which helped the hollow spirit accelerate its control.

Therefore, seeing the hollow spirit jumping into Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, Zhao Feng and the others didn't dare to send their soul consciousness into it, because they knew that once they did it, it would make Shi Yan even more tempestuous.

To deal with the hollow spirit, he could only rely on his own spirit as well as his mighty will. If he couldn't stop the hollow spirit from controlling his mind, he would become its slave forever, and could never escape.

Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and others, who were fighting with

rattan trees, were still distracted by looking at him, as they didn't know whether he could resist the hollow spirit or not.

Inside Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness...

The hollow spirit's invasion caused a mutation of his Sea of Consciousness. Countless streams of soul consciousness in his Sea of Consciousness seemed to be unable to rise. A kind of intimidating soul fluctuation spread out from the hollow spirit, filling his entire Sea of Consciousness.

His eyes suddenly became dazed and empty.

When Chi Xiao and the others saw Shi Yan's empty eyes, they felt chilled in their hearts and knew that things were going bad.

Cai Yi's face changed as she showed a trace of worry. She shouted again, "Protect your mind."

However, at this moment, Shi Yan suddenly grinned and said, "No worries. I'm fine."

The Five Devils that hid in his Sea of Consciousness suddenly turned into five huge hollow shadows attacking that hollow spirit. The hollow spirit panicked and did not dare to stay in his Sea of Consciousness, quickly flying out of his mind.

The Five Devils swarmed over, entangling that hollow spirit. They opened their mouths full of fangs to devour that hollow spirit.

Inside his Sea of Consciousness, his host soul also opened the third eye, and the evil aura of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame spread out as well.

Just in a moment, he had already regained his consciousness, not getting affected by the impact of that hollow spirit. This terrified Zhao Feng and the others.

"Leave these hollow spirits to me."

When everyone was still horrified, Shi Yan wore a surprised face

and then excitedly said, "You guys don't need to deal with the hollow spirits. I alone am enough."

After the Five Devils swallowed the hollow spirit, Shi Yan was clearly aware that they had become stronger and were still craving for more. The hollow spirits seemed to be great nutrients to enhance their power.

With this finding, Shi Yan removed his spirit defense and stood still, waiting for the hollow spirits to fall into his trap.

The hollow spirits' wisdom was not high, and basically, they couldn't comprehend a lesson for themselves. Seeing Shi Yan standing without any defense, all hollow spirits turned into many green light beams, directly storming into his Sea of Consciousness. In his Sea of Consciousness right now, the Five Devils were floating around as well as his host soul, which was releasing an earth-destructive aura. Any hollow spirit that went into his Sea of Consciousness, desperately wanted to flee outside as fast as possible under the impact of the Five Devils and his host soul.

During that time, the Five Devils would scatter and search for hollow spirits inside his Sea of Consciousness. When a hollow spirit touched the Five Devils, it was like they got stuck to the rubber glue, not being able to move at all.

The Five Devils were extremely excited, clinging to those hollow spirits and engulfing all of them.

When a hollow spirit would be about to escape his Sea of Consciousness, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame would release an evil light, and that hollow spirit would be immediately annihilated and disappear without leaving any trace.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame could destroy all evil creatures. The hollow spirits that had entered Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness simply looked for death. None of them could escape.

Seeing those hollow spirits drill into Shi Yan's Sea of

Consciousness, but him still smiling and leisurely looking around here and there to look for more hollow spirits, Zhao Feng and the others were speechless. They shook their heads and let out a sigh. They were terrified because of Shi Yan's strange power.

In a short moment, a group of hollow spirits wandering around Zhao Feng and the others were all swallowed by the Five Devils in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

After absorbing the hollow spirits, the Five Devils grew significantly. Their images were getting clearer, and even their faces became livelier.

But Shi Yan was not satisfied yet. With such delicious snacks in front of him, it would be a waste if he didn't enjoy.

"I'll go to find more hollow spirits. You guys should be careful dealing with those rattan trees." After informing Cai Yi, Shi Yan burst into laughter and strolled to the swamp.

When the hollow spirits, which were fighting with the other warriors, realized that Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness had no defense, all of them rushed to him and penetrated his Sea of Consciousness.

Those hollow spirits that fell into his Sea of Consciousness had no way to come out, becoming nutrients for the Five Devils. The Five Devils in his Sea of Consciousness had engulfed all of them.

Those warriors quickly realized the abnormal situation, and thus, they all had a terrified look. They couldn't help but take a glance at Shi Yan secretly.

"Shi Yan, I'm Ye Zhang Feng. Come here and give me a hand."

A familiar voice arose from the left, behind a group of rattan monsters, sounding a little anxious.



## Chapter 413: The heart with a grudge

---

Seven rattan monsters stood in a semi-circle, surrounding a group of miserable looking warriors. Twelve hollow spirits were floating above them, releasing a terrifying spiritual power which made this group of warriors unable to speak and find it difficult to resist.

Shi Yan originally didn't pay attention to this place. As long as he saw hollow spirits on the way, he would open his Sea of Consciousness without any guard, so that these hollow spirits would take the initiative to fall into his trap. Then, the Five Devils would devour them all.

In the rattan monster's siege, a familiar voice arose, startling him. He then looked towards that direction more attentively.

"Ye Zhang Feng!" Shi Yan suddenly shouted while his eyes brightened. "Is it you?"

"It's me." Ye Zhang Feng cried out loud. "Come here quickly. I can see that you seem to be able to deal with the hollow spirits. Come here and help me out in dealing with these hollow spirits."

After identifying that the voice belonged to Ye Zhang Feng, Shi Yan didn't hesitate, turning into a beam of light and dashing towards his location.

A flow of thick, bone-chilling aura overflowed from his body, and the dense fog scattered. The surrounding rattan monsters didn't dare to act rashly. When the thick, cold fog barged in, those rattan trees wrapping around him were frozen, and they could no longer move freely.

The icy air of the Ice Cold Flame seemed to be able to freeze everything, and rattan monsters were no exception.

Those rattan monsters also seemed to know that Shi Yan was not easy to deal with. All of the rattan trees on the way halted when

they recognized the Ice Cold Flame's aura, and didn't continue to pursue him.

A cluster of burning fires ignited from the middle of the seven rattan monsters. The scorching fire seemed to come from the Purgatory True Flame, seemingly wanting to burn everything in this world into ashes.

The Purgatory True Flame!

Even though he was still a bit far from that place, with the Ice Cold Flame, he already knew that Ye Zhang Feng was one of those warriors.

The Purgatory True Flame came from Ye Zhang Feng. Unless he was dead, it would never leave his body. If the Purgatory True Flame appeared, Ye Zhang Feng was certainly there.

Many clusters of the Purgatory True Flame looked like floating clouds in the air. Its heat was extremely horrifying, and the rattan monsters around didn't dare to reach out, not even a single branch.

Shi Yan observed everything for a moment and then realized that there were a lot of ashes in those clusters of burning flames. With a closer look, he found that they were the ashes from the rattan trees which had been burned. The fact that those rattan monsters were oppressed might be because they already had experienced the Purgatory True Flame.

Although this Purgatory True Flame was powerful, hollow spirits didn't seem to be scared. This kind of a strange spirit creature aggressively moved in the burning flames, like fireflies shining everywhere, even covering the Purgatory True Flame's fires.

Inside the circle formed by the rattan monsters, there was a group of four, including three males and one female. They were all very young; the men were handsome and charming while the woman was both beautiful and graceful.

Ye Zhang Feng was sitting cross-legged on the ground with a solemn face. His body released a plume of flames from time to time. The flames flew out and instantly gathered with the fire clouds in the sky, and thus, those rattan monsters didn't dare to act recklessly.

The other two men were standing in front of Ye Zhang Feng on his left and on his right respectively. They were tall and might, with long beards and charming look.

These two people showed their cold eyes and didn't say anything as they seemed to be resisting the soul attack from the hollow spirits.

Behind Ye Zhang Feng stood a beautiful woman with a graceful body, wearing a leather skirt. She was holding a dragon bone whip while looking around with caution.

Lin Ya Qi was not in this group.

Actually, Ye Zhang Feng alone was enough to deal with these rattan monsters. The reason they were facing danger was because of the lingering hollow spirits.

After a long time since they last met, Ye Zhang Feng had already entered the First Sky of Nirvana Realm. The other three people were at the Second or the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm. This team was not too powerful in this swamp, and even weaker than Zhao Feng's and Shi Yan's teams.

As most of them were at the Nirvana Realm, they seemed to be strained while dealing with the hollow spirits. At the Nirvana Realm, the warrior's Sea of Consciousness was just newly formed. Thus, the host soul was limited, and hardly utilized powerful soul attacks or defense. That was why they had difficulty in fighting with hollow spirits.

"Come here and give me a hand quickly!" Seeing Shi Yan stop outside of the rattan monsters' area, Ye Zhang Feng's eyes

brightened while he anxiously said, "Boy, help me deal with these hollow spirits. I don't need you for other things. I can cope with the rattan monsters."

Shi Yan still didn't rush over. His entire body emitted a cold, gloomy aura. He knitted his eyebrows, looking at the others and asked, "Where is Xia Xinyan?"

Shi Yan's face darkened. He could see something bad had happened as Ye Zhang Feng's face suddenly changed.

"Help me deal with these hollow spirits. I will tell you about Xia XinYan later." Ye Zhang Feng frowned, shook his head and looked at Shi Yan with a guilty face.

"Okay." Shi Yan walked over to those four people with a somber face. Seeing him coming closer, the seven rattan monsters could feel that terrifying cold aura but didn't dare to attack him.

On one side was the Purgatory True Flame that Ye Zhang Feng releasing, and the other side was the Ice Cold Flame's aura from Shi Yan's body. Although these two Heaven Flames didn't release their real power, their auras were enough to frighten the rattan monsters and make them stay away.

The seven rattan monsters moved away, giving him the way. This incident also terrified the other three people of Ye Zhang Feng's group.

Those three people were guarding against the rattan monsters and taking precautions against Shi Yan at the same time. They looked extremely careful and curious.

The beautiful woman had a tanned skin and an appealing body, wearing a nice leather skirt. She raised her eyebrows, staring at Shi Yan while speaking to Ye Zhang Feng, "Zhang Feng, who is this? Is he a member of your Spirit Treasure Sect? Why haven't I seen him before?"

"He's a friend who I've met in the Endless Sea," explained Ye

Zhang Feng.

"The Endless Sea?" That woman laughed with disdain and then swung the dragon bone whip in her hand. A thunder-like explosion reverberated in the void.

Each knag of the dragon bone whip seemed to contain a mysterious power that could shake the Heaven and Earth.

She was the one with the highest realm among the four of them, which was the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm. With her dragon bone whip, her aura was terrifying.

"Beauty, if you can cope with the hollow spirits, I will not take action." Shi Yan came over, curled his lips and coldly looked at her with ridicule. "That's right. The Endless Sea is just a small place, and of course, far lower than your Divine Great Land. I think that the young talents of the Divine Great Land can deal with this kind of hollow spirits much better than me. I will not dare to offer to teach a fish to swim."

After talking, he turned to Ye Zhang Feng, quickly sat down without looking at that woman anymore. He stared at Ye Zhang Feng with a dark face and asked, "How is Xia XinYan?"

"I don't see you have the guts either." The woman's face became cold while she harrumphed. "If Lin Ya Qi were here, we would not have needed you. With Lin Ya Qi's soul defensive secret treasure, these hollow spirits wouldn't even dare to come close."

Shi Yan basically didn't care about that woman. He calmly looked at Ye Zhang Feng.

"She's fine. She has probably reached the Nirvana Realm. This can't be told in just a few words. Help me deal with these hollow spirits first." Ye Zhang Feng begged to him again. While talking, Ye Zhang Feng looked at that appealing woman with a wry smile, "Lin Zhi, don't bring more troubles to me. You can deal with those hollow spirits. As my Sea of Consciousness has just formed, I

cannot resist the soul attack of the hollow spirits. Can you please talk less?"

"Hmm." The woman's name was Lin Zhi. She threw a glance at Shi Yan and stopped babbling.

"She's Lin Zhi, Lin Ya Qi's sister. She's like that, not easy to talk to at the beginning. But after getting more familiar, she's not that bad." Ye Zhang Feng forced a smile, explained to Shi Yan and then urged, "Be quick. These hollow spirits seem to be interested in my appearance now. As my realm is the lowest, I can barely resist them."

Shi Yan frowned, coldly looked at him, hesitated for a moment and said, "You will have to tell me everything later."

After talking, he focused his mind to scatter his consciousness, exposing his Sea of Consciousness without any defense. He even walked towards the area where the hollow spirits were gathering.

A hollow spirit which flew next to the rattan monsters suddenly considered him its delicious food and then rushed towards him without hesitation.

Twelve hollow spirits, which were like giant fireflies, turned into green lights and went into his Sea of Consciousness one by one.

After watching all of those hollow spirits enter his Sea of Consciousness, Ye Zhang Feng's group looked at him curiously.

Lin Zhi was not an exception.

The woman surprisingly stared at Shi Yan. Other people from Ye Zhang Feng's group also looked at him with curiosity.

When Shi Yan had come to the swamp earlier, other people had all paid attention to the rattan monsters, except for Ye Zhang Feng with the Purgatory True Flame. He had quietly been focusing on the area ahead, and had surprisingly seen Shi Yan let the hollow spirits storm into his Sea of Consciousness one after another while still being safe and continuing to walk to the hollow spirits

gathering area.

When Ye Zhang Feng recognized his acquaintance, he had been overjoyed as he had found someone to help him.

The other three people, Lin Zhi and the other two, didn't believe it because they didn't see Shi Yan still safe and sound walking around in the swamp after absorbing hollow spirits. They just thought that Ye Zhang Feng wanted to encourage them.

Right now, Shi Yan was walking over while opening his Sea of Consciousness at the same time. This made Lin Zhi and the other two people startled, as they knew that Ye Zhang Feng was not joking.

The people of Lin Zhi's group understood well how dangerous the hollow spirits were. They knew that only some specific types of soul defensive secret treasure could prevent the hollow spirits' soul attacks from harming the users.

However, Shi Yan, on the contrary, let the hollow spirits go into his Sea of Consciousness. This abnormality went beyond their imagination.

"This friend of mine is not like the other warriors of the Endless Sea. He's even stronger than the warriors of the Divine Great Land." While Shi Yan was dealing with the hollow spirits, Ye Zhang Feng talked to the others with a low tone and a solemn face. "Last time when we parted, he was only at the Earth Realm. Hmm, in just one year, I have reached the Nirvana Realm, and I assumed that it was a fast progress. Unexpectedly, he has entered the Sky Realm. This is unbelievable indeed."

Lin Zhi and the other two were dumbstruck.

## Chapter 414: Slap on the face

---

"Zhang Feng, are you kidding me?" Lin Zhi was startled and suddenly screamed out loud. She constantly shook her head, not knowing if she should laugh or cry. "Have you ever heard anyone reach the Sky Realm from the Earth Realm in only one year?"

She looked at the other two men and asked, "Luo Xiao, Luo Meng, have you ever heard of it?"

The two men shook their heads.

"Do you believe it?" Lin Zhi asked again.

Luo Xiao and Luo Meng showed a hesitant face; they frowned but didn't reply.

Ye Zhang Feng's face darkened, as he unhappily said, "Lin Zhi jie, you don't believe me? You doubt that I'm lying and that I'm exaggerating his ability?"

Lin Zhi smiled and shook her head. "It's not that I doubt you. I just feel that this guy might have cheated you. He might be actually at the Sky Realm that time but hid his real ability so well that you thought he was only at the Earth Realm. This guy seems to have a wicked heart and just wanted to be close to you. I don't know what schemes he has for doing that." After talking, she looked at Shi Yan with ironic eyes, not seeming to be concerned about Shi Yan's irritation.

Ye Zhang Feng harrumphed and said with discontent, "Let's bet if you don't believe it."

He and Shi Yan knew each other because he had taken the initiative to get close to him. It was not right saying that Shi Yan wanted to be close to him.

On that island, he had witnessed the fight between Shi Yan and Man Gu, how strained Shi Yan had been under Chi Yan's soul attacks, how helpless he was when Chi Yan had killed Lin Da and



Xia Sheng Chuan.

Many signs had shown that Shi Yan's previous realm was not high, so it was impossible that he wanted to get close to him.

However, entering the Sky Realm from the Earth Realm in just one year was hard to believe even if he saw it with his own eyes. Hence, it was understandable if Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng didn't believe it.

If he hadn't been sure that Shi Yan's previous realm was only the Earth Realm, he wouldn't have believed this was the truth either.

While these people were talking, Shi Yan still stayed near there, so he could hear their conversation.

In his Sea of Consciousness, the Five Devils crazily chased the twelve hollow spirits who had penetrated there and were now running and fleeing away in fear.

However, under the Five Devils' pursuit, these twelve hollow spirits basically couldn't escape.

The third eye of his host soul released a light beam, forming a barrier that prevented the hollow spirits from getting through and blocked all the entrances of the Sea of Consciousness.

After knowing that the hollow spirits had a great impact on the Five Devils, Shi Yan's host soul began to show its power. It did not simply burn these hollow spirits into ashes, but also formed a variety of defensive barriers that only let these hollow spirits get in but prevented them from going out, so they would become the Five Devils' nutrients.

The Five Devils soon engulfed all twelve hollow spirits.

Shi Yan's face became cold. He now looked at Lin Zhi and then said impatiently, "Hollow Spirits were solved. So, what happened to Xinyan?"

When he was dealing with hollow spirits, his entire body emitted

a cold aura. The Ice Cold Flame was still vigilant, guarding against these four people in case they had any bad intentions.

Right now, as the hollow spirits had been destroyed all, the cold aura from his body disappeared and gathered again in his eyes, making people tremble in fear.

Under Shi Yan's cold stare, Lin Zhi felt a little embarrassed. She grunted while her face slightly changed.

Under Shi Yan's scrutinizing look, Ye Zhang Feng was a little ashamed then explained, "After the three of us left the Hengluo Sea, we passed through the Vault of Heaven Sea Area to go to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. When we entered the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, two God Realm warriors of the Pure Land suddenly appeared and directly came to see her."

"Why were the Pure Land's people looking for her?" Shi Yan coldly looked at Ye Zhang Feng with an odd face. He was full of murderous aura. "Did you and Lin Ya Qi do something so that the people of the Pure Land looked for her?"

"Hey bro, what attitude is this?" Lin Zhi suddenly shouted. "My younger sister Lin Ya Qi doesn't have any wicked intentions. She always has a good heart. You can doubt Ye Zhang Feng, but don't get my sister involved, okay?" She was quite protective of her sister and deserved to be a good older sister.

"You shut up!" Shi Yan impatiently shouted, frowned, and grunted.

"Hey!" Lin Zhi shouted again, seeming to be ready to confront him.

Even Luo Xiao and Luo Meng looked odd as they felt that Shi Yan's attitude was too aggressive. Luo Xiao hesitated for a moment and said, "Friend, although you just helped us, still, you should mind the way you talk. Lin Zhi is our big sister, and Ya Qi is our younger sister. Your attitude is unacceptable."

"Even though you have a Sky Realm cultivations base, we are not scared of you." Luo Meng was quite hot-tempered. "Fighting with warriors who have higher realm than ours is not something that we have never done before. Don't think because of your Sky Realm cultivation base that you can do whatever you want and assume everyone has to be scared of you."

"Ye Zhang Feng and I are talking. Why are you talking so much nonsense?" Shi Yan suddenly stood up with a dark face, coldly looked at Lin Zhi and the other two. "If you don't shut your mouth, I will make you obedient."

"Stinky brat!" Lin Zhi's eyes became cold. The dragon bone whip in her hand shook violently and burst out with thunder sounds, releasing many shadows all over the sky like lightning.

"Want to die?" As Shi Yan was too worried for Xinyan, he was now furious and thus launched his blow emotionlessly. He raised his left hand and the Death Seal that contained death intent domain suddenly pressed on those whip shadows in the sky like a small mountain.

The death intent domain in that Seal was augmenting infinitely. The demise of lives took place inside that Death Seal.

The Death Seal pressed down, giving people a strange illusion that all creatures in existence would be destroyed. A deadly force also quickly spread out.

Under the attack of the death intent domain, the illusionary shadows in the sky all dispersed and soon faded away.

Her dragon bone whip was now exposed, as lightning was interweaving on the whip, striking toward Shi Yan's shoulders.

The Death Seal pressed down, and all whips were penetrated by the intent domain of the Death Seal. The death intent domain ran along the dragon bone whip and then infiltrated into Lin Zhi's wrist and her graceful body.

Lin Zhi's face went cold while her eyes showed her fear. Her face paled without a trace of blood, which gave people a bone-chilling feeling.

"What did you do?" Luo Xiao and Luo Meng shouted at the same time. Their skeletons suddenly expanded, and their original hefty body now grew up to two meters. They angrily rushed to Shi Yan.

"Stop!" Ye Zhang Feng finally shouted out loud. Clusters of burning fires of Purgatory True Flame diffused and turned into burning flames, staying between Shi Yan and the other three, preventing them from getting close to each other.

Seeing the Purgatory True Flame coming, Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng stopped immediately. As they knew the Purgatory True Flame was really powerful, they didn't dare to touch it and just stood motionlessly.

However, Shi Yan didn't stop.

He leisurely walked through the Purgatory True Flame without any hindrance, coldly smiled and rushed to Lin Zhi.

Cold aura spread out from his body. The swamp was frozen under each of his steps. The cold aura diffused and contacted with the Purgatory True Flame, canceling each other out.

The Purgatory True Flame didn't harm him.

"You are not the only one who has a Heaven Flame." Shi Yan grunted, turned his head to look at Ye Zhang Feng and then dashed towards Lin Zhi like a rainbow.

Snap.

Shi Yan raised his hand and slapped Lin Zhi's glowing face.

Lin Zhi was stunned, holding her cheek while looking at Shi Yan in fear. "You, you dare to slap me?"

Snap.

Another slap fell on her face. Shi Yan sneered, "It's to make you

shut up. Don't you know that?"

"Enough!"

Ye Zhang Feng shouted angrily, "Shi Yan, what do you want to do! Why are you hurting my people?"

"Hurt your people?" Shi Yan laughed fiercely. "If you don't tell me clearly about Xinyan, not only will I hurt your people, but I will also kill each of you one by one here."

Those people's faces suddenly discolored.

By now, they knew how vicious Shi Yan was.

Luo Xiao and Luo Meng were originally about to take action, but after seeing Shi Yan still safe after walking through the Purgatory True Flame, the two of them realized that Shi Yan was not just an ordinary Sky Realm warrior.

Luo Xiao, Luo Meng, and Lin Zhi could provoke a fight with other Sky Realm warriors. However, Shi Yan was different.

The ability that he had shown basically wasn't something that an ordinary Sky Realm warrior could have, which Luo Xiao, Luo Meng, and others had clearly seen with their own eyes.

"Shi Yan, what are you doing?" At this moment, voices of the people of Zhao Feng's group came up from a distance. Zhao Feng, Li Yue, Chi Xiao, and others were coming over here.

"Hey, why did you take action against them?" Zhao Feng asked from afar. "Just some Nirvana Realm warriors, why do you need to waste your time? In the former exotic land, you already killed two Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors. So, why did you need much time to bother with these Nirvana Realm warriors?"

Ye Zhang Feng, Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng looked panicked, with tremendously frightened faces.

## Chapter 415: Submitted

---

"Shi Yan, don't do this, I'm convinced. Don't be angry. Let's talk it out." Ye Zhang Feng quickly beamed a smile to calm Shi Yan down.

Lin Zhi's face was ashen, without a trace of blood. Under the effect of the death intent domain, she was full of fright, feeling like she had just returned from death.

Fortunately, her dragon bone whip had reduced half of the power of the Death Seal. The intent domain that got inside her head wasn't much. Otherwise, she would not have easily escaped from his death intent domain, and perhaps it would have deprived her of all of her vitality in the end.

Lin Zhi was originally about to use a secret treasure from her Storage Ring to deal with Shi Yan. However, after hearing what Zhao Feng just said, as well as seeing the ability of his team, Lin Zhi give up her attempt immediately.

No matter whether what Zhao Feng said was true or not, with the cultivation base of Zhao Feng, Li Yue, Chi Xiao, they were strong enough to kill her thousands of times.

Lin Zhi thought that these people came here with the same purpose, so why couldn't she join them to deal with other forces in the swamp? Although she didn't really want to submit herself, she could only bow her head and keep silent, not daring to utter a word.

Luo Xiao and Luo Meng had an odd expression, but didn't say anything. They secretly guarded against Zhao Feng's team, as they were afraid that those people might initiate some actions.

Luo Xiao and Luo Meng secretly made up their minds that as long as Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others showed the slightest sign that they wanted to kill the two of them, they both would

immediately escape with the fastest speed.

"Shi Yan, you don't need to be that aggressive." Ye Zhang Feng forced a smile and kept clasping his hands. "You know that I have never had any wicked intention towards you, be it in the Endless Sea or in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. We just have a small misunderstanding."

Shi Yan nodded and said, "I just don't like that woman quacking. If she had shut her mouth up sooner, I wouldn't have done that."

Lin Zhi bowed her head while her graceful body slightly trembled as she seemed to try to suppress her anger.

"Hey, still don't want to submit?! Shi Yan, how about letting me give her a lesson? If she gets a few more slaps, perhaps she will be more obedient and even miss its taste." Cai Yi gently came over, laughed out loud while looking at this group of people, ridiculing them.

Seven rattan monsters saw many more warriors coming, as well as the aura spreading out from the Purgatory True Flame and the Ice Cold Flame. They were well aware that if they continued to fight with those people from Shi Yan's team, they would possibly all die.

Therefore, when Zhao Feng and the others came to this side, the seven rattan monsters unexpectedly scattered away. Eventually, Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others arrived this place, where there were neither any hollow spirits nor rattan monsters. It thus became the safest place in the swamp.

"What happened to Xinyan after all?" Shi Yan kept his cold face and continued gazing Ye Zhang Feng.

"Well, it happened like this..."

After Ye Zhang Feng, Lin Ya Qi, and Xia Xinyan had left the Hengluo Sea together and went to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist to avoid the chaos happening in the Endless Sea, Ye Zhang Feng

and Lin Ya Qi also wanted to inform their master about the unusual situation of the Endless Sea.

However, when the three of them just arrived at the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist's entrance, two Spirit Realm warriors, who claimed that they were from the Pure Land, suddenly appeared, directly approaching Xia Xinyan.

Ye Zhang Feng and Lin Ya Qi were puzzled, while Xia Xinyan was perturbed. The two Spirit Realm warrior of the Pure Land showed extreme respect towards Xia Xinyan, calling her Sage, and invited her to return to the Pure Land, saying that they needed her to open some kind of a Soul Seal.

Xia Xinyan was full of suspicion and rejected directly. The two God Realm warriors from the Pure Land only apologized for being rude, then captured her and left, not caring about Ye Zhang Feng and Lin Ya Qi.

Ye Zhang Feng and Lin Ya Qi were dumbfounded, helplessly watching Xia Xinyan being brought away.

After that, the two of them thought for a while without saying anything, and vaguely felt that those two Spirit Realm warriors from the Pure Land seemed to mistake Xia Xinyan with someone else.

"Is what you said true?" Shi Yan still wore a cold face. "How come I still feel weird? Why did those two Spirit Realm warriors of the Pure Land bring Xia Xinyan away without any known reason? As far as I've known, she has never been to the Divine Great Land. So how do those Pure Land's warriors know her?"

"But that's the truth," Ye Zhang Feng smiled wryly, "Shi Yan, with my wisdom, do you think I would tell you such a mythical story if I wanted to lie to you?"

Shi Yan was stunned, as he contemplated for a while. He slightly shook his head and said with a suspicious face, "Why? How come



those two Spirit Realm warriors from the Pure Land could find Xinyan? Do they really know Xinyan? Impossible."

"Lin Ya Qi and I had thought for a long time and guessed that this might have something related to Xia Xinyan's Reincarnation Martial Spirit." Ye Zhang Feng hesitated a little bit before explaining. "According to my understanding of the Xia Family, I know that the Xias all have the Reincarnation Martial Spirit, and they can use the memory and the comprehension of the previous generation's warriors. I think it's possible that Xia Xinyan's last generation is some Pure Land's Sage?"

"Ah, the Pure Land does have this kind of secret technique. As long as someone has reached the God Realm, given the situation that he is about to die, he can use this secret technique to reincarnate. Before performing this secret technique, that person will retain a Divine Sense to be stored in a special container. The reincarnation will happen every fifty years. This kind of secret technique seems to be called 'the Requiem Great Technique.' The Divine Radiant Cult and the Pure Land are not far away, so I have heard a little bit about it." Zhao Feng suddenly interrupted.

Ye Zhang Feng screamed out loud with a shocked face. "Is that true?"

Li Yue arched her eyebrows, gazed at Shi Yan and then said, "If it's true, that girl's in danger..."

"Why?" Shi Yan's face changed while his heart sank to the bottom, as he didn't feel good about it either.

"If that girl is really a reincarnation of a Sage, once she is brought to the Pure Land, she will be fused with the Divine Sense of the last generation. That Divine Sense will wake up, and she will become that Pure Land's Sage. Her soul and memory of this life will vanish." Li Yue took a deep breath. "I also know about this kind of secret technique of the Pure Land. I know that this reincarnation process needs a lot of preparation. I think although that girl was

brought back to the Pure Land, she will still be safe for a short time. To wake her last generation's soul up, it will take at least five years to prepare. That girl needs to cultivate three kinds of secret soul techniques so that she can keep her soul in the wake-up time."

Shi Yan pondered with a grave face. His eyes were cold and sharp like a knife while he whispered, "Pure Land, Pure Land..."

"The Pure Land is one of seven factions of the Divine Great Land. They have around ten Spirit Realm warriors. Except for these warriors, there is a True God Realm warrior that guards the land. With your realm, to find the Pure Land and ask them to return a person within five years is not an easy task." Zhao Feng pitifully looked at Shi Yan, who was now wearing a murderous face. "Within five years, if you can get the true recognition of the Gods Sect to make the elders of the Gods Sect look at you differently, and use the Gods Sect's forces, then you may have a chance to ask for that girl."

Li Yue also nodded. "This is the only way."

"Five years..." Shi Yan coldly said, "I can't wait that long. Who knows if the Pure Land will wake her up in advance. Hmm, wait until the Endless Sea's thing's over. I will find a way."

"Relying only on your own strength, it's impossible to ask to take her back." Zhao Feng comforted him. "You should wake up. Unless you can reach the True God Realm, don't even dream about being able to confront a faction like the Pure Land. This is a big force that has a hundred thousand years of history. It has been dominating the Divine Great Land for ages. Thus, they should have some background that you cannot imagine."

After getting the situation, Li Yue, Cai Yi, and the two brothers also persuaded him not to act recklessly and take his time to consider.

All the Divine Great Land's warriors knew how terrible and dangerous an ancient force like the Pure Land was. Not to mention

Shi Yan with only Sky Realm cultivation base, even a warrior at the peak Spirit Realm would also perish when confronting that force.

Shi Yan kept silent and didn't say a word. No one knew what he was thinking. He looked around and then spoke up after a while, "You guys continue. I will begin my unfinished business."

Then, he left immediately, going to the area that was overwhelmed with hollow spirits.

Cold aura spread out from his body. Wherever the cold air passed through, the swamp under his feet froze instantly. As soon as the cold aura diffused, the temperature of the whole swamp reduced sharply.

Along the way, he opened his mind and left his Sea of Consciousness empty, deliberately enticing the hollow spirits to enter.

In the area where the hollow spirits were gathering, the rattan monsters could feel the cold aura from his body and thus quickly stayed away from him, not daring to disturb him.

The hollow spirits were not scared of cold aura but the soul attack. After he had opened his Sea of Consciousness, those hollow spirits got enticed and immediately rushed toward him, turning into many beams of green light and disappearing into his Sea of Consciousness.

Every hollow spirit that fell into his Sea of Consciousness was trapped by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame and then devoured by the Five Devils.

Around one hundred hollow spirits were panicking inside his Sea of Consciousness, wanted to get out, but couldn't break the barrier created by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. Even if they were struggling and fighting on all sides of his Sea of Consciousness, they had no way to escape.

The Five Devils slowly swallowed almost one hundred hollow spirits, and then, his mind began to change quietly.

## Chapter 416: Spin Cocoon

---

In the swamp, nearly one hundred hollow spirits floating around were attracted in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, which were then swallowed by the Five Devils.

When all of the hollow spirits disappeared from the swamp, the Five Devils in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness had a mutation immediately.

Inside his Sea of Consciousness, the big bodies of the Five Devils gradually curled up and gathered together. Strands of soul consciousness quietly condensed on the Five Devils' bodies, seeming to be providing them some sort of necessary nutrients.

Gradually, the Five Devils were fully wrapped, looking like a big cocoon. A string of surging spirit came out from the inside of that cocoon from time to time.

A kind of cold evil aura was released from the Five Devils' bodies, making the soul consciousness in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness condense above, and seem to be well-prepared for the Five Devils' mutation.

Feeling the soul consciousness receding, Shi Yan showed an emotional look on his face and halted in the swamp.

Although Chi Xiao, Zhao Feng, and others were fighting with the rattan monsters, after realizing the change in Shi Yan's face, they all quietly came over and surrounded him.

Zhao Feng and the others didn't know what was happening in his body. However, through his dazed appearance, they knew that he was not in a good situation at the moment. If he was careless and let the rattan monsters swath him, or be attacked by the other warriors, his life would probably be in danger.

Whether they were the Divine Radiant Cult's disciples like Zhao Feng or others like Chi Xiao and Cai Yi, they all didn't want

anything bad happening to him. Therefore, they automatically assumed the obligation of protecting him, as they were afraid that unexpected accidents might happen at this stage.

In the beginning, his soul consciousness flowed to the Five Devils at a slow pace. Once the Five Devils had condensed into a round object and formed a thick cocoon, even his soul consciousness that flowed to the Five Devils slowed down.

At this moment, Shi Yan suddenly woke up in panic.

The changes of the Five Devils in his Sea of Consciousness were continuing, still absorbing his soul consciousness. However, he was no longer affected by the Five Devils' changes. He now could maintain his consciousness to observe all that was happening.

"In this dangerous place, why did you suddenly become lost?" Cai Yi blamed him. Her beautiful eyes flashed a trace of concern. She was next to Shi Yan as she cheerfully smiled, no longer hating him because of being rude to her in the lake.

Shi Yan raised his eyebrows, looked at the crowd and said shamefully, "Too many hollow spirits to digest. No worries, I'm sound now. Thank you for your protection, or else I might have had troubles."

After hearing what he said, everyone else was now relieved, giving friendly smiles and nodding to him.

"There are a lot of rattan monsters. So, it's tough to deal with them. We'll stay here temporarily to wait and see the changes. As long as the rattan monsters are still here, this swamp will not be in peace. I always feel that this swamp should quiet down so that some changes will come."

The moving speed of Zhao Feng and Li Yue's powers in their body slowed down gradually. They stretched their arms out from time to time to deal with the rattan monsters that dared to come close to them. Once those rattan monsters were beaten to the other

areas under Zhao Feng's impact, he grinned and looked at the warriors in the other areas with ill-intent.

Shi Yan was startled, and couldn't help but look towards Ye Zhang Feng and Lin Zhi's area, and then called out with a pitching tone, "Ye Zhang Feng, come here."

From a distance, the four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group didn't have difficulties in dealing with the rattan monsters. As they had the Purgatory True Flame to protect them, the rattan monsters didn't dare come close to these four people. This kept them safe in the swamp without being scared of the rattan monsters' threat.

Hearing Shi Yan calling, Ye Zhang Feng's eyes showed a strange light. He hesitated for a while before nodding to Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng, reluctantly coming to Shi Yan's spot.

As soon as the four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group arrived, Zhao Feng and Li Yue quietly scattered. The other members of the Divine Radiant Cult also understood their intent, dispersing out and besieging the four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group, preventing them from running away.

Lin Zhi's face changed while her heart was frightened.

After having received two slaps, Lin Zhi seemed to have been awakened, realizing Shi Yan's cruelty. Thus, she felt a little scared of Shi Yan. However, she didn't know if Shi Yan had an ill intention or not.

The two brothers Luo Xiao and Luo Meng were calm and didn't say anything. Their eyes flickered nonstop while being vigilant secretly.

"Why do you need to be that cautious?" Cai Yi smiled gently, slightly shook her head and said with a soft voice, "If we did want to harm you, you think you could escape us? You should be obedient. This place is not the same as the outside. If we want to kill you, you will die undoubtedly, no matter how much cautious

you are."

Lin Zhi's face darkened, as she helplessly let down her guard.

"Shi Yan, are we friends?" Ye Zhang Feng came forward. His handsome face was solemn, and his sharp eyes looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan froze for a moment and slightly nodded, "Let it be."

"If we are friends, then why do your partners keep provoking us? Are you the same as them? Do you think we are easy to be bullied? When we were in the Hengluo Sea before, I never hurt you and also brought Xia Xinyan along as you wanted. Although she was taken by people of the Pure Land, we were actually helpless in this incident. Even if she were not with us by that time, the Pure Land's people would still have found her," Ye Zhang Feng said calmly.

Shi Yan nodded. "Hmm, if it's the case, then I'm wrong indeed. I am sorry. Because it's related to her, I'm a little too emotional."

After saying that, he looked at Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others. "Don't be so eyeing. He is my friend. No matter what the truth is, before I figure it out, I hope you have regards for me and don't bully them."

After hearing Shi Yan's words, Zhao Feng and the others grinned and nodded. Their look towards Ye Zhang Feng's group became less fierce.

Ye Zhang Feng quietly let out a sigh of relief.

"Why are you here? Ah, since you've come here before us, do you know if anything is unusual in this swamp?" Shi Yan looked around with full suspicion. With many warriors gathering in the swamp like this, they clearly knew that it was not easy to mess with hollow spirits and rattan monsters. But how come no one left? After all, what were they waiting for?

There should be some strange thing in this swamp area, something that attracted the crowd here. Otherwise, why did these warriors still stay here even though they knew that this place was



extremely dangerous?

Zhao Feng's and the others' eyes brightened; all of them looked at Ye Zhang Feng.

Shi Yan's doubt was also what was in their mind now. They were very curious about why Ye Zhang Feng's group also stayed back here.

"It is said that the Pure God Soul of this exotic land is in this swamp. The source of this information is absolutely reliable. However, we have been staying here for a long time, but there is no movement of any soul." Ye Zhang Feng was somehow puzzled. "According to my master, if the Pure God Soul truly exists, the most likely area should be in this swamp."

"How long have you been here?"

"Seven days, more or less. During these seven days, quite a lot of hollow spirits and rattan monsters appeared in this swamp. Some people of my team died on entering here. Many of them turned into hollow spirits after they died. It seems that after people die here, their souls do not perish, but become hollow spirits instead." Ye Zhang Feng frowned and explained. He thought seriously, shook his head and sighed. "Maybe we shouldn't stay here for too long. If there is nothing in another three days, we must leave this place. Even if there truly is the Pure God Soul here, we don't have the blessing to get it."

"Oh?!" Shi Yan raised his eyebrows, looking at him with puzzled eyes.

"Every few days, a strong vibration will come up from this swamp. It's strong enough to crush people's souls. The latter ones will be stronger than the previous ones. During the past seven days in this swamp, we have seen this sort of tremor twice. These two instances of vibrations almost made our souls collapse." Ye Zhang Feng's face remained calm and solemn, "I almost forgot this. The next tremor should happen in three days, and it will be much

stronger than the previous ones. With low cultivation bases, we're afraid that we will be unable to bear it this time. We don't want our souls to collapse."

The three people Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng also wore a regretful face and reluctantly shook their heads.

"Tremor?" Shi Yan's heart was agitated. He faintly understood something. "Did the last tremor just happen not long ago?"

"Yes."

Shi Yan immediately realized something. He expressed a horrified complexion. "Can this kind of vibration affect people's heartbeat, making the heart beat faster, producing a kind of crazy soul fluctuation?"

The four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group nodded.

The people of Zhao Feng's group had a slight change on their faces.

They had realized this kind of vibration before they entered here.

This tremor could indeed cause the increase of the heartbeat and make people go insane. Before that, when they were on the island, they had already got affected. The two brothers Lao Li and Lao Lun, and Zuo Xu reddened, and somehow couldn't control their minds.

They could feel such a huge vibration even when they were on the island. Now that they were in this swamp, when the vibration happened, it would certainly be even more terrible.

Moreover, according to Ye Zhang Feng's words, the next vibration would be much stronger than the previous one.

"Do you think that after the tremor, this swamp might present with something peculiar?" With the strange sounds that resounded in the main city of the Four Symbols Mountain Range in his mind, Shi Yan hesitated for a while and then vaguely came to

understand.

"Well, I know it. Before that tremor comes, let's go together to see if we can find something." After thinking for a while, Shi Yan decided to stay and take a look at this swamp to see if there was anything abnormal there.

The four people of Ye Zhang Feng's team nodded again.

## Chapter 417: The swamp's terrifying changes.

---

In the swamp, as Shi Yan had captured all hollow spirits, only the rattan monsters continued fighting. To the warriors in the bog, rattan monsters were not that terrifying. After the hollow spirits' threat disappeared, those warriors proactively began their attacks, dividing into various teams, besieging and launching their strikes.

Whenever one rattan monster died, its blood would flow into the swamp.

Blood from these rattan monsters was dark red and warm, giving people a strange feeling.

Shi Yan had soon understood that these rattan monsters sucked human blood for food. Hence, the blood that flowed out from their bodies was not their own blood, but what they had sucked from human warriors.

Killed rattan monsters were lying bloodily in the swamp.

Time passed quietly, and soon, two days were gone.

Due to the hollow spirits' disappearance, the light inside the bog became darker; it was just the faint green light glimmering, giving people a gloomy feeling.

Whenever a rattan monster died, the ambiance inside the swamp would get a little bit colder, giving people a chill as if they were in a Devil Abyss.

More and more rattan monsters were killed under the unity of the warriors. Also, more dark red blood was gushing into the swamp.

The bog area became gloomy. All kinds of cold, evil aura seemed to spread out gradually, hovering above the swamp, sending people a creepy feeling that something bad was about to happen.

Finally, all the rattan monsters were completely wiped out by the warriors.

After their blood had been poured into the swamp, the originally green swamp now turned dark red. However, the green light emitting from the swamp didn't change, still floating above the dark red water area, making people feel strange.

After all the rattan monsters were cleared, the bog became tranquil. Many warriors were aware that the atmosphere was unusual. They didn't say anything, just put up their guards and stayed vigilant secretly.

Some warriors with lower realms even wore thick coats to resist the cold, evil aura from the swamp.

Lin Zhi covered her appealing body with a leather skirt, but she seemed to be unable to bear the cold, even though she had the cultivation base of Third Sky of Nirvana Realm. She had to put on a thick velvet coat, fully covering the curves of her body. Her face even became a little pale.

Lao Li and Lao Lun were also the same. They had to put on more clothes.

As Ye Zhang Feng only had the cultivation base of First Sky of Nirvana Realm, and his Sea of Consciousness had just been formed, he was unlikely to be able to withstand the penetration of the cold air in this place. However, because he had the Purgatory True Flame, Ye Zhang Feng, on the contrary, was not affected. The flames coming out from his cuffs helped him resist the cold air.

A feeling of extreme repression spread throughout the swamp.

Everyone in the swamp had a feeling of insecurity. They looked extremely vigilant.

Gurgle gurgle!

Water in the swamp blistered the very first dark red bubble. After that bubble burst, a plume of blood red vapor quietly spread

out.

Gurgle gurgle.

More and more blood red bubbles emerged from the bog.

When those bubbles blew up, they released blood red smoke. The blood red vapor gradually diffused all over the swamp and shrouded all of the remaining warriors there.

Thump Thump!

A strange noise came up from the bottom of the swamp.

The faces of the four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group changed.

"Not good," Lin Zhi couldn't help but cry out loud with a frightened face. "The tremor this time seems to come too early. The time shouldn't have arrived yet, right?"

The four of them seemed to know the exact principle of the vibration in the bog. Hence, after rattan monsters had been cleaned up, they weren't in a hurry to leave.

However, the tremor of the bog this time was beyond their expectation. Since the rattan monsters had been wiped out, the vibration seemed to happen earlier than usual.

The four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group were all at the Nirvana Realm but still lingered in this swamp because they thought that the tremor would not be arising for a while, and thus, they still had some hope.

Nevertheless, as soon as the tremor had just come up this time, the four of them were immediately anxious. They nodded to Shi Yan, indicating that they wanted to leave right away to return to the ground with the fastest speed.

"Lao Li and Lao Lun, you two should go out too." Seeing the panic on the faces of the four people of Ye Zhang Feng's group, Shi Yan also felt cold inside as he decided quickly.

The two brothers were not reckless people. They looked at each

other and gratefully nodded to Shi Yan. They didn't dare to hesitate and hurriedly ran to the exit together with Ye Zhang Feng's group.

The faces of Nirvana Realm warriors from other teams in the swamp discolored as well. It seemed they all could sense something not good was coming, so they rushed out towards the exit just like Ye Zhang Feng and his team.

The quiet swamp now suddenly clamored again.

One Nirvana Realm warrior rushed to the entrance amidst the vibrant sound. As Ye Zhang Feng was taking the lead with the fastest speed, he was the first one who dashed through the exit.

BOOM!

A heavy sound reverberated through the entire swamp area. The sound arose from the direction of the exit.

Thick blood smoke stuck onto the dark green shimmering exit and seemed to form a defensive barrier that prevented anyone from going out.

Ye Zhang Feng dashed forward, but not only could he not break it, but was also pressed down by a massive force. His body was like a bloody shell directly falling into the swamp. He suddenly screamed out loud.

A fiery fire burst out from his body. This fire released a terrifying heat, burning the blood into smog.

A First Sky of Nirvana Realm warrior of another team also had the same consequence. When he stormed towards the exit, the same force pressed him down, making him fall into the swamp while being covered with blood.

This warrior didn't have Heaven Flame like Ye Zhang Feng, and thus, when his body was soaked in blood, he mournfully cried in pain. His body emitted a faint blood-red smog, and under everyone's attentive looks, his skin quickly fell off, exposing his

white bones.

Extremely erosive poison!

The countenances of everyone in the swamp changed. Those warriors whose feet were in the swamp were aware of the blood's changes, which started to erode their Profound Qi.

Even Shi Yan's face also changed, as he also could feel this kind of erosive poison existing.

However, this erosive poison seemed to be much slower, and its toxicity was much less dangerous in other areas. Many warriors around, who were stained with blood, didn't scream mournfully right away, as the blood didn't dissolve their bodies.

It seemed that only those in the swamp got affected by the extreme erosive poison.

Seeing that warrior being eroded and dissolved, Ling Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng, who did want to fly up out of this place, changed their visages immediately due to the fright, not knowing if they should advance or retreat.

At this moment, if they left, they would encounter the strong defensive barrier, and probably would be pressed down by a certain force. Their bodies would then soak in that blood, be eroded and dissolved.

However, if they didn't leave, the vibration, which had started already, would shatter their spirits, as they couldn't resist with their low cultivation base. Therefore, regardless of leaving or not, it seemed that they only had a dead end ahead of them.

Lin Zhi's group, Lao Li and Lao Lun all wore a desperate look.

"Lao Li, Lao Lun, come back here. We'll see." Shi Yan contemplated for a while and suddenly shouted. "Ye Zhang Feng, you guys should also get back here right now. That place isn't safe. Maybe, it's the most dangerous place."



Ye Zhang Feng was startled for a moment, and then reacted immediately, talking to the other three of his group, "Go! Let's get back first."

The two Lao brothers had already left with their fastest speed. Their feet didn't even touch the ground as they directly rushed back to Shi Yan's location.

Ye Zhang Feng, Lin Zhi, and the other two didn't dare to hesitate any longer. Although they could not pierce through the sky to fly, they still put all of their efforts in urging their Nirvana Realm power and gathering all of their flying ability. Finally, they could fly up and rush back.

The people of Shi Yan's group were all at the Sky Realm, so they could fly up away from the swamp surface and hover in the air.

Seeing the Lao brothers and the members of Ye Zhang Feng's group coming back with a frightened face, Shi Yan's eyes suddenly brightened. A bone-chilling energy poured into the swamp beneath him.

Under the cold energy, blood in the swamp was frozen and formed an iceberg, around ten square meters large, enough for the Lao brothers and Ye Zhang Feng's group to land.

While Lao Li and those people were worried that they couldn't keep floating in the air for too long, they saw the iceberg that Shi Yan had just created. They were overjoyed, landing on that blood ice rock.

"Friends, please help." As other Nirvana Realm warriors also saw it, they all begged Shi Yan and rushed over at the same time, landing on that iceberg together with Lao Li, Ye Zhang Feng, and the others.

The Nirvana Realm warriors did want to leave the swamp area, but as they saw one warrior get killed bloodily, they became much more obedient and landed on the iceberg which Shi Yan had used

the Ice Cold Flame to create.

Most of the other warriors gathering in other places were at the Sky Realm, so they could fly. Seeing their fellows all gather at Shi Yan's place, those warriors hesitated for a while before flying over.

Pound pound...

The vibration sounds became dense and seemed to pierce through people's hearts, making their souls tremble.

It was unknown when the Nirvana Realm warriors, who were standing on the iceberg, all their faces and ears red. Their eyes gradually changed from frightened to dazed, even revealing a crazy, bloodthirsty intent.

Just with a quick glance, Shi Yan knew that those warriors might not be able to bear the first tremor. They would quickly lose their mind.

"We should kill them first." Zhao Feng frowned, looking at Ye Zhang Feng and others and giving a ruthless proposal. "Those who are at the Nirvana Realm will certainly lose their minds soon. They will destroy everyone they see. We should take the opportunity to resolve them while they are still half awake."

Some members of the Divine Radiant Cult also nodded.

"That's right." The Sky Realm warriors, who were gathering here were boisterous, seeming to agree with Zhao Feng's suggestion.

# Chapter 418: Corpse-eating Demonic Insect

---

"We should proceed as soon as possible," said a chunky Sky Realm warrior who swept over, looking at the Nirvana Realm warriors who were standing on the iceberg.

In the swamp, blood bubbles emerged from time to time. Whenever those blood bubbles ruptured, scarlet blood mist emitted everywhere, scattering above the swamp.

"You don't have any of your fellows there?" Shi Yan was also standing on the iceberg, coldly looking at him as he asked.

"Yes." That chunky warrior grinned and said heartlessly. "Those two are our Devil Valley's members. I do it for the sake of everyone. Once they lose their mind, they will crazily attack everyone. It's not fun at all."

While talking, he pointed to the two Nirvana Realm warriors who were wearing dark blue clothing, that looked the same as the one on his body.

"Brother, do not have a woman's benevolence. You can save them for now, but when they lose their minds later, you will become the one who suffers. It's better to act decisively, taking the opportunity when they aren't crazy to kill them." Another Sky Realm warrior proposed.

Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others also nodded, waiting for Shi Yan's order to kill the Lao brothers, Ye Zhang Feng, and the other Nirvana Realm warriors without hesitation.

Chi Xiao's face became cold.

At this moment, he suddenly felt glad that he didn't let Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi come down here. If they were here, they would have been in the same situation of these Nirvana Realm warriors, being sacrificed for other warriors' sake.

It was unknown whether or not it was an intrinsic indifferent

nature of the warriors from the Divine Great Land that they unexpectedly didn't care for their own people. In their hearts, as long as there was a threat from someone, they would kill those as soon as possible to avoid troubles later.

Cai Yi's beautiful eyes flickered nonstop. She didn't say anything, just subconsciously looked at Shi Yan, awaiting his decision.

"If you want to do it, do it with your people. As for our people, we don't bother you to help. We will have our own way." Shi Yan frowned, looking at Lao Li, Lao Lun, and Ye Zhang Feng's group. He hesitated a little bit before coldly raking through the Sky Realm warriors around.

"You do have a lady's heart." The chunky warriors grunted and said with disdain. "Your deed isn't good for them. When you have to take actions later, they might have even worse deaths. Perhaps even their corpses could not stay intact."

"We'll solve our own matters. It will have nothing to do with you." Shi Yan was standing on the iceberg as he raised his left hand. A flow of fiery flame shot out from his fingertip, like a fire sword hacking the iceberg and splitting it in half.

The Lao brothers and the people of Ye Zhang Feng's group stood in one-half of the iceberg, and the other warriors in the other.

Shi Yan's Profound Qi was activated. The part of the iceberg with Lao Li, Ye Zhang Feng, and the others slowly moved away from the other part.

"You can do whatever you want to those people. But I don't allow you to put your hands on mine." Coldly looking around, Shi Yan gradually moved his part of the iceberg to a corner of the swamp.

"Brat, you are only at the First Sky of Sky Realm, but your tone is so arrogant." The chunky warrior sneered and glared at Zhao Feng. "Divine Radiant Cult's people come to this bog with the same purpose, that is to get the Pure God Soul. For this purpose,

sacrificing some people should be an obvious matter. You are a leader but cannot control this?"

"Damn you. Stop talking nonsense. We will do whatever we want. Don't put your nose into our business," said Zhao Feng with rage.

Despite the fact that Zhao Feng didn't agree with Shi Yan's decision, once Shi Yan was determined, he didn't oppose him. Instead, he would stand on his side.

In Zhao Feng's eyes, Shi Yan's future would be the most brilliant in the Divine Radiant Cult. Moreover, when Shi Yan was only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, he had already been able to kill a Third Sky of Sky Ream warrior. Therefore, Zhao Feng respected him a lot, not treating him like an ordinary warrior.

"As you wish." The stout warrior grinned and flew over to the other piece of iceberg. He said to the warriors who were gathering around. "Your decision and mine should be consistent, right?"

Those warriors also nodded.

The short and stout warrior looked at Zhao Feng with a cold visage. "If it's the case, when I take action, it shouldn't be your business, right?"

"As you wish." Zhao Feng looked at Shi Yan and nodded after seeing no reaction from Shi Yan.

Boom Boom.

A bunch of swarthy lights suddenly flew out from the chunky warrior's cuffs. The evil light turned into a wicked, hideous soul beast midway, jumping into the group of Nirvana Realm warriors standing on that piece of iceberg.

When the evil light hit those Nirvana Realm warriors, whose eyes were dazed, their bodies were torn apart and destroyed from the inside. Even their souls were eradicated.

In just the blink of an eye, the bodies of six Nirvana Realm warriors on the iceberg were split open, losing all their vitality.

Streams of these corpses' aura quickly flew toward Shi Yan.

From twenty meters away, Shi Yan's acupuncture points also spun fast, resulting in a strong suction force that attracted those streams aura into his body.

Not long after that, he had completely absorbed the aura from those dead warriors.

His seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points didn't have any pain or swelling. Inside, the streams of aura were quickly condensed and transformed, faintly revealing the vibration that could affect people's mood.

After entering the Sky Realm, the Mystery Martial Spirit could accommodate the aura. It seemed to have leaped up to a new level as well.

The aura of the six dead Nirvana Realm warriors inside his acupuncture points was not too much. When his acupuncture points transformed and refined the aura, his mind was still conscious, without any signs of chaos.

With the higher realm, the Mystery Martial Spirit's capacity was increased. Even the refining speed was also much faster.

People from a distance could realize the surge of the refined aura. Looking at Lao Li, who now had crazy eyes, Shi Yan hesitated for a while before suddenly urging the Ice Cold Flame's power.

A flow of cold air shot out from his palms like water snakes, drilling into the Lao brothers, Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng.

Under the cold air's infiltration, these people's bodies gradually froze up. Not long after, they looked just like ice sculptures.

Only Ye Zhang Feng was safe under the penetration of the Ice Cold Flame's power. The Purgatory True Flame in his body

proactively produced a fiery flame to offset all the ice power of the Ice Cold Flame that got into his body.

After the Ice Cold Flame had penetrated his body, Ye Zhang Feng's eyes became evil, and his whole body emitted a vicious aura.

It was as if the blood red smog, which was still hovering around without dispersing, seemed to have realized something, that it unexpectedly surrounded Ye Zhang Fang.

Thump Thump! Thump Thump!

The vibration sounds continued to resound from the swamp. Ye Zhang Feng gradually lost his mind. In the middle of the blood red smog, he suddenly howled drearily as if some kind of an evil force had invaded his soul, making him unable to control his mind.

At the same time, waves suddenly rippled in the bog. In the center of those ripples, a giant dead tree slowly floated from the bottom of the bog, as if being driven by some strength. It then stuck out of the swamp.

This giant tree had no foliage, and had been dried for an unknown period of time. However, it was incredibly huge when it came out, gradually overwhelming the entire swamp. The giant tree was covered with thumb-sized, dark green insects, which seemed like they fed on dead creatures. They all had a very thick crustacean shell.

Countless dark green insects slowly crawled on the giant tree. More and more insects got out from inside the tree and then spread throughout the swamp.

"Corpse-eating demonic insects!" Zhao Feng's face changed, and he shouted.

As soon as the other warriors in the swamp area heard his scream, their faces all changed dramatically, as if they were encountering a pandemic. They immediately showed all kinds of secret defensive treasures and martial techniques, protecting their

bodies carefully as they were scared of being touched by those insects.

These insects first crawled on the giant tree and quickly covered the whole tree in just a short time, producing buzzing sounds. Those hundreds of creeping insects had flesh wings come out from their shells. They flew up from the tree and circled above the swamp.

"Shi Yan, be careful. Those demon insects feast on human brains. They are extremely terrible! Once it gets into your brain, it'll eat even the spinal fluid, and only your corpse will remain." Cai Yi's face was cold while her beautiful eyes beamed out a trace of fear. She quietly came close to Shi Yan.

The ancient tree slowly rose from the swamp. When the giant tree covered the entire swamp, its roots suddenly emitted a milky halo. Inside that milky halo, a crystal lotus throne gradually emerged.

No one stood on this crystal lotus throne, but it was emitting an earth-shaking aura.

Rich Heaven and Earth aura spread out from the lotus throne, making the faces of the warriors in the swamp change. After taking in a breath of Heaven and Earth aura, they all felt relaxed and happy.

When the thick Heaven and Earth aura flowed out, the blood red smog, which was hovering around, suddenly flocked to the crystal petals of the lotus throne. During the process, the lotus throne's heart flashed a beam of white light and then disappeared. A heart-shaped object emerged from the center, releasing an ivory liquid that made people's souls tremble.

That liquid gurgled and produced thumping sounds. Many flows of surging energy shot out from it, which seemed to crack people's souls.



"Life Original Fluid!." Zhao Feng's eyes suddenly reddened. He grunted and revealed a greedy look.s

# Chapter 419: Life Original Fluid

---

That heart-shaped utensil was as big as a walnut. The milky fluid inside it was pitifully little, only five or six drops at max. However, that small amount of liquid made all the Sky Realm warriors in the swamp go crazy.

Hearing Zhao Feng shout ‘Life Original Fluid,’ these warriors’ faces all reddened with sharp, burning eyes. Even their breathing became heavier. In their eyes, the milky fluid seemed to be the most precious liquid in Heaven and Earth, as if it could make anyone abandon their lives just to have it.

On the crystal lotus, that heart-shaped object flashed up and then disappeared so fast that most of the warriors there couldn’t see it, except for hearing Zhao Feng’s shout.

However, after that shout, the warriors seemed to forget everything, not even caring about the terrifying corpse-eating demonic insects. They rushed towards the heart-shaped utensil at the fastest speed.

The Divine Radiant Cult’s disciples Zhao Feng, Li Yue, and the others were no exception. They covered themselves with defensive halos to avoid the siege of the corpse-eating demonic insects while storming towards that heart-shaped utensil with greedy faces.

Shi Yan dropped his jaw, looking dumbstruck.

Even when Zhao Feng and Li Yue faced the sacred level secret treasure in the exotic land previously, they had not been as impulsive as they were now. In their eyes, the so-called ‘Life Original Fluid’ seemed to be much more precious than the Sacred level Secret Treasures. Because of this fluid, it seemed they could even risk their lives.

Although he didn’t know the exact effects of this Life Original Fluid, from the others’ performance, he knew that this thing was

scarce, and certainly had an irresistible attraction to warriors. Otherwise, those warriors wouldn't have become that crazy.

On the way rushing to the lotus, three of those Sky Realm warriors were suddenly covered by countless demonic insects.

Under Shi Yan's scrutinizing look, the corpse-eating demonic insects quickly ate the defensive halos of those three warriors. When their defensive energy halos were bitten off, the corpse-eating demonic insects took the opportunity to drill into their bodies, producing excited noise as they moved towards their victims' brains.

Shi Yan could see the corpse-eating demonic insects subtly move under their skin, which gave him a creepy feeling.

Those corpse-eating demonic insects soon gnawed those three people's brains and also ate their eyeballs, giving them a horrible death.

The corpse-eating demonic insects also attacked many other warriors. Those corpse-eating demonic insects seemed to be defending something. As long as someone dared to come close to the crystal lotus, they would rush over and then used their strange ability to tear down the warriors' defensive energy halos as well as secret treasures. Even their armors were munched down.

The corpse-eating demonic insects could eat anything from energy armors to the fleshy bodies. These defenses could prevent them for a while, but couldn't really stop them completely.

Shi Yan and Cai Yi were standing in a remote corner, not hurriedly rushing over. Therefore, the corpse-eating demonic insects didn't make them their main targets.

Cai Yi had a hovering halo around her body. Her beautiful, sharp eyes also stared at the crystal lotus, but she didn't dare to act rashly.

Ten corpse-eating demonic insects were surrounding her body,

chewing her defensive halo little by little. Because the number of them was small, Cai Yi could deal with them comfortably, unlike those arrogant warriors whose defenses were broken in a short time, and they had their brains eaten afterward.

"What is Life Original Fluid?" The energy of the starlight covering Shi Yan's body was reduced little by a little because there were around ten corpse-eating demonic insects were gnawing at it. He had to release more star power to maintain the presence of his Star Shield. While guarding against the insects, Shi Yan looked at Cai Yi and asked with doubt.

"It's said that Life Original Fluid is one of the three kinds of sacred water. It can wash the origin of life so that a living being can have inconceivable changes." Cai Yi's eyes flashed a terrifying look. "Life Original Fluid is an extremely effective support for the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors to enter the True God Realm. If a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior has one drop of Life Original Fluid and absorbs it into the life magnetic field of his host soul, then he can break through the True God Realm and enhance his strength greatly."

Shi Yan looked stunned.

"You may know that the later the phase of warriors' cultivation is, the slower the progress he can make, and the harder the perception and the comprehension would be. Most of Spirit Realm warriors will stay at their Third Sky forever, hardly entering that threshold. Although there are many Spirit Realm warriors in our Divine Great Land, none of them are able to enter the True God Realm. The probability is too low. Life Original Fluid can help Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors enhance the opportunity to break through." Cai Yi's face was full of excitement. While talking, she couldn't help but continuously stare at the crystal lotus.

She clearly had a huge greed for the Life Original Fluid on the crystal lotus. Countless insects flew around above the bog, like locusts gathering near the crystal lotus. They attacked the warriors

who dared to come close, chewing and tearing apart all of their defenses.

In that crystal lotus, the Life Original Fluid flashed and disappeared from time to time. Every time it appeared, it boiled up the surrounding warriors' blood and made them show their greedy eyes.

Rich Heaven and Earth aura spread out from the inside the crystal lotus. Ivory smog emerged and hovered without dispersing. Standing one hundred meters away from the aura, Shi Yan was also excited and had a graceful, wonderful feeling.

In the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, although the Heaven and Earth energy of the other areas no longer existed, such rich Heaven and Earth aura still existed in the underground of this exotic land. This surprised him a lot.

It was like all of Heaven and Earth aura that had disappeared in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist now gathered in this area, providing some kind of necessary energy so that the Life Original Fluid could be preserved until now. At a particular time, it would arise from the bottom of the swamp.

'As the Heaven and Earth aura is incredibly strong, perhaps I should try to let the Holy Spirit God out.' Shi Yan kept staring at that direction for a moment; his mind seemed to be triggered as he suddenly remembered something.

He then urged his mind to connect with the Blood Vein Ring, looking to the place where the Holy Spirit God was hibernating and releasing a soul consciousness. "The Heaven and Earth aura in this place is extremely rich. It may supplement your consumed energy. Do you want to come out and absorb it?" The Holy Spirit God didn't respond after a long while.

Shi Yan focused his mind once again, bringing all the spiritual consciousness together and striking towards the direction of the Holy Spirit God in the Blood Vein Ring.

His spiritual consciousness twisted into a straight line, forming a bunch of light and then drilling into the center of the Holy Spirit God.

"Good." The Holy Spirit God finally had a weak response with a deep sense of exhaustion, like a dying old man. This gave Shi Yan a feeling of weakness and tiredness.

Shi Yan's face slightly changed, as he felt a little guilty. He quickly opened his mind to let it fly out of the Blood Vein Ring.

The Blood Vein Ring was a strong confinement to the Ice Cold Flame. However, its treatment for the Holy Spirit God and the Earth Flame was different. If the Holy Spirit God and the Earth Flame wanted to come out, the Blood Vein Ring would not stop them, and let them go freely.

The Holy Spirit God turned into a light beam slowly fluttering towards the crystal lotus.

Shi Yan quietly observed it.

After the Holy Spirit God came out, he saw that the hovering Heaven and Earth aura seem to be attracted, actually storming towards the Holy Spirit God, pouring into its special life structure.

The feeble aura of the Holy Spirit God gradually grew up while the surging spirit was slow and frequent. It seemed to be recovering quickly.

The recovery speed was slow at first, but now it accelerated a lot faster with the supplementation of the Earth and Heaven aura.

While the Sky Realm warriors were facing the corpse-eating demonic insects' attack, the Holy Spirit God turned into a bunch of light and was the first one who jumped into the crystal lotus. It flashed and disappeared into the crystal lotus.

The connection between Shi Yan and the Holy Spirit God was suddenly cut off by the crystal lotus throne.

Feeling cold at heart, Shi Yan was a little worried, attentively looking at that direction.

After the Holy Spirit God jumped in, the releasing speed of Heaven and Earth aura from the crystal lotus throne suddenly slowed down. Even the Heaven and Earth aura that was already diffused also slowly retreated and poured back into the lotus throne.

"Is that light beam yours?" Cai Yi was standing next to him, watching him closely. She blankly watched the light from the ring on his finger flying out, avoiding all of the corpse-eating demonic insects and getting into the crystal lotus. It also caused the lotus's mutation, which terrified Cai Yi a lot. She couldn't help but ask.

Shi Yan nodded indifferently.

Cai Yi's eyes suddenly brightened. "What is it?"

"A strange life that can absorb Heaven and Earth aura." He hesitated for a moment before reluctantly explaining.

"What?" Cai Yi was startled, covering her mouth. She looked at the crystal lotus throne and said with astonishment. "Then, can it get the Life Original Fluid? If it really can, your struggle in entering the True God Realm in the future would be much easier than the others. Besides, I've also heard that the Life Original Fluid has another effect that is really magical." Shi Yan was startled. He wanted to communicate with the Holy Spirit God. However, after some attempts, he realized that he couldn't find the Holy Spirit God's aura, not even a tiny bit.

"Life Original Fluid is one of the three kinds of sacred water. In the Divine Great Land, it seems to exist only in the legends. I have never heard that any big forces possess it. If you can have this sacred water, I think you can negotiate with the Pure Land to exchange for your friend." Cai Yi's eyes shone brightly.

Shi Yan's eyes also lit up.

## Chapter 420: Take it on

---

Shi Yan's desire for this Life Original Fluid was not particularly strong. After all, he was still far from the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. He was not really in need of this Life Original Fluid at this time. Thus, he didn't crazily chase after it like Zhao Feng and the others.

However, after listening to Cai Yi, he gave it a second thought.

He didn't hesitate anymore. Whether the Holy Spirit God could harvest something in the crystal lotus throne or not, he would also want to compete for that Life Original Fluid now.

"Do you want to go?" Cai Yi smiled gently and encouraged him. "This thing has a powerful attraction to those warriors. We'll enter the True God Realm eventually. If you have this Life Original Fluid, you can use it in the future. Other than that, the Life Original Fluid also has another effect. From a certain extent, the value of it may be more precious than the Pure God Soul."

Shi Yan's eyes were shining. He nodded without saying anything further and began to move towards the crystal lotus throne, together with Zhao Feng and the other warriors.

His muscles silently bulged while his skin turned purple. Moreover, he also condensed all of his Profound Qi into a Dark Light Shield to resist a large number of the corpse-eating demonic insects that might barge onto him.

Above the crystal lotus throne, many warriors were being covered by the demonic insects. There were tens of thousands of insects producing buzzing sounds, constantly eating the defensive forces that those warriors released.

When he came to the top of the crystal lotus, hundreds of insects covered him immediately like shooting stars. The insects rushed to the Dark Light Shield; their sharp teeth gnawed at his Profound Qi



halo on the Dark Light Shield little by little.

The corpse-eating demonic insects could not only eat all kinds of protective armors, but also erode a lot of energy. The dark light on the Dark Light Shield became gloomier under the corpse-eating demonic insects' attack.

More Profound Qi was spread out from his body and crazily poured into the Dark Light Shield. Under the perfusion of his Profound Qi and the Dark Light Shield being eaten continuously by the insects, if he didn't release his Profound Qi, he could not keep the Dark Shield from infringement.

Zhao Feng and the three Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors were rushing towards the lotus with either a dazzling light or special defensive armors to protect their bodies.

Amidst the threat caused by the insects, they slowly descended to the center of the crystal lotus throne.

Countless demonic insects slowly showed up at the heart of the crystal lotus throne, giving people a creepy feeling. The insects on the crystal lotus throne were slightly larger. Tens of them had silver scales, as well as ancient, serpentine patterns.

These ten corpse-eating demonic insects didn't seem to be ordinary. Their entire bodies were emitting dazzling lights and gloomy auras.

When Zhao Feng and the three Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors came close to the crystal lotus throne, those silver insects suddenly flew out from the lotus, producing an ear-splitting howl which seemed to be capable of tearing people's eardrums.

From one hundred meters away, Cai Yi' graceful body even trembled, as she revealed a frightened face.

The Sea of Consciousness of those warriors, who came close to the crystal lotus seemed to be pierced through by a spear-like surging spirit.

Zhao Feng and the three Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors were agitated, showing a painful expression on their faces while their bodies suddenly stagnated.

Ten silver demonic insects flew out blending with other hundreds of insects and began to chew off the defensive forces of Zhao Feng and the other three warriors.

The light beams containing sun flame power shot out like arrows from Zhao Feng's palms, aggressively stabbing the silver insects.

Dang Dang.

When the sunlight from his body hit the silver insects' shells, the collision like sounds echoed. Those silver insects weren't affected at all. They continued eroding the halo on his body.

Under the erosion caused by the silver insects, his halo unexpectedly ruptured open quickly, causing Zhao Feng's face to pale instantly. He couldn't help but haul out a dark blue cloak and put it on.

The dark blue cloak was a Spirit level Secret Treasure with surging energy of Wood class.

As soon as Zhao Feng had put the dark blue cloak on, the rich Wood energy began to flow all over his body. Dead rattan demons around seemed to be attracted, gathering and condensing into a large wooden armor on the dark blue cloak.

To get the Life Original Fluid, Zhao Feng had taken out his Spirit level Secret treasure, covering his entire body to resist the silver insect's attacks.

Seeing Zhao Feng use his secret treasure, the three Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors no longer hesitated, taking out the secret defensive treasures from their Storage Rings to wrap themselves up.

However, even so, the four of them still didn't seem to be able to bear the erosion caused by the insects.

The secret treasures of the four of them were completely bitten off in just a short time. Zhao Feng's dark blue cloak and the rattan demons that covered the cloak were broken. They even made small pinholes on his cloak.

Fortunately, there was the Sun Refined Light that Zhao Feng had condensed under the cloak. Only a double-defense could prevent the silver insects from drilling into the body.

As warriors had different levels, their distance from the crystal lotus throne was not consistent.

The other top-level warriors and Zhao Feng were slowly sneaking into the crystal lotus throne and fighting against the terrifying silver insects.

Those who had lower cultivation base were still outside the crystal lotus. They were strenuously resisting hundreds of insects' besiege. However, their eyes kept glued on the crystal lotus.

The First Sky of Sky Realm warriors like Cai Yi stayed outside, not daring to come close to the crystal lotus throne, as they were afraid of the swarm of those insects.

On the crystal lotus throne, after the insects appeared, the frequency of emergence of the heart-shaped utensil was getting higher and higher. Looking at the Life Original Fluid inside, the warriors around all revealed a crazed countenance.

At this time, Shi Yan's entire body was now purple and covered with the Dark Light Shield outside and the Star Shield inside. He also slowly moved towards the crystal lotus throne. Hundreds of insects then rushed over him, gnawing his defense while he slowly dived into the lotus.

Only he was a First Sky of Sky Realm warrior who went into the crystal lotus, together with other Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors. He gradually moved closer to Zhao Feng. The closer he came to the crystal lotus throne, the stronger the resistance he could feel. On

the top of the crystal lotus throne existed a firm layer of a barrier.

As long as he descended on the crystal lotus, the barrier would certainly affect him. The closer he got to the crystal lotus, the stronger the resistance of this barrier was.

A violent energy burst out from Shi Yan's body while his eyes turned red. He was entering the Second Sky of the Sky Realm. He forcefully pushed the barrier and quickly came to Zhao Feng.

Seeing Shi Yan be able to come this close to the crystal lotus throne with only the First Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base, many warriors in the surroundings were startled.

"Shi Yan, you also come here?" Zhao Feng laughed. "Be careful. You are indeed extraordinary. Even Li Yue could not come here because of those insects. I didn't expect that you could do so. Ha ha ha, I really didn't mistake you."

"Brat, the closer you are, the faster you will die. You'd better leave soon to avoid an inexplicable death." The chunky warrior coldly looked at him and ridiculed.

"I'm sure you will die before me," Shi Yan said with a calm face. He suddenly took out the Sky-breaking Shuttle and immersed his mind in it.

"Can you break that annoying barrier to go into the crystal lotus throne?"

"Yes. But I'll need one-third of your Profound Qi. Moreover, the creatures inside that crystal lotus throne are mighty. Once you enter there, you'll obviously be submerged by the insects. Can you deal with them then?"

"You don't need to worry about this. You just need to break the barrier for me."

"Okay."

A dazzling light beam suddenly shot out from underneath Shi

Yan's feet.

This beam of light carried the sharpness that could pierce through all kinds of barriers, and directly broke the barrier on the crystal lotus throne.

One-third of his Profound Qi was consumed. Shi Yan didn't dare to have the slightest hesitation, turning into a bunch of starlights while penetrating into the crystal lotus throne when the barrier was cracked open. He was the first one who landed in the center of the crystal lotus throne.

Thousands of insects crazily swarmed over and quickly covered the Dark Light Shield in just a short moment.

The Profound Qi on the Dark Light Shield disappeared at an incredible speed. In just three seconds, half of the Dark Light Shield had been nibbled off.

"That brat got in there already."

"What? How come? With his realm, how could he do that?"

"This guy must have a strange secret treasure. Otherwise, he absolutely couldn't have entered the place."

Seeing him be the first one who had entered the crystal lotus throne, other warriors all screamed out loud with disbelieving faces.

Cai Yi's eyes suddenly brightened; she beamed a smile from the corner of her mouth.

She knew that Shi Yan had a strange secret treasure that could tear down all kinds of barriers. In the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, Shi Yan had used it along the way to escape many dangers, proving his real ability.

Seeing Shi Yan be the first one who had entered the crystal lotus, she was not surprised. On the contrary, she felt happy, eyeing Shi Yan and awaiting his next action.

It was unknown why Cai Yi always felt that if he put all of his strength to get the Life Original Fluid, none of the warriors in this swamp could compete against him.

Although Shi Yan had just reached the First Sky of Sky Realm, his performance along the way had convinced Cai Yi. She always felt that Shi Yan could achieve things that ordinary people couldn't.

Facts had proved that her feeling was not wrong.

Shi Yan was the first one who fell into the crystal lotus throne. Right now, his entire body was covered with corpse-eating demonic insects, and his Dark Light Shield was also shaking, as if it would collapse in a short time.

On the crystal lotus throne, Shi Yan was crazily pouring all of his Profound Qi into the Dark Light Shield and injecting the star power of the Star Martial Spirit into the Star Shield. Moreover, he also pushed all of his strength to prepare to deal with the insects after the Star Shield was broken. Meanwhile, his eyes were anxiously looking for the heart-shaped utensil.

Surprisingly, all of a sudden, he no longer saw that heart-shaped utensil on the crystal lotus.

## Chapter 421: Surging tide mind

---

Ten silver insects quietly flew out from the crystal lotus throne and then drilled into Shi Yan's Dark Light Shield.

These silver insects were obviously different from the other typical insects. They had a more powerful strength and faster energy absorption speed than the normal demonic insects.

Ten silver demonic insects showed their sharp teeth and mercilessly bit on the Dark Light Shield. The massive Profound Qi on the Dark Light Shield disappeared quickly.

In just three seconds, the Dark Light Shield covering Shi Yan's body was broken under the erosion caused by the ten silver demonic insects. The speed of Shi Yan's Profound Qi injection was unable to catch up with the silver insects' absorption.

Shi Yan felt cold in his heart. His complexion also changed as he anxiously looked for the heart-shaped utensil. He wanted to get the Life Original Fluid as soon as possible.

The warriors who were close to him were even more nervous than him. While dealing with the demonic insects, they also looked at him with sharp eyes, and were ready to intervene, revealing the intent of snatching the heart-shaped utensil that would show up in any minute.

After tearing down the Dark Light Shield, the ten silver insects quickly bit off one layer of the Star Shield inside without the slightest hesitation.

The Star Shield was condensed from the star power, containing the profound meaning of the sidereal revolution of the stars' cycle and the eternal existence of the ancient truth. A ray of starlight formed the Star Sea pattern and released an immortal conception that would never extinguish.

The Star Shield's defense was obviously better than the Dark

Light Shield, and that too not just by one level. Under the gnawing of the silver insects, the disappearing speed of the star power on the Star Shield was much slower.

Even so, the star power that stayed hidden on the Star Shield still gradually faded. If this situation continued, the Star Shield might not be able to resist any longer after half a minute.

The heart-shaped object still hadn't shown up yet.

Shi Yan's eyes were serious, attentively looking at the crystal lotus. His body turned purple, preparing to resist the corpse-eating demonic insects' attack with his own flesh.

"Shi Yan! Get out! You cannot bear it anymore!" Zhao Feng, who was above the crystal lotus throne, couldn't help but shout in fear. "These silver insects have higher levels. Even I can't resist them for long. If you continue to stay on the crystal lotus throne, the insects will bite and eat all of your body."

Not far from there, Chi Xiao also frowned and asked Shi Yan to leave.

It was unknown when Cai Yi had already reached here. From twenty meters away, she revealed a look of concern seeing Shi Yan anxiously look for the Life Original Fluid.

She didn't ask Shi Yan to go out though. She didn't know why, but she felt that Shi Yan had another secret treasure that could bring the Life Original Fluid out of the crystal lotus.

The warriors near there were all submerged under the insects, and thus, they had to put forth all of their strength to fight against them.

Although they also wanted to jump into the crystal lotus throne, they didn't have any breaking-barrier treasure like the Sky-breaking Shuttle. They could only resist the barrier's energy of the crystal lotus throne and slowly move closer to the crystal lotus throne.



"Kid, you really don't know life or death. With your Sky Realm cultivation base, you still have the guts to compete for the Life Original Fluid. Even if you can get it, do you think you can bring it out?" The chunky warrior grinned and revealed ruthless look. He was secretly well-prepared. As long as Shi Yan could bring out the Life Original Fluid from the crystal lotus throne, he would not hesitate to take action, snatching it from Shi Yan's hand directly.

He even hoped that Shi Yan could really succeed in taking the Life Original Fluid. If Shi Yan could do so, he wouldn't have to take the risk to enter the crystal lotus throne or deal with these insects, which were getting stronger and stronger.

In his thoughts, snatching the Life Original Fluid from Shi Yan's hands was much easier than taking it from those insects.

Shi Yan basically didn't pay attention to the others' words, but he was looking anxiously at the crystal lotus throne. When the starlight on the Star Shield died out, he suddenly let go of his soul consciousness and poured it in the crystal lotus throne.

A kind of spiritual light rippled like a sponge and spread out from the crystal lotus, like rippling waves.

Inside the crystal lotus throne, there was another spiritual barrier that also prevented the soul consciousness' exploration. In that spiritual light, the soul consciousness that Shi Yan had released was completely blocked, unexpectedly unable to penetrate any further.

Not only that, his soul consciousness seemed to trigger some barrier on the crystal lotus throne.

A violent vibration, strong enough to explode people's mind, came out from the crystal lotus. Under the impact of this tremor, the warriors in the swamp all trembled, as if a giant hammer strongly hit their hearts.

But Shi Yan actually bore the full brunt of the attack.

Amidst that violent shock, various mysterious forces in his body crazily struggled with each other like runaway horses.

Ptui.

Shi Yan spurted out a mouthful blood. His body staggered on the crystal lotus throne, standing unsteadily.

His muscles shivered in the tremor. Thousands of strands of strange powers all poured out, flooding his internal system.

As his Petrification Martial Spirit had reached the peak, it could produce a mutation at the crucial time and play a vital defensive role.

The violent spiritual impact from the crystal lotus could make warriors who were even far away almost stagger, as they couldn't withstand this extremely fierce vibration.

Under the help of the martial spirit, Shi Yan was standing firmly on the crystal lotus throne, and luckily, didn't have a mental breakdown.

The third eye of the host soul opened in his Sea of Consciousness. The soul devouring energy of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame turned into a cluster of small flames, running up to the Sea of Consciousness.

The violent vibration that could damage ordinary warriors' mind was quickly surrounded by the cluster of small Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flames. Before the surging spirit could damage Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame already burned it into ashes, turning it into nihility.

With the help of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, his Sea of Consciousness restored instantly, and his mind was not affected.

At this moment, he finally saw the mysterious heart-shaped utensil, which had disappeared before; and then he saw the Life Original Fluid gurgling from it.

The Life Original Fluid was on the crystal lotus throne!

Inside the transparent crystal, there was a dazzling, strange spot that was emitting sparkling rays of light. It was also constantly releasing vehement surging spiritual vibrations.

The heart-shaped utensil was like the eye of the magic formation inlaid in the crystal lotus throne. It constantly circled inside the crystal lotus throne, reflecting different kinds of lights from time to time, which revealed the heart-shaped utensil occasionally.

However, that spot was shrouded by a big number of demonic insects. As long as those insects didn't move, they would entirely cover the heart-shaped utensil, making it unable to reveal itself.

Only when the demonic insects began to move did the heart-shaped utensil flash up from time to time.

"It has appeared!" The chunky warrior was observing Shi Yan's movement closely. When the heart-shaped utensil reappeared, he couldn't help but scream with joy.

All of the warriors breathed rapidly, as they were quietly waiting and preparing all kinds of martial techniques and secret treasures.

Crack crack.

Glass breaking sound arose. The ten silver demonic insects pursued him closely after having chewed off his Star Shield. Shi Yan's body was directly exposed without any defense on the crystal lotus.

Hundreds of insects suddenly rushed over him.

Dang dang dang.

Crispy metal sounds came out from Shi Yan's body.

Under everyone's scrutinizing looks, Shi Yan was still standing motionlessly like a rock. Unexpectedly, he was not gnawed by those insects.

But his body was in extreme pain.

A corpse-eating demonic insect bared its teeth, mercilessly stabbing in his flesh and then slowly penetrated it. The Petrification Martial Spirit, which had been cultivated to the peak, had burst out all of its potential power.

Countless strange powers in his body flowed out like a surging tide and began to form into many defensive circles to hinder those devouring insects.

The corpse-eating demonic insects could bite off ordinary secret treasures and absorbed all kinds of power. However, they could not break the defense on his flesh body in a short time.

Cai Yi's eyes lit up and covered her mouth in surprise.

Chi Xiao was also stunned. His eyes and mouth were wide open while his face was full of astonishment.

Zhao Feng looked down and was dumbfounded. He didn't know what to say at this moment.

The other warriors suddenly clamored and screamed out loud as if they were watching a terrifying scene. With only the physical defense, with the erosive attack of those demonic insects, none of them could drill into Shi Yan's body. His sturdy figure was really amazing.

He launched a fist with a landslide-like energy, mercilessly striking the crystal lotus throne. A great explosive sound suddenly came out from it.

The crystal lotus throne slightly trembled. A small concave spot appeared at the center of the crystal lotus throne, but the transparent crystal was not broken after his attack.

The hardness of the crystal lotus throne was out of his expectation. Many demonic insects were trying to penetrate his body, while many strange powers in his body were dealing with those insects together. If he couldn't get the Life Original Fluid soon, sooner or later, he would not be able to resist any longer.

Another fist was launched.

The crystal lotus still wasn't broken.

Shi Yan's eyes changed slightly. He was terrified inside, as he had a feeling of despair.

BOOM.

Another punch was struck out. This punch carried all of his strength.

Once the punch was launched, the demonic insects clutched in his fist were crushed to death. His fist was also torn. A drop of dark red blood suddenly rolled out.

This was a drop of immortal blood.

A ruby-like blood drop exuded and spread out brilliant scarlet lights that were filled with mysterious energy fluctuations.

This drop of blood rolled on the crystal lotus throne for a while before infiltrating to its center.

The crystal lotus throne suddenly had a mutation.

# Chapter 422: King of Demonic Insects

---

Dark red blood, as translucent as a gem, quietly rolled into the crystal lotus throne.

The crystal lotus throne still emitted a vehemently surging energy. After this red blood's infiltration, the crystal lotus throne suddenly released an evil consciousness, strong enough to submerge and perish all the warriors.

On the crystal lotus throne, hundreds of silver demonic insects roared crazily and flew out.

Zhao Feng and the others, who were staying above, all wore frightened faces. Seeing the silver demonic insects rush towards them, they subconsciously moved away from the crystal lotus throne as they felt something was wrong. A silver demonic insect, as big as a human face, came out from the crystal lotus throne.

The crystal lotus throne revealed a gap. This demonic insect was five or six times bigger than the regular silver demonic insects, and it had beautiful, yet mysterious patterns on the body, as if it had a magical power that could oppress people's mind.

Seeing that mysterious pattern on the insect's shell, those warriors who were observing this crystal lotus throne showed panicked eyes.

All kinds of energy beams suddenly interweaved on the crystal lotus throne.

As long as a warrior stared at this pattern for more than ten seconds, they would get crazy instantly and take action against the warriors standing next to him, daringly attacking them.

The biggest silver demonic insect came out from the crystal lotus throne. It had two shiny green oak eyes, as big as soybeans and emitting cold green lights filled with a bloodthirsty feeling.

"King of Demonic Insects! A level eight beast!" Zhao Feng

suddenly screamed out loud with frightened eyes, then quickly moved away.

Hearing Zhao Feng's ear-splitting cry, faces of warriors around all changed as if they had encountered ghosts. They subconsciously stepped away from the crystal lotus throne.

Seeing the giant insect come out from the crystal lotus throne, the corpse-eating demonic insects that were flying in the sky became crazily bloodthirsty. They seemed to have received more power as the energy absorption rate got faster and faster when biting off and devouring the crowd.

Although the number of warriors in the swamp was significant, none of them had a profound cultivation base greater than the Sky Realm. Meanwhile, the level eight beasts could be comparable to the human Spirit Realm warriors.

When this level eight corpse-eating demonic insect appeared, everyone was panic-stricken and terrified.

King of Demonic Insects was the leader of corpse-eating demonic insects. It had the characteristics of corpse-eating demonic insects as it could absorb all kinds of energy or eat humans, and also had a terrifying spiritual energy.

As soon as this demonic insect appeared, there was a kind of surging spirit on top of the entire swamp, that could explode people's heads. Under this type of spiritual fluctuation, each warrior's Sea of Consciousness shook endlessly. Those who had a low cultivation base had their Sea of Consciousness instantly attacked by these fluctuations, causing them to quickly bleed terribly.

When the King of Demonic Insects appeared, Zhao Feng and the chunky warrior didn't dare to get closer to the crystal lotus throne. Both of them quickly moved away, as they were afraid of being seen by the King of Demonic Insects.

At this time, Zhao Feng didn't have the time to remind Shi Yan as he needed to care for his own life first.

Under these violent fluctuations, Cai Yi and Chi Xiao's minds were also damaged. Their faces paled as they could hardly bear it.

Those who dared to stay within fifty meters near the crystal lotus throne were getting insane because of being affected by the King of Demonic Insects. Those people had lost their minds, and lingered near the crystal lotus throne to fight against one another.

They didn't have any consciousness or sense of pain. They kept fighting each other around the crystal lotus throne. Under everyone's scrutinizing looks, warriors who had lost their mind continuously died in their opponents' hands in just a short time. Their deaths were extremely miserable.

Their bodies were chopped off, or their limbs were torn down, or the insects chewed them off. Not long afterward, there were no more warriors who were still conscious.

Only one person was standing in the center of the crystal lotus throne. It was Shi Yan.

On the crystal lotus throne, the insects surprisingly no longer covered him. Unexpectedly, the insects that were surrounding him didn't rush over him.

Under his feet, there were countless corpse-eating demonic insects, which were not the sort of silver demonic insects. However, these silver demonic insects seemed to be obedient, not dashing forward like earlier.

The King of Demonic Insects was in front of him. Its two small, dark green eyes were watching him quietly.

Shi Yan also gazed at it, which looked like he was silently exchanging something with the insect.

"Give me one more drop of your blood."



"Why?"

"So that I can evolve."

"Why do I have to give you?"

"With your blood in my body, I will make you my master. But, you have to give me your blood. This kind of blood can help me continue to evolve and enter a new life."

"How much do you need?"

"Give me one drop every month."

"What can you do for me?"

"Everything."

Shi Yan looked at it silently with strange eyes, feeling the spirit coming from it. Previously, when the King of Demonic Insects appeared from the crystal lotus throne, it had emitted vehement spiritual fluctuations. Under this kind of a terrifying, surging spirit, he had almost lost his mind and nearly gotten crazy in a short time.

Fortunately, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame played its role again at this crucial time. It burned the spirit that jumped into his Sea of Consciousness into ashes, helping him avoid falling into the insanity like the other warriors.

The King of Demonic Insects' appearance had frightened him. He had thought that he would be finished this time by getting bitten off. However, looking at the King of Demonic Insects, he sensed a very familiar smell from its body.

That was the scent of his blood.

At that moment, he suddenly realized that this King of Demonic Insects had unexpectedly absorbed the drop of immortal blood which had rolled into the crystal lotus throne.

Immediately, the unexpected thing happened.

The King of Demonic Insects roared insanely, and the demonic insects in the sky that were crazily attacking the warriors around all stopped instantly and gathered at his feet, not continuing to attack anymore.

At that instant, he received a soul consciousness from the King of Demonic Insects.

The level eight insects already had wisdom and could use soul power. Although it would not open its mouth to talk, it could use its soul to communicate with others. This King of Demonic Insects was a rare beast.

"Is the Life Original Fluid still in that crystal lotus throne? You also come from there. How is the relationship between you and that Life Original Fluid?"

"If you fulfill my demand, the Life Original Fluid will be yours."

"Why do you have a strong desire for my blood?"

"It's like humans want the Life Original Fluid. Your blood also has an irresistible temptation."

"The blood in my body is not normal. I don't know how to condense it for the time being. Even if I promise you now, I can't guarantee anything."

"If you don't give me your blood, the agreement between you and me will be automatically null and void. Every half a year, you shall give me five drops of your blood, and I will give you one drop of the Life Original Fluid. What do you think about this agreement?"

"Let me think."

On the crystal lotus throne, Shi Yan and the King of Demonic Insects looked at each other and exchanged their communication through their souls.

Countless insects were flying around the crystal lotus throne, pursuing the other warriors.

At this time, Shi Yan was in the center of the crystal lotus throne, safe and sound, coldly looking at the King of Demonic Insects while not being attacked by the insects.

The other warriors just stared at the crystal lotus throne and exposed a visage of extreme shock.

No one knew what was going on.

They only knew that this brat dared to enter the crystal lotus throne that was filled with a lot of demonic insects to get the Life Original Fluid, and was still safe and sound over there.

Cai Yi, Zhao Feng, and Chi Xiao opened their eyes, blankly looking at that direction while still using their Profound Qi to resist the insects' attack.

The demonic insects were getting more and more powerful, crazily attacking any warrior who dared to appear in the swamp. Some silver demonic insects also flew out from the crystal lotus throne, staring at Cai Yi, Zhao Feng, and Chi Xiao with murderous looks.

Under the attack of the silver demonic insects, only Zhao Feng and Li Yue, who had the cultivation base of Third Sky of Sky Realm, could resist it.

Chi Xiao and Cai Yi of the Divine Radiant Cult, who were only at the First Sky and Second Sky of Sky Realm, could barely resist it. Their defensive forces seemed to be completely eaten soon, and their body would be exposed.

They didn't have a sturdy body like Shi Yan. So, once their bodies were exposed, they would definitely be dead.

Chi Xiao and Cai Yi were scared, and thus slowly moved to the entrance, wanting to find a chance to get out. They did not dare to stay here any longer.

Unfortunately, there existed a terrible barrier at the entrance. One First Sky of Sky Realm warrior, who was faster than Chi Xiao

dashed forward the entrance, but then a huge pressure oppressed him instantly.

"Tell your fellows to stay away from them." Shi Yan suddenly spoke up and pointed to the group of Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and the others of the Divine Radiant Cult.

"Okay," the King of Demonic Insects replied.

"Ah," Cai Yi exclaimed pleasantly, unable to conceal the joy in her eyes. Also, she let out a sigh of relief.

# Chapter 423: Kill them all!

---

Shi Yan shouted, telling the King of Demonic Insects to stop other small insects from attacking Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and other people of Divine Radiant Cult.

Chi Xiao and Cai Yi were almost unable to resist any longer. However, at the crucial time, the demon insects suddenly flew away, not continuing to attack them.

Chi Xiao and Cai Yi let out a sigh of relief with a surprised face, looking at Shi Yan in the crystal lotus.

In the swamp, as many other warriors saw that Chi Xiao and Cai Yi were no longer besieged by those insects thanks to Shi Yan's words, they were all stunned and revealed a jealous expression.

"That guy Shi Yan, how did he do it after all?" Zhao Feng came to Cai Yi and Chi Xiao and asked suspiciously.

Chi Xiao and Cai Yi shook their heads as they didn't know either.

It was unexpected that the King of Demonic Insects listened to Shi Yan's orders, which surprised everyone. They didn't know what method he had used to make the King of Demonic Insects submit.

While Chi Xiao and Zhao Feng were still in doubt, they quietly observed Shi Yan and realized that he was discussing something with the King of Demonic Insects in the crystal lotus throne.

"Remove the barrier. I agree with your proposal." Shi Yan looked at the King of Demonic Insects, contemplated for a while before making his mind up as he felt that this proposal didn't bring him any harm.

"How about the others?"

"Is killing them good for you?"

"There's no harm. Their energy and blood can enhance the

strength of our little fellows."

"If so..." Shi Yan hesitated a little bit and kept looking at the chubby warrior and his team, then said with a faint smile. "Can you wait for a while? Ask your little fellow to leave first, and you'll go into the swamp. I need a reason to kill them."

"What?"

"Listen to me."

"..." The King of Demonic Insects didn't say anything. It didn't seem to understand him but still, followed his orders after getting his agreement on the proposal.

The crystal lotus sank slowly. The demon insects that were hovering in the sky followed the command and plunged down from the sky, either going into the crystal lotus throne or drilling into the giant ancient tree.

Afterward, no demonic insects were seen on the swamp.

Shi Yan retrieved the Sky-breaking Shuttle, leaped up to the air and flew over to Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and Cai Yi after hesitating a little bit.

"How did you do that?" Zhao Feng ogled and asked curiously. "That is a level eight beast... It's much more powerful than us. I didn't expect that you could ask it to stop attacking us. Shi Yan, Shi Yan, are you human after all? How can this beast listen to your orders?"

Chi Xiao, Cai Yi, and Li Yue were also very curious.

"Its power was limited by the crystal lotus throne, and can't be utilized totally. It cannot show up in the swamp for a long time. I told it to give one drop of the Life Original Fluid and that we will immediately leave this place. It agreed with that."

Looking at the warriors around who were approaching, Shi Yan deliberately said out loud. "Because of its intelligence, this beast

knows what to choose. It knows that if it fights with us for a long time, it will bear a great loss, being severely hurt by the crystal lotus throne's power. That's why it gave up..."

After talking, he looked at the chunky warrior, laughed and said, "It said that there is only Life Original Fluid in the swamp this time, not the God Soul. It gave me a drop and said that we should leave this place as soon as possible."

"It gave you a drop?" The chunky warrior's eyes lit up with shock. He burst into laughter. "Kid, your realm is still far away from the Spirit Realm. It's useless for you to keep that drop of Life Original Fluid. Can you exchange it with me?"

"Exchange it?" Shi Yan pretended to be surprised, caressed the Blood Vein Ring and shook his head. "Although I have not entered the Spirit Realm yet, I'll enter it one day sooner or later. I can use this drop of Life Original Fluid when I want to break through the Spirit Realm. No matter what you offer to exchange for it, the value is far from enough..."

The face of the chubby warrior darkened. He beamed a faint smile and stared at Shi Yan.

The warriors of Devil Valley quietly gathered around that chubby warrior, coldly looking at him with unfriendly eyes.

Many warriors also had greed for the Life Original Fluid like this chubby warrior. They wanted to take action to take it from Shi Yan, not having any intent of leaving this place.

Some other warriors' eyes flickered constantly. As they seemed to know this swamp was very unusual, they silently watched the changes, waiting to leave this place and then take action on the island.

"Kid, you are not qualified to have that Life Original Fluid. Give it to me." The chubby warrior sneered coldly as his face darkened even more.

Zhao Feng frowned and said, "Hey fatty, you talk too much. Shi Yan is the one who got it. If you are brave enough, go find and kill those demon insects."

"Stop talking nonsense." The chunky warrior seemed to be impatient. He looked at the other Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors of other teams and said, "Everyone here also has the same thought as me, right? We should unite to deal with this brat first and then discuss the plan together. I feel that this kid isn't telling the truth. Perhaps, he has more than one drop of the Life Original Fluid from the King of Demonic Insects."

"Hand it."

"Take it out. Tell us the truth, and we will not hurt you."

"You cannot get away if you don't give it to us."

In the swamp, all the Sky Realm warriors looked at Shi Yan coldly and with a ruthless manner.

Shi Yan still looked calm. He smiled and shook his head. "No."

"Do you want to die?" The chunky warrior coldly shouted.

"So, all of you want the Life Original Fluid? If I don't hand it out, won't you take action to kill me and take it?" Shi Yan looked at everyone and said slowly.

"Of course."

Shi Yan smiled, nodded and said, "Nothing else I can do then."

Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others on his team were a little bit surprised, before quietly coming close to him, ready to intervene.

Shi Yan didn't say anything further, secretly guarding against Zhao Feng and the others as well. He knew how precious this Life Original Fluid was and was not sure if Zhao Feng and others also had greed for it. He was now testing the crowd.

"Be careful. With so many warriors together like this, we have to put forth all of our strength to be able to resist them." Zhao Feng



said with a lower voice and a solemn face. "Kid, if you have any tricks or means, you have to use them immediately. Don't hesitate any second. When those warriors unite, they are much stronger than us."

There seemed to be a struggle in Li Yue's heart. She stood there with a blank face for a long while before taking a deep breath and then said with a strange look. "Shi Yan, can you deal with those Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors after all?"

"One," Shi Yan said with a wry smile.

"Forget it. Let's fight." Li Yue shook her head gently. "I will take the risk with you this time, but everyone should be well-prepared for the worst."

"You guys really want to help me?" Shi Yan was stunned and shocked. "The Life Original Fluid is precious and is in my hands. I will not give it to you. So why do you need to help me? As long as you don't block my way, I already appreciate it. You guys don't need to help me." He still guarded against Zhao Feng and the people of the Divine Radiant Cult, as he always felt that they were not reliable.

In his eyes, he and Zhang Feng were not very close, so Zhang Feng didn't need to offend everyone just because of him. He was even worried that Zhang Feng and the chubby warrior would unite to snatch the Life Original Fluid from him.

"You are also one of the Divine Radiant Cult, and you will be the future seed of the Gods Sect. We can be considered to be ready to go through thick and thin along the way. If we kill you just because of the Life Original Fluid, we are really cheap." Zhang Feng stared at him and snarled, "What kind of person do you think this Zhang Feng is?"

"Frankly, I have hesitated earlier. But now, I have figured it out." Li Yue said embarrassedly

"How about you?" Shi Yan looked at Cai Yi.

"We have gone through so many troubles together, and you are also the one who has saved us many times." Cai Yi smiled, pointed to the two brothers and Ye Zhang Feng, who were still frozen, "Although you look emotionless, you have your own principles. Without your help, it is unknown how many times these people would have died already."

Pausing for a while, Cai Yi then smiled. "I really can't figure it out. I cannot think of any reason not to stand on your side."

Shi Yan nodded. "It was not a waste to ask the King of Demonic Insects to let go of you."

The only person that he didn't ask was Chi Xiao, as he was confident that Chi Xiao would obviously be on his side.

"Such a touching friendship. Geez."

The chubby warrior laughed coldly, clapping his hands. His eyes displayed a trace of disdain.

"We shouldn't continue to hesitate. Although this group of Divine Radiant Cult is powerful, it's not difficult to take them down if we join forces, isn't it?"

Everyone nodded.

Shi Yan suddenly revealed a comfortable and calm smile.

"What are you laughing at?"

"I'm laughing at the fact that you want to die."

The demonic insects that had disappeared earlier suddenly appeared again from the swamp.

The King of Demonic Insects in the crystal lotus throne, which had sunk in the swamp, also emerged from the water. Its small green eyes looked at Shi Yan, seeming to be waiting for something.

From one hundred meters far away, Shi Yan nodded with it and

said, "Kill them all."

Countless demonic insects suddenly got crazy, overwhelmingly dashing forward and shrouding all of the warriors in the swamp once again.

Only Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, and the others from their team were safe.

"I told you that I was sure you would die before me, and you didn't believe it. Believe it now?" Shi Yan grinned and mockingly looked at the chubby warrior, who was surrounded by ten silver demonic insects. A look of horror flashed across his face. He didn't even have time to say anything.

# Chapter 424: Promise

---

The crystal lotus throne rose out of the swamp again. The King of Demonic Insects screeched loudly on the crystal lotus throne while a lot of demon insects rushed over the warriors in the swamp.

Shi Yan was standing above the swamp, coldly watching the warriors who had shown off their strength earlier being wrapped by the demonic insects.

As the number of the demonic insects was tens of thousands, and the swamp was their territory, these warriors had no strength to fight back this slaughter.

Under the erosion by the insects, the warriors' defensive halos and secret treasures were all chewed off completely. The demonic insects then drilled into those warriors' bodies, ate their brain and killed them in the end.

The eyes of Chi Xiao, Zhao Feng, and the others revealed a trace of fright. Looking at the insects that were eating those warriors, they were now aware of Shi Yan's wicked heart.

The King of Demonic Insects on the crystal lotus throne slowly moved towards Shi Yan, looking at him with longing eyes.

"You have to kill all of them. Let's discuss something else." Shi Yan frowned and released his soul consciousness.

"Good." The King of Demonic Insects answered him cleanly.

Amidst a loud scream, the demonic insects crazily submerged all of the warriors, starting the bloody slaughter.

Except for Shi Yan's team, the other warriors were all attacked and killed.

Whenever a warrior died, Shi Yan would absorb that warrior's scattering aura into his acupuncture points.

There were more than thirty warriors, most of whom were at the

Sky Realm. So, their auras went beyond his expectation, making his acupuncture points became terribly swollen.

Shi Yan knew that absorbing the aura this time would deliver him to a crazy situation, but he was not nervous. Anyway, there were no enemies around this time. If he could have time later, he would definitely recover easily.

The corpses shriveled and slowly sank into the swamp, coming back to float on the swamp again not long after that. The demonic insects continued to erode those dead bodies and soon turned them into skeletons. It was an extremely miserable fate indeed.

Even Zhao Feng had to wear a frightened face as he also felt a bone-chilling dread.

"How did you do it after all?" Zhao Feng asked with a hoarse voice while looking at Shi Yan. "The King of Demonic Insects is a level eight beast with intelligence. It's not just with some demagogic words that you can make the King of Demonic Insects compromise. I'm really curious. Why does this King of Demonic Insects listen to your orders?"

This was what everyone wanted to know.

"That's right. Not just demagogic words can make it obedient." Shi Yan beamed a faint smile but didn't explain anything. "The King of Demonic Insects and I have an agreement, which is hard to be explained in details. So, you shouldn't ask much about it."

Zhao Feng nodded.

"I can get the Life Original Fluid from the King of Demonic Insects. Hmm. I didn't lie about it." After hesitating a little bit, Shi Yan continued, "However, I can't have it immediately. It requires a process. I'm not sure if I can take all of the Life Original Fluid from the King of Demonic Insects or not."

Everyone's eyes brightened.

"If one of you enter the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, you can find

me later, and I will give you one drop of the Life Original Fluid," Shi Yan beamed a smile.

Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, Li Yue, and Cai Yi all showed shocked faces while their eyes were sparkling with dazzling lights.

"Consider it as a promise," Shi Yan said. "I promise you guys that any of you who enter the Third Sky of Spirit Realm can always find me to have one drop of the Life Original Fluid. As long as I still have it, I will not be stingy."

Zhao Feng and Li Yue's faces were both stunned; their bodies were trembling.

Chi Xiao's eyes were wide open while nodding with a grateful face.

Cai Yi gently smiled while her eyes lit up.

"Remove the barrier." Shi Yan looked at the King of Demonic Insects on the crystal lotus throne.

Bang.

An explosive sound echoed from the entrance. The blood red smog hovering around the entrance dissipated quietly.

"You guys go up first. I need to stay here for a while. Hmm, I need to spend more time with it." Pointing at the entrance, Shi Yan said firmly, "That entrance should have no barrier, so you don't need to be worried."

After talking, he walked towards the Lao brothers and Ye Zhang Feng, while his body emitted a fiery flame.

Under the scorching heat, the ice rock around Lao Li, Luo Meng, and the others gradually melted. Their bodies were exposed little by little.

Ye Zhang Feng's eyes were in a daze. When the heat power came close, the Purgatory True Flame on his body automatically released the defensive fire net.

On the crystal lotus throne, there was no longer any vibrations that could agitate people. When the Earth Flame came close, Ye Zhang Feng suddenly woke up, and his eyes brightened.

"What happened?" Seeing dead warriors floating in the swamp, Ye Zhang Feng wore a frightened face and asked, "What happened in the swamp after all? Why did those people become like that? Only you guys are alive?"

Shi Yan nodded.

"Did you get it?"

"What?"

"The Life Original Fluid."

Shi Yan looked at him with surprise. "You also know about the Life Original Fluid?"

"It's the reason why we came here." Ye Zhang Feng revealed sad eyes and wryly smiled. "I knew that there should be the Life Original Fluid in the swamp. I came here with the hope that I could get one drop of the Life Original Fluid. However, as my cultivation base is low, not reaching the Sky Realm yet, I lost my mind in this place."

"If Shi Yan didn't help you, I'm afraid that you would have been dead." Cai Yi frowned and told them about what had happened. She said that Shi Yan had used the Ice Cold Flame to freeze them, avoiding other warriors' attack. She also told them about the demonic insects that flew around in the sky and ate all of the warriors in the swamp to death.

On listening to the story, the visage of the Lao brothers, Lin Zhi, and the others changed to a frightened look.

Lao Li thanked Shi Yan sincerely with gratitude. Shi Yan beamed a faint smile but didn't say anything. Lin Zhi was a little embarrassed. She bowed her head, and also said 'thank you' in a low voice.

Shi Yan nodded with a smile and continued saying nothing.

"Shi Yan, aren't you...?" Ye Zhang Feng was hesitant, and didn't finish his sentence.

He looked at Zhao Feng and then Chi Xiao and Cai Yi, contemplated for a while before saying, "Shi Yan, I want to tell you something in private."

"Okay." Shi Yan proactively moved towards the crystal lotus throne, and his body suspended above it, indicating that Ye Zhang Feng should get there with him.

Ye Zhang Feng stood on a dark red lava rock, surprisingly looking at Shi Yan and revealing a hesitant face. He seemed to know the power of that crystal lotus throne as well as the existence of the King of Demonic Insects, and thus, he didn't dare to go there.

"It's alright." Shi Yan comforted him.

Ye Zhang Feng's face looked less worried. He now slowly moved closer to him. Lin Zhi, Luo Meng, and Lu Xiao also wanted to go there, but Ye Zhang Feng threw them a glance to stop them from coming. They eventually flew to another lava rock.

"You guys go first." On the crystal lotus throne, Shi Yan nodded to Chi Xiao, Zhao Feng, and others. "You go up first. I will go there in two days, and we will talk later."

Pausing for a while, he continued, "Ah, bring Lin Zhi and her team with you."

Although Zhao Feng and Li Yue didn't understand what he is doing, they didn't ask much. They just nodded and led the team of Luo Meng, Lin Zhi, Lao Li, and the others to leave.

At the entrance, there wasn't any barrier indeed. They went through it, flying up to the island.

In the swamp, there were only Ye Zhang Feng, and Shi Yan left.

"Did you really get the Life Original Fluid?" Looking at the crystal



lotus throne below, Ye Zhang Feng asked with a longing face.

Shi Yan nodded.

"Can you give me one drop? I just need one drop." Ye Zhang Feng suddenly got excited.

Shi Yan frowned but didn't say anything.

"I know the Life Original Fluid is very precious. I know how much value this kind of liquid has to even Spirit Realm warriors. " Ye Zhang Feng was stirred up. "I can exchange it for something. As long as you tell me what you need, I will find it for you. No matter what, I will absolutely find it. I just want one drop of the Life Original Fluid."

Shi Yan was stunned, looking at him with puzzled eyes. After a long while, he said, "You are still far away from the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. Why do you want a drop of the Life Original Fluid?"

"I'm not asking it for myself." Ye Zhang Feng let out a sigh and reluctantly said, "My master has been stuck at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm for a long time. He is an Alchemist, and has spent all of his life in refinement. He's so close to the True God Realm, but he isn't sure he can enter it. I'm afraid he will be depressed. That's why I'm asking a drop of the Life Original Fluid for him."

Ye Zhang Feng shook his head and continued. "I'm the abandoned disciple of the Spirit Treasure Sect, and was almost taken to feed the beasts. If my master didn't accept me, I should have died already. I don't want to see him stay in this realm forever. I know that entering the True God Realm is the wish of his life. I just want to help him and repay him for those years of teaching me."

Shi Yan seemed to be touched.

"Please," Ye Zhang Feng begged him, "I know that I cannot get any valuable things now, but I promise you that if you need anything later, I will do my best for you. You can say your request

now, and I will certainly keep it in my heart and fulfill it later."

"Let me ask." Being silent for a long while, Shi Yan looked at the King of Demonic Insects and sent out a strand of his soul consciousness. "Can you give me a drop of the Life Original Fluid?"

"Yes."

"Thank you."

"You have to give me one drop of your blood first."

"Deal."

## Chapter 425: Exchange

---

Ye Zhang Feng carefully held a crystal bottle. His face was excited, his body slightly trembled while he repeatedly thanked Shi Yan.

Shi Yan stood on the crystal lotus throne, looking at the heart-shaped utensil slowly retreating into the lotus, as well as the King of Demonic Insects that was staring at him with a longing look.

He stretched out his finger and used his mind to condense one drop of immortal blood that was running inside his finger, feeling the strange surging spirit of this drop of blood.

Sizzle.

His fingertip split with a small slit. A drop of ruby-dark-red blood spun a little bit, and then slipped down.

The King of Demonic Insects was standing on tiptoe, greedily opening its mouth and swallowing that drop of immortal blood into its abdomen.

The body of the King of Demonic Insects turned blazing red. It slowly moved back to the crystal lotus throne and quietly disappeared into it. It seemed to be digesting the immortality effect of that blood drop.

Ye Zhang Feng was still holding a small crystal bottle, looking at the drop of milky white sacred water. He was thrilled.

"You go up first. I need to stay here for a few days." Shi Yan glanced at him and said.

"Shi Yan, how should I thank you?" Ye Zhang Feng asked with an excited face. "As long as you make a request, I will do my best to fulfill it. You can rest assured that I will explain my master about this drop of Life Original Fluid, and he will be of course grateful to you."

"Your master is really in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist?" Shi Yan was a little startled and slightly smiled, "Is he in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist?"

"Earlier he was. But, he might not stay in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist longer." Ye Zhang Feng didn't hide anything. "The reason my master stayed in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist was to find a drop of the Life Original Fluid. Now, as we have this drop, possibly, my master will not continue to stay here. He may go back to the Divine Great Land to collect the missing materials for the Spiritualizing Pellet.

"Spiritualizing Pellet?" Shi Yan was surprised, "Why do you need to refine a pellet when you have the Life Original Fluid already?"

"No," Ye Zhang Feng explained with a faint smile. "The main material of Spiritualizing Pellet is the Life Original Fluid. It can be said that the Spiritualizing Pellet is the pellet that uses the Life Original Fluid to be refined. With some auxiliary materials, it can enhance the effect of the Life Original Fluid to the maximum."

"I would like to hear more details about it."

"Let say it like this," Ye Zhang Feng revealed a light smile, "A drop of the Life Original Fluid can increase the probability of a Third Sky of Sky Realm to enter the Spirit Realm. However, relying on the Life Original Fluid only cannot exert the Life Original Fluid's effect to the maximum, probably only around seventy percent at max. But, if it can be refined into the Spiritualizing Pellet, the Life Original Fluid's effect can be enhanced one hundred percent."

Shi Yan's face slightly changed. He contemplated for a while before saying, "In the future, if possible, can you ask your master to use the Life Original Fluid to refine the Spiritualizing Pellet for me?"

"I don't think it's a problem," Ye Zhang Feng burst into laughter. "No worries. My master doesn't like to owe people anything. If he

can help you, I think he will be willing to do it."

"Are the auxiliary materials of the Spiritualizing Pellet precious?" Shi Yan asked again.

"For ordinary people, they are indeed precious. However, for my master, they are not difficult to find."

"Ask him to find some more, so I will not need to waste time for it in the future," Shi Yan smiled and said.

"Ha ha ha, no problem." The grudge inside Ye Zhang Feng's heart seemed to be removed. He laughed comfortably and said, "Don't you worry. If you need to refine the Spiritualizing Pellet in the future, you just need to find me. Certainly, no problem. Hmm, if you go to the Divine Great Land later, bring this token to the Spirit Potion Valley in the Dead Soul Mountain. Someone will surely receive you there. If we're in the Divine Great Land, as long as we don't go out, we should be there."

The token was made of bronze, with the front side having six pellets lining up, and the back side having a word that read 'Li.'

"My master is a grade 6 Sacred Level Alchemist. His surname's Li. This token represents him," Ye Zhang Feng explained.

Shi Yan nodded, took the token away and then said, "I should thank you then. Hmm, I still want to stay in this swamp a little longer. You should go up first. No need to wait for me. After getting out of here, I will go back to the Endless Sea. I think we will meet in the Divine Great Land next time."

"Why do you still want to go back there?" Ye Zhang Feng's face changed slightly. "I have heard that the Endless Sea is extremely chaotic at this time. The Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers are now raging in the Endless Sea. The forces in the Endless Sea are also uniting to deal with them. If you go there now, I am afraid that you will get stuck there."

Shi Yan frowned. "I have something to do."

"Ah, yes. I have heard that Yang Tian Emperor, the leader of the Yang family, has escaped the Heavenly Demon Sealing Divine formation and he will go back to the Endless Sea in a few days. Yang Tian Emperor is indeed an outstanding hero with great dignity. It's unexpected that he could escape the Demon King's confinement. It is said that he deliberately entered the Heavenly Demon Sealing Divine formation because he wanted to use the Heavenly Demon Sealing Divine formation to cultivate some secret technique. If he goes back to the Endless Sea, the situation in the Endless Sea will inevitably change again." Ye Zhang Feng thought for a while then said with a low voice.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. "He...has he escaped the Heavenly Demon Sealing Divine formation?"

"Yes, that's what I've heard. But, I'm not sure." Ye Zhang Feng nodded. "I'm not very clear about the situation of the Endless Sea. However, inside the Fourth Demon Area, there are some of our race's warriors who have asked my master to refine some pellets. They told us that information. I'm not sure if it is true or not."

Shi Yan took a deep breath and said, "Thank you for this information."

"Yang Tian Emperor is a talented person indeed. At the First Sky of the Spirit Realm, he can resist the Demon King. That kind of person is scarce even in our Divine Great Land. It seems that the world is vast, and it is not just the Divine Great Land that can have that kind of earth-shaking warriors," Ye Zhang Feng said with an admiring face.

"Any other information regarding the Endless Sea that you know?" Shi Yan asked again.

"I really don't know much. I just know that it's very messy out there." Ye Zhang Feng shook his head. "During this time, I have been staying in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, not going to the Endless Sea. If you go back there, you should be careful. I've heard

that forces from everywhere are looking for your whereabouts and offering a high-value reward for your life."

Dragging a faint smile out of the corner of his mouth, Shi Yan looked quite arrogant.

"Alright, I'm going up now. Take care. Remember to visit the Spirit Potion Valley in the Dead Soul Mountain to see me later." Ye Zhang Feng just reminded him to be careful and said nothing more before leaving the ice rock.

As soon as Ye Zhang Feng left, Shi Yan released his soul consciousness to communicate with the King of Demonic Insects, telling him to put up the barrier at the entrance again.

After the demonic insect sank into the swamp, it received Shi Yan's soul consciousness and then did as he wanted.

The tremor happened, and the barrier of the entrance appeared again.

The King of Demonic Insects and the crystal lotus throne left the swamp slowly. The King of Demonic Insects stayed inside the crystal lotus throne, as it seemed to be absorbing the essence of the immortal blood.

Shi Yan hesitated for a while and then sat straight on the crystal lotus throne, closing his eyes and meditating.

His acupuncture points bulged. The negative feelings burst out, overwhelming his entire body and affecting his mind.

When the Mystery Martial Spirit purified his acupuncture points, all kinds of negative feelings started to penetrate his body, and the backfire of these negative feelings made him crazy.

On the crystal lotus throne, he panted, revealing a ferocious look and red eyes, like a bloodthirsty beast.

Not long after that, under the effect of the backfire, his entire body was extremely painful. His body shrank, rolling over on the

crystal lotus throne, and producing inhuman roars, releasing bursts of aura that could destroy all creatures.

Under his crazy, bloodthirsty aura, some insects next to the swamp gradually moved away, not daring to come close to him.

Even the King of Demonic Insects in the crystal lotus throne quietly went out. Its small, green eyes looked at him with surprise, blinking with strange lights.

It didn't know what was happening in Shi Yan's body. At this moment, Shi Yan was scattering out an evil aura, which also made him look scary. The King of Demonic Insects didn't expect this new master with a low realm to have such a horrible aura.

Shi Yan crazily roared and destroyed all things in the swamp, including the giant ancient trees, and the floating corpses in the swamp.

Violent unconsciousness.

This state lasted for almost half a day. Shi Yan then gradually subsided, and the body's evil aura gradually returned normal.

After a period of time, he sat down on the crystal lotus throne, closing his eyes and sensing something.

One day passed.

Shi Yan slowly woke up and revealed a faint smile, stretched out his right hand, feeling five more drops of immortal blood and the vigorous Profound Qi in there.

Sensing the changes of the Mystery Martial Spirit, he felt overjoyed.

"It seems that all of the Life Original Fluid will belong to me," Shi Yan grinned.

"If you have enough of that kind of blood, I can exchange." The King of Demonic Insects replied.

Shi Yan hesitated a little bit. "My blood can really have that much



of use to you?"

"Of course."

Triggering his mind, Shi Yan suddenly remembered the Devouring Gold Silkworm. After hesitating for a short while, he connected his mind with the Blood Vein Ring, using the soul consciousness to wrap the Devouring Gold Silkworm and hauling it out of the Blood Vein Ring.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm emitted dazzling lights. Right after showing up, it immediately bared its fangs and claws as it seemed to want to break the shackle on its body.

Shi Yan looked at the Devouring Gold Silkworm, contemplated for a long while, and then suddenly bled a drop of immortal blood, dropping it on the gold silkworm.

Seeing that drop of immortal blood, the Devouring Gold Silkworm abruptly showed an extreme desire, struggling and then swallowing that drop of immortal blood.

Shi Yan initially wanted to give it that drop of blood, so he didn't hesitate to directly drip it into its mouth.

Swallowing the immortal blood, the Devouring Gold Silkworm's entire body burst out blazing lights. It seemed to be full of energy, as it excitedly tore apart the restraint on its body.

Buzz buzz.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm produced earth-splitting sounds, suddenly danced up in front of him and opening its mouth to spit out a sparkling golden silk fiber.

## Chapter 426: The God Blood's magical effects

---

After the Devouring Gold Silkworm swallowed the drop of his immortal blood, it was extremely excited. The gold silkworm's entire body glinted with a splendid golden light, and it was spitting out a slender strand of golden silk.

Shi Yan blankly looked at the Devouring Gold Silkworm in astonishment.

This golden silk glowed with a trace of blood red color, and fluttered with the wind at the gold silkworm's mouth. It didn't look different from any normal silk fiber. Shi Yan immersed his mind in the silk fiber and could feel that it somehow had a delicate connection with him. Perhaps it was the effect of the immortal blood. He looked at the gold silk and scattered his soul consciousness that attached to the fiber. It was unexpected that the silk fiber could absorb the consciousness in his mind and change its movement according to his mind's control.

This silk fiber became an extension of his hands and feet, connected with his mind.

After the Devouring Gold Silkworm spat out the silk fiber, its body slightly dimmed. It leaned against the crystal lotus and seemed to be watching him in silence.

Different from the past, the Devouring Gold Silkworm clearly had his breath this time. Thanks to a drop of the immortal blood, the Devouring Gold Silkworm and he now had a subtle contact.

Beyond his expectation, the Devouring Gold Silkworm looked at him for a while before proactively re-entering the Blood Vein Ring, staying there obediently without struggling. Seemed like the silkworm now considered the Blood Vein Ring its own shelter.

The silk fiber, with a trace of blood color in its strange light, was

moving in the air according to his mind. It was like a small sword. When the golden light flashed, the giant ancient trees around were all cut down.

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly brightened.

This silk apparently was not the same as in the past, as it seemed to have become a quenched secret treasure which he could freely control without any stagnation.

After a little hesitation, his mind controlled and slowly pulled back the golden silk fiber.

He stretched out his hand pulling the golden fiber into his palm. A blood-connection like feeling suddenly jumped into his heart.

The golden silk was like a part of his body, and his soul consciousness perfused it. The golden fiber slowly fused into his palm, as if it had become a golden silk pattern. As long as he triggered his mind, this golden silk fiber would immediately fly out from his palm, moving and dancing as he pleased.

The golden fiber was as sharp as a knife, but this silk with a touch of blood light seemed to be even more powerful, becoming a wonderful killing tool in his hand. While fighting others, he could release the golden silk fibers as a surprise, which could intimidate and directly ravage the opponents.

He was secretly joyful about this major change of the golden silk fiber

On the crystal lotus throne, the King of Demonic Insects was still observing him, seeing him take out the Devouring Gold Silkworm and shedding a drop of the immortal blood for it. The King of Demonic Insects then saw the Devouring Gold Silkworm spew out strange golden fiber, and Shi Yan use his mind to grab the gold silk in his hand and smash down all the ancient trees around.

"That fellow is powerful. If it continues to use your blood, it may also have a mutation, evolving to a higher level." The King of

Demonic Insects sent him a message.

"What?" Shi Yan was excited and beamed a smile. "According to you, my blood has a unique effect on living creatures like you?"

"Of course."

"What is it specific? Can you tell me?"

"Your kind of blood has the ancient God's bloodline inside which helps improve our evolution, so that our living beings can become more perfect. Moreover, this can be described as the blood of God. One day, with the use of your blood, we can evolve to the form which is not much different from your human form, even more perfect than yours."

"I quite don't understand what you mean."

"There is the life mark in your blood. Even though it is not perfect, it already has enough nutrients for us. The more powerful the beasts are, the better ability they have to see the benefit of this blood with the life mark. If it is possible to absorb the life mark completely in this God blood, the benefits that we get are hard to estimate."

Shi Yan was silent.

He had heard from the Demonic Sound Clan that in the Remote Antiquity, there were three great God Kings. The blood of each God King had its own unique effect. The Immortal God King was only one of the original God Kings. The immortal blood had an extraordinary effect, and the Ice Cold Flame seemed to have mentioned it before. It had said that the immortal blood could make the damaged secret treasure recover.

The effect of the Immortal Martial Spirit was that it could heal the broken bodies. If someone cultivated it to the peak, that person's body would be immortal. As long as the immortal blood existed, even if a skeleton was shattered, it could still re-condense and be reborn in the world.

He still didn't know clearly about the magical effect of the immortal blood. Only Yang Tian Emperor, the head of the Yang family, seemed to know the real purpose of the immortal blood, and exerted its potential effect to the extreme.

"I'm leaving the swamp. How about you?" After frowning and contemplating for a while, he continued their conversation. "Do you still want to be here or go out with me?"

"I'm going with you, of course."

"Can you leave this place?"

"Of course. This crystal lotus throne is the control for the various barriers in this bog. There is no problem for me to leave this place. You can put me in the same place as that silkworm. As for the Life Original Liquid, it is always in my body. As long as you satisfy me, I will obviously do as we've agreed, giving you one drop of it. After giving all this Life Original Fluid to you, I will also have enough of your blood, and then, I will leave and return here."

Shi Yan was stunned.

"There is nothing to be worried. You will not lose anything from this agreement. You have what I want, and I have what you want. You and I are both happy. Isn't it good?"

"Okay," Shi Yan smiled and lifted up the Blood Vein Ring. He first released a ray of consciousness into the Blood Vein Ring. He waited until it shot out the blood light and then said to the King of Demonic Insects, "You can get in now. Since it can accommodate the golden silkworm, it can contain you as well." As soon as he finished talking, the King of Demonic Insects immediately turned into a bunch of silver light beams and disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring.

After exploring, he found a new crystal lotus condensed by a strange energy emerged inside the Blood Vein Ring. The King of Demonic Insects sat on the crystal lotus and was covered with

flashing silver lights. It was observing everything around curiously.

The Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame were on the two sides of the crystal lotus separately. They burst out flames, vigilantly watching the strange thing which had just settled down as their neighbor.

"There are other fellows here!" The King of Demonic Insects was surprised. It observed the Blood Vein Ring for a while and then immediately realized that other than the gold silkworm, there were another two living beings even stranger than itself. They were purely living flames, but they were not entities. Anyway, they could still release terrifying auras.

The Ice Cold Flame was chilly to the bone with dense, icy aura. Meanwhile, the Earth Flame was a scorching, bursting burning flame.

These two different, strange Heaven Flames were both safe in the Blood Vein Ring, kept at a distance from it and the gold silkworm. They just silently released their own mighty aura, as if they were warning it to be careful. Not just because it was powerful in the outside world, it could do whatever it wanted in the Blood Vein Ring.

"Well, not just you alone, so you should stay in there obediently. Don't think that because you could control the demon insects in the swamp, you can act recklessly in there. As far as I've seen, after entering the Blood Vein Ring, your power is not as strong as the others; perhaps you will even suffer if you get involved in a fight with them," Shi Yan warned it calmly.

The King of Demonic Insects was a little surprised. It secretly felt the breath of the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame for a long while before sending out a message. "I will not mess with them."

Shi Yan nodded with a smile.

At this moment, another cold light suddenly shot out from a wall beneath the crystal lotus throne, entering the Blood Vein Ring, and then stayed in its own place.

The Holy Spirit God.

Strands of cold air spread out from the rich Heaven and Earth aura. After being dormant and absorbing a big amount of Heaven and Earth aura, the Holy Spirit God finally recovered sixty to seventy percent of its strength.

After it had escaped into the Blood Vein Ring, the crystal lotus throne suddenly lacked the aura. The floating silver smog gradually dissipated. Shi Yan was stunned and released his soul consciousness immediately to communicate with the Holy Spirit God. "Why did you return so late?"

"Below the crystal lotus throne is a spring of aura which has a powerful Heaven and Earth aura. After absorbing it for a long while, I had already consumed seventy or eighty percent of it. My strength has also recovered by more than half. That's why I've just come back now. Is there anything wrong?"

"No," Shi Yan shook his head with a complicated complexion.

When the Holy Spirit God entered the Blood Vein Ring, the King of Demonic Insects was very frightened. Before, it had been aware that the Holy Spirit God had penetrated the aura spring below the crystal lotus throne, and it had also released its spirit to check but got nothing. The Holy Spirit God was different from human warriors, as its living being was incredibly strange. It didn't get affected by the King of Demonic Insects' spiritual impact, not even by the slightest bit.

Knowing that there was clearly a creature in the aura spring below the crystal lotus throne but not being able to check it out, the King of Demonic Insects was worried. Currently, since the Holy Spirit God had absorbed enough aura and suddenly entered the Blood Vein Ring, the King of Demonic Insects now knew that

the Holy Spirit God was also from Shi Yan.

At this moment, the King of Demonic Insects looked at Shi Yan with more caution.

It started to feel that Shi Yan was not an ordinary warrior. Daring to keep many strange creatures at the same place without being worried to have it backfire on him, this kind of person was either a bold, strong man or a crazy one.

"I want to take some time to digest your blood. So, don't disturb me during this time unless you encounter a great danger." The King of Demonic Insects contemplated for a while and then sent out a strand of consciousness.



# Chapter 427: Farewell

---

On the island...

Zhao Feng, Chi Xiao, Li Yue, and Cai Yi were standing at the entrance, waiting for him in silence.

They had been waiting for two days.

"Why hasn't Shi Yan come out yet? Has anything happened to him in there? Master, is it true that you encountered many dangerous things inside but are still safe and sound thanks to him?" Zuo Shi was puzzled.

Zuo Xu smiled wryly and nodded reluctantly. "If it weren't for Shi Yan, perhaps we would have been buried in there. You didn't go down there, so you can't imagine how dangerous it is. To be honest, Shi Yan's decision was correct. It is fortunate that you guys didn't go down there together, or else you couldn't have stayed alive."

The Lao brothers revealed frightened faces.

They all understood that without Shi Yan's help, they would have died already. They were grateful to Shi Yan from the bottom of their hearts.

"This guy Shi Yan can't be evaluated in a normal way. Although he only has a cultivation base of Sky Realm, he still can cause rain by turning his hand over, which really surprises and puzzles other people." Chi Xiao nodded and then shook his head slightly, as he felt that he was old now and couldn't see through Shi Yan anymore.

In the Quiet Cloud Merchant Union that year, although Shi Yan had exposed his ability and potential, his strength had not been this intimidating.

How long had passed since then?

From the Disaster Realm that year, he had reached the Sky Realm, and even unexpectedly surpassed him. This cultivating speed could shock both the ancient and modern worlds, and had never been heard before.

Warriors of the Divine Great Land like Zhao Feng and Cai Yi now could know more about Shi Yan's origin through Chi Xiao, Zuo Shi, and the others. The more they knew about Shi Yan, the more surprised they were, as it was nearly impossible to believe what Zou Xu and the others said. If they didn't know Chi Xiao and the other people before, and they were certain that those people had no reason to deceive them, they would not ever believe it no matter they lived or died.

"This kid really has a potential and glorious future. I'm looking forward to seeing him shine in the Divine Great Land. I always feel that his potential doesn't just stop there. If he goes to the Divine Great Land in the future, perhaps he can even surpass other outstanding warriors of the seven factions, becoming the most dazzling star," Zhao Feng said emotionally.

Li Yue and the other Divine Radiant Cult warriors also nodded with their complicated faces.

Shi Yan's performance during these days had impressed them deeply and changed their thoughts. They now know that although the Divine Great Land was immense, it couldn't include all extraordinary young warriors in the world.

It was unexpected that there existed such an extraordinary warrior like Shi Yan in the remote Endless Sea. They now came to a realization that magical and wonderful things could be seen everywhere.

"I know that he belongs in the Divine Great Land." Li Yue beamed a smile and said, "With his momentum, I'm afraid that the Endless Sea cannot nourish him or bind him for so long. Sooner or later, he will come to our Divine Great Land, and then take the wings and

surf the waves to become a mighty dragon. I'm sure about it."

Zhao Feng and his fellows all agreed with it.

Cai Yi's eyes also revealed the same thought. She was longing for a day when he could come to the Divine Great Land to develop all of his potential strength.

"Not long after that, he will come to our Divine Great Land. I'm right. We will take him to see the elders of the sect, and this will make them pleasantly startled." Zhao Feng pictured and couldn't help but laugh with pride.

On the other side, Ye Zhang Feng, Lin Zhi, Luo Xiao, and Luo Meng didn't leave either, still waiting on the island.

Lin Zhi was not as arrogant as before. When it came to Shi Yan, her face became obscure, and her tone a little respectful.

"Without this kid, we might have died there. That young man isn't human." Luo Meng looked at Ye Zhang Feng with a miserable countenance. "Now, I finally believe what you've said. When that kid met you before, his realm was not high indeed. That kind of a person seems to have unlimited possibilities."

"That's right." Ye Zhang Feng nodded. "Such a man will become an outstanding person. Although he hasn't come to the Divine Great Land yet, once he shows up there, I'm afraid that no one can stop him. I'm looking forward to seeing him strike here and there in our Divine Great Land. I believe that day is not too far away."

"Lin Zhi-jie, do you still hate that brat?" Lu Xiao suddenly asked.

Lin Zhi's face changed while she thought about him. Her cheeks still felt slightly burning, and her face wore the feeling of insecurity.

Shi Yan had cruelly taken action, which left a very profound impact on her. She had thought that she would find Shi Yan to take revenge in the future. But when Ye Zhang Feng told her what had happened as well as that Shi Yan had generously given him a

drop of the Life Original Fluid, the hatred inside her heart faded away.

Ye Zhang Feng's master had done her a favor before, so she was also very grateful to him and concerned about his situation. She voluntarily came to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist with Ye Zhang Feng with the purpose of repayment, hoping to do something for the master.

Shi Yan's generous deed of giving out one drop of the Life Original Fluid puzzled her a lot, as she couldn't understand how Shi Yan could be that generous. The number of the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors of the seven ancient factions was not small, and because of one drop of the Life Original Fluid, they could do whatever it took to have it. The preciousness of the Life Original Fluid was hard to describe with mere words.

The fact that Shi Yan had generously given them one drop of the Life Original Fluid somehow puzzled Lin Zhi and made her appreciate him.

"It is not easy to see through this person. He is sometimes fierce and cruel, sometimes kind and generous, which is hard for other people to imagine. I haven't known him for a long time, but I know that he is not the kind of ruthless people. If he were a ruthless guy, he would never have done this ridiculous thing when he could easily exterminate us."

Ye Zhang Feng contemplated for a while and then said with sincere eyes. "No matter how, with this one drop of the Life Original Fluid, my master and I owe him a big favor. In the future, anytime he needs me in the Divine Great Land, I will certainly put all of my effort to do anything for him."

"Well, having relations with someone like him isn't bad at all." Luo Xiao and Luo Meng nodded.

"When he comes out, we will bid him our farewell. As we owe him a big favor, waiting for a few days is nothing," Ye Zhang Feng

said.

Lin Zhi also nodded.

...

After midnight, a majestic figure flew out of the entrance.

Ye Zhang Feng and the others hurriedly rushed over.

"Boy, you finally get out. You made us wait for too long." Zhao Feng burst into laughter as soon as he saw Shi Yan. "Boy, I can see that the God light in your eyes seems to be sharper than before. Have you gained something more in the swamp down there?"

Shi Yan beamed a smile, looked at everyone and nodded. "Not really a harvest. But I did cultivate a little bit, and my Profound Qi richer than before. Hey, I bothered you a lot, letting you wait until now. Sorry."

"Ha ha ha, you're welcome." Zhao Feng laughed out loud while walking towards Shi Yan and patting his shoulder. "Can you talk about what really happened in the bog?"

"There's nothing to say." Unfolding his two hands, Shi Yan said, "There's nothing to say. I actually have some connection with the King of Demonic Insects, and got some useful information from it. I should use a special thing in exchange for the Life Original Fluid, but I cannot have it right now."

"You can get the Life Original Fluid from the King of Demonic Insects, really?" Zhao Feng revealed a frightened face while his eyes burned.

Shi Yan didn't want to hide this, so he nodded with a smile. "Yes."

Everyone looked startled, showing a face with full of expectations.

"As I have said, now is not the right time. When you enter the Third Sky of the Spirit Realm, you can come and see me. A drop of

the Life Original Fluid is not a big deal," Shi Yan promised.

Everyone was crazily overjoyed.

"Well, it's time to go. I have to return to the Endless Sea first. After a period of time, I may go to the Divine Great Land and will find you there." Shi Yan looked at Zhao Feng.

Zhao Feng constantly nodded with a smile. "I will wait for you to come. I'm sure that the Gods Sect people will welcome you when you come to the Divine Great Land. There are not many outstanding warriors in this generation of the Gods Sect. Your appearance will make the elders of the Gods Sect overjoyed."

"If I use the Life Original Fluid in exchange for my friend who is in the Pure Land people's hands, is it possible?" Shi Yan pondered for a while before asking.

Zhao Feng was bewildered and hesitated a little bit, and then said, "It's hard to say. But I think it's possible. If your friend's value is not too special, the elders of our Gods Sect can represent you in the exchange. So, it's possible."

"Shi Yan, if your position in the Gods Sect is promoted in the future, and your cultivation base reaches a certain level, the Gods Sect would be willing to invest in you," Li Yue assured him.

Shi Yan nodded.

"We should leave now and have to say thank you." Ye Zhang Feng walked over and bent down with a solemn face. "If you have any trouble in the future, remember to use the way I showed you to find us. Although my master's realm is not at the peak, his voice is still respected in the Divine Great Land. If you have troubles, my master will definitely help you out."

"Who is your master?" Zhao Feng was surprised because of Ye Zhang Feng's arrogant tone. Hence, he couldn't help but ask.

"My master is an Alchemist... His surname is Li." Ye Zhang Feng smiled and replied.

Zhao Feng frowned and thought for a while. His entire body suddenly trembled as he asked in fear, "Could he be the one from the Spirit Potion Valley – the Dead Soul Mountain?"

Ye Zhang Feng nodded.

Zhao Feng was dumbstruck and couldn't help but shout, "It's him!"

## Chapter 428: The Return Journey

---

"What?" Shi Yan was dumbstruck, looking at Zhao Feng with a puzzled face. "Is that old man famous?"

"You will know when you come to the Divine Great Land." Zhao Feng smiled mysteriously. "Even the Pure Land people have to respect him a lot. I didn't expect that this young man is that old man's successor. No wonder why."

Shi Yan was surprised.

"Alright. We look forward to seeing you soon in the Divine Great Land. We should go now." Zhao Feng beamed a smile, said to Li Yue and the others, and then bid a farewell.

"Take care." Cai Yi smiled, walking over and looking at Shi Yan. She seemed to have so many things to say to him. However, in the end, she just said, "Remember to find me. If you don't come to see me, I'll find you."

"Find me?" Shi Yan beamed a smile and didn't seem to understand her thinking. "You and I might have a few opportunities to see each other in the Divine Great Land in the future. Anyway, we don't need to meet again."

"You are such a cold guy." Cai Yi harrumphed and suddenly said, "That's alright. I'll find you as there're still some things that I need to tell you." Her tone was ambiguous.

Everyone suddenly burst out in laughter, expressing a thoughtful face.

"Goodbye," Cai Yi smiled and whispered. She turned around, glancing at the Lao brothers.

"Thank you, brother. We will remember your kindness." The Lao brothers said simultaneously.

Shi Yan nodded with a smile.



"Let's go. We will return together. Having regards for Shi Yan, we will protect you guys on the way back." Zhao Feng smiled and said to Cai Yi and the Lao brothers.

"Goodbye," Shi Yan waved his hands, watching Cai Yi, Zhao Feng, and the others leave slowly, disappearing together with Ye Zhang Feng's group.

Not long after that, there were only Shi Yan, Chi Xiao, Zuo Xu, and Zuo Shi left on the island.

"Do you have the Lie Original Fluid?" Waiting until after everyone left, Chi Xiao took a deep breath and asked with a solemn countenance.

"Yes," Shi Yan smiled and nodded. "When you enter the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, remember to find me. I'll definitely give you the Life Original Fluid if I have it." After pausing for a while, he looked at Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi, "You guys, too."

The three of them revealed grateful faces.

"Let's go. We shall leave this place and go to the Endless Sea." Shi Yan didn't hesitate more as he suddenly remembered the situation in the Endless Sea, which made him not want to linger in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist any longer.

Chi Xiao and the other two people nodded.

A group of four people left this exotic land, jumping into the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist and heading to the Endless Sea.

...

On a certain day...

Shi Yan and the other three people crossed the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist and finally came to the border of some land. Seeing the sunlight, they all had a feeling of being reborn.

The sky was full of stars, which secretly showered and penetrated into Shi Yan's martial spirit in a mysterious way, which ordinary

people couldn't recognize.

Shi Yan revealed an excited face with happy eyes.

It was unknown why but he could sense that the speed of the stars penetrating into his body was obviously three times faster than when he had first entered the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist.

Naked eyes could not see it clearly, but still could realize the stars overwhelming the sky. They flew down like a shower and then disappeared into his martial spirit, quietly reinforcing his Star Martial Spirit.

Perhaps when he entered the Sky Realm in that exotic land, the mysterious energy had enhanced his Star Martial Spirit, so that it could accommodate more of the star power.

In short, the absorption capacity of the Star martial Spirit had substantially increased, which was an indisputable fact.

The three people, Chi Xiao, Zuo Xu, and Zuo Shi couldn't realize the transformation in Shi Yan's body either. They could only see his happy face and knew that he was probably feeling good.

"What's the matter?" Zuo Xu smiled and asked, "Is it because seeing the sun makes you feel heartedly joyful? When you come out after a long time in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, the feeling is really good, isn't it?"

Shi Yan didn't say anything, just nodded and smiled.

"The Endless Sea is really in a complicated situation?" Chi Xiao looked over at the west with a solemn face. His eyes brightened. "Are the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers both in the Endless Sea?"

"Yes."

"It's terrible. Seems like we have to make a detour since that place should be very dangerous at this time. It's the best if we can avoid crossing the Endless Sea." Chi Xiao kept silent for a while and

then said, "We have to separate here I guess."

Shi Yan nodded and said, "After going back to the Merchant Union, please tell my grandfather not to be too worried about the Merchant Union's situation. Wait until I'm done with the things in the Endless Sea. I will think of a solution to help you. Well, if it's possible, I will send someone to pick you up and let you leave that small Merchant Union."

Zuo Xu's eyes suddenly brightened.

Zuo Shi nodded constantly and said happily, "That's very good. Only after having a journey out of that place have we now realized that our Merchant Union is really small. The cultivation base of the warriors of our place also seems to be too low. Look at the warriors from the Divine Great Land, although they are at the same age as us, they have already reached the Nirvana or Sky Realm. I don't want to be a frog in a well forever."

Chi Xiao revealed a wry smile, reluctantly shook his head and let out a sigh.

In the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist this time, he had been injured severely. Seeing the young warriors who were already at the Sky Realm, he couldn't help but feel unspeakably frustrated.

Especially Shi Yan.

Since he left the Merchant Union, he had already entered the Sky Realm from the Disaster Realm in just a few years. That cultivation speed was just incredible.

Chi Xiao didn't know that it was because of the impact of the mysterious martial spirit on his body. He just thought that it was the impact of the environment, and for the first time, he was aware of how important a good cultivation environment was to warriors.

"After going back this time, we will prepare to leave the Merchant Union. Rest assured, I will definitely tell your

grandfather about your current situation." Zuo Xu took a deep breath, smiled, and said, "Your grandfather would not have expected that you have already surpassed him and all other predecessors of the Shi family."

Shi Yan burst into laughter.

"You have to promise that when we see each other again, you will bring us a greater surprise." Chi Xiao looked at him deeply and said, "You have too many miracles. I think that one day, you can surpass those who are called high-class warriors and stand on the summit above all of them. I'm certain about that day."

"Thank you for your kind words," Shi Yan beamed a smile.

Chi Xiao and the other two people kept giving him compliments for a while and then talked about the Merchant Union's situation. Finally, they bid farewell outside the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist and took a detour to go back to the Merchant Union.

Shi Yan looked at the sea far away and suddenly burst out laughing, turning into a bunch of starlights and flying straight to the Vault of Heaven Sea Area.

...

The Endless Sea.

One year had quickly passed. The five Sea territories were constantly at war. Demon Dwellers, Dark Dwellers, Humans, and beasts all appeared on those five Seas. Because of the cultivation materials and racial hatred, they fought against each other and never subsided.

The Kyara Sea and the Yuanluo Sea now became the place of the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. The Dark Dwellers temporarily occupied the Kyara Sea while the Yuanluo Sea was dominated by the Demon Dwellers. Among the five big Sea Areas, only the three left belonged to human warriors. Because of the invasion of the two big races, the Endless Sea was continuously

facing wars, and didn't seem like it would settle anytime soon.

The border between the Kyara Sea and the Yuanluo Sea was the region that linked with the three big Seas. It was unknown how many creatures had died there.

Thousands of pagans and warriors fought in the Endless Sea, turning the Endless Sea into a Shura blood field with corpses everywhere.

Human civilians in this battle were in panic and extreme misery. They didn't have hope or directions of the future, as they were frightened that the pagan races would come and slaughter the island where they were living, turning it into a dead island.

Today, on a vast island of the Black Sea, human warriors and pagan warriors were still fighting. After the bloody battle had finished, all the human warriors were beheaded. No one could escape.

Corpses were everywhere on the island, including humans, Demon Dwellers, demon beasts, and more.

A figure quietly appeared in the piles of bones, wandering around the island with stinky blood smell. He frowned and revealed a dark complexion.

There was no one left on the island. The man released his soul consciousness and realized that nobody existed on the island, even with the smallest surging vitality.

On this vast island, only vultures were flying and excitedly eating the corpses. Mosquitoes were scattered around, and the pungent stench rose. It was an extremely horrible scene.

Getting away from the corpses, he stopped for a short while and then crossed the island, flying towards the Wind Cloud Island.

The Wind Cloud Island was situated between the Yuanluo Sea and the Black Sea. The Heaven and Earth aura there was very thin, so very few warriors stayed here. Previously, since the Xia family

left the Kyara Sea, they temporarily settled in the Wind Cloud Island as they didn't yield to the Endless Sea warriors.

Returning to the Endless Sea, he didn't know clearly about the situation there and didn't dare to show up. To get news of the Xia family, his only way was to explore and eavesdrop on the other forces' warriors.

All the way there, he deliberately avoided the islands where warriors gathered, hid his whereabouts, and used some special way to cover up his appearance, as he didn't want other people to recognize his identity.

The Endless Sea's situation was convoluted. Only after knowing the situation thoroughly would he be able to determine the next step to take.

Going to the Wind Cloud Island, he released his soul consciousness to detect lives on the island. Wherever his soul consciousness passed, no trace of life responded. He couldn't even detect a beast on the whole island. This place was full of dead aura and seemed like it had been barren for a long time.

Walking around the island, he still couldn't find any human warriors or pagans, or even human bones for that matter. It seemed civilians here had left this desolated island a long time ago.

He obviously couldn't find the Xia family either.

Dark clouds suddenly covered the sky.

In the clouds, a dark aura slowly bred, as strange energy movements came out from time to time. Shi Yan was startled. He frowned while looking at the dark clouds. His face became solemn while he was secretly on alert.

# Chapter 429: The Dark Dwellers

---

Dark clouds fully capped the sky, such that sunlight could not pierce through to shine on the Wind Cloud Island. The warm island became gloomy and cold all of a sudden.

Dark clouds slowly descended above the forest on the Wind Cloud Island, and a dark aura overwhelmed everywhere.

Shi Yan frowned while looking up at the clusters of dark cloud in the sky. His heart was agitated, as he secretly hid his own trace of breath.

The third eye of his host soul in his Sea of Consciousness suddenly brightened, releasing the spiritual power that hindered the exploration of souls, preventing all kinds of soul consciousnesses from coming close to him.

Hiding in an ancient tree, he quietly looked through the small gap. Not long after that, three figures gradually appeared from the dark clouds.

One of them was an old man with gray hair at his temples. The second one was a young man with an outstanding appearance but an inwardly evil-hearted mind. The last one was Yi Cu Bi of the Demonic Sound Clan.

The three of them came out from the dark clouds and stood in the forest with calm expressions while discussing with a low tone.

Looking at them from a distance, Shi Yan realized that the bodies of the two men were chilly cold, with incredibly strong energy spiritual fluctuations. It was clear that they knew how to use soul energy.

The Dark Dwellers!

Just after a quick glance, he could confirm the identity of those two men. The Dark Dwellers' physical health was different from that of Humans and Demon Dwellers. Their physical state tended

to be yin and cold. They didn't like to waste their energy in training their bodies. Instead, they considered soul cultivating their lifelong goal. The Dark Dwellers had a feeble physique. Yet, although they looked weak, their souls were mighty.

The temperament and souls of those two men were the same as those of Yi Cu Bi. They were obviously from the same race.

The handsome young man was talking something to Yi Cu Bi, which looked like he was trying to cheer her up. However, Yi Cu Bi wore an indifferent face while responding to him perfunctorily. She then urged that young man to act faster.

The old man seemed to carefully protect the young man, releasing his soul conscious to detect and prevent any strangers from coming close.

"Cu Bi-mei, if we find the Yin Jade Crystal this time, my father will refine a Dark Yin Cold Pellet himself. It can help you expand your Sea of Consciousness twice, and soon, you'll reach the Second Sky of Sky Realm. Your soul will enhance one step further." The young man smiled and said with a longing face. "Refining the Dark Yin Cold Pellet is extremely difficult. My father condenses this pellet with the hope of receiving your father's favor. The Demonic Sound Clan is the main branch of the Dark Dwellers. After invading the Kyara Sea and sharing rare cultivation resources, Dark Dwellers' forces will be obviously more powerful. Your father is the third generation leader of the Demonic Sound Clan, and he will also gain great benefits in the future."

Yi Cu Bi looked at him but didn't say anything.

"Cu Bi-mei, tell me what my weakness is after all? Why don't you agree to our marriage?" The young man helplessly asked with a worried face. "Doesn't my status match yours? You should probably know how I have been treating you during the whole year. What I've done is not good enough for you?"

"It's not about being good enough. It is just that I don't like you,"



Yi Cu Bi finally said. "I remember that before you met me, you have had numerous relationships with beautiful women. You've never lacked women, so why do you have to stick with me?"

"You're different from the other women." The young man raised his hands and vowed. "Before seeing you, the other women were just a game. I've never been touched. But after seeing you, everything's changed. Because of you, I have already cut off the relationships with those women so that you can be moved and pay attention to me. Is it not enough for you?"

Yi Cu Bi continued to shake her head with a cold complexion.

That young man helplessly continued to linger with an honest face and a sincere voice. It looked like he was exposing his heart to her.

Inside the bush, Shi Yan coldly looked at them and sneered in his mind.

After only one year, the Demonic Sound Clan people had unexpectedly blended with the Dark Dwellers very well, evidently becoming one race. Their relationship was much closer.

The fact that the young man pursued Yi Cu Bi patiently was probably because of Yi Tian Mo's status and position. He wanted to seek the marriage bond with Yi Cu Bi to tie himself with the Demonic Sound Clan, avoiding the possibility of Yi Tian Mo having wicked intentions.

Watching Yi Cu Bi leisurely walking in the forest with a graceful appearance, Shi Yan's eyes gradually calmed down.

He remembered the time when he had first met Yi Cu Bi. In that abandoned land, this woman took advantage of her mighty soul to destroy his soul protection directly. She then controlled and took him to the Demonic Sound Clan's City. He and this woman also hunted the demon beasts in the Sound Beast Mountain together. So, they somehow had fate for a period of time.

Time had passed. The Demonic Sound Clan came out from the Chasm Battlefield and made a connection with the Dark Dwellers. This was something out of his expectation.

The oaths of the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan were still right next to his ears. However, they now yielded to the Dark Dwellers.

Although he had never considered Yi Tian Mo and the other two leaders his loyal right-hands, he still didn't feel comfortable seeing this moment.

He knew that Yi Tian Mo and his people actually did it unwillingly.

The Dark Dwellers and Demon Dwellers were too powerful indeed. It was not because the warriors in the Endless Sea had the same bloodline that the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers treated them as a partner. Although Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan had an exceptional cultivation base, they still couldn't compare with the Demon Kings and the Dark Kings.

Given the situation where they were not as excellent as the others, they had to bow their heads for the continuation of the race. Because of the future generation, they had to yield and finally followed the Demon and the Dark Dwellers.

Shi Yan was not surprised.

If he had the power to suppress the Demon Kings and protect the fellows of the Demonic Sound Clan from the Demon Dwellers' infestation, perhaps Di Shan and his group would not have betrayed him and could have treated him as their master.

Unfortunately, although he had an extremely rapid progress in cultivating his realm, he couldn't be compared with the Demon Kings who had been cultivating for hundreds of years. Even if he relied on the power of the Holy Spirit God, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame, the three strange creatures, he could only have

one fight with the Demon Masters, but could hardly have the upper hand against the Demon Kings.

Even now, although he really wanted to fight against Bo Xun or Chi Yan, he would be defeated in the end. Even the possibility of escape was hard to say.

Previously, Chi Yan had borrowed Jiao Han Yi's body to cast out his earth-shaking power. By that time, only relying on Ye Zhang Feng had helped him escape without any remaining strength to counterattack.

Right now, he had entered the Sky Realm, and the three great living beings had regained their strength. If they could merge together, he didn't know whether he would be able to fight against Chi Yan or not.

He was still not sure.

The old man following the young man should be the warrior of the Dark Dwellers. His spiritual fluctuations were like a strong gust. Leaves in the dense forest all shook up whenever he passed by. This kind of surging spirit, as sharp as a knife, couldn't be cast out unless the person who performed it was in the Spirit Realm.

The Dark Dwellers at the Spirit Realm had a terrifyingly profound understanding of souls.

Shi Yan subconsciously held his breath and released his consciousness without using any of his strength, coldly watching those three people passing one hundred meters away with a solemn complexion.

It seemed Yi Cu Bi and the other two came here to search for some cultivating material. After walking around the Wind Cloud Island for a while, they bored into the dark clouds once again.

He didn't know whether the three of them had harvested anything. Actually, he didn't care. After staying on the Wind Cloud Island for a while, he hesitated a little bit and then left, flying to

the Black Sea.

Inky Cloud Island.

On a small island, there were many inky cloud stone blocks of the Black Sea. The island was heavily guarded. Warriors with different levels wandered here and there. A variety of strange barriers were established all over the island to prevent the pagans' invasion.

Even before coming closer, Shi Yan could see many silhouettes walking back and forth on the island.

This island belonged to the Heaven Lake Divine Land, and a majority of the warriors on the island were also from the Heaven Lake Divine Land. This island was more than one thousand li away from the Wind Cloud Island. The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers didn't frequent this island.

When Shi Yan came to the periphery of the island, a Disaster Realm warrior approached and asked his identity.

As he realized that Shi Yan was a human warrior, he didn't really want to stop him and just carried out the regular procedure.

After Shi Yan replied with a few words, saying that he was a solitary-cultivating warrior, he was immediately allowed to enter the island. After getting onto the island, Shi Yan handed some middle-grade spiritual stones in exchange for the information of the situation on the island.

The Inky Cloud Island belonged to the Heaven Lake Divine Land. There were no civilians on the island. Only around one hundred warriors with low realms were temporarily stationed. Their duty was to visit the nearby sea territories regularly and inquire about the information about the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers. The Inky Cloud Island was currently under the control of a Heaven Lake Divine Land warrior at the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm.

In the center of the island, there was a directional Transfer Formation which directly connected to the headquarter of the

Heaven Lake Divine Land.

Once the warriors on the island detected any Dark Dwellers or Demon Dwellers around, they would go into the directional Transfer Formation to leave this Inky Cloud Island immediately. Waiting after everything subsided, they would come back to the island and continued to spy on the surrounding sea territories, collecting information for the Heaven Lake Divine Land.

"Haha, our Holy Maiden comes to visit the island today. Have you ever seen our Holy Maiden?"

The man to whom Shi Yan offered a spiritual stone smiled ambiguously. "Although our Holy Maiden's appearance is typical, she's really a great beauty. Anyways, she always wears a mask, so no one can really see her. Our Holy Maiden's body is graceful, and can be said to be perfect. If you give me one more spiritual stone, I will let you come close to the center of the island where the Holy Maiden is living. Perhaps you will be lucky enough to see her."

Shi Yan smiled and shook his head. "Forget about it. If it's only being able to see the figure instead of the true appearance, it's better not to see her at all."

## Chapter 430: Tear the mask

---

"Kid, you know nothing!" This person didn't look happy. He coldly stared at Shi Yan and said, "If you can have just a glimpse of the Holy Maiden's figure, it would be your best luck already. Hmm, kid, what do you come to our Inky Cloud Island for?"

"Nothing," Shi Yan frowned and replied.

With his Sky Realm, as long as Shi Yan covered up himself, nobody could realize his real Realm. For instance, right now, as he was hiding his real strength, the other warrior wasn't able to see through him. He just considered Shi Yan a Human Realm warrior and thus apparently exposed his disdain.

"The Holy Maiden's here! Liu Tao, be careful. Don't let the Holy Maiden see that you are lazy."

Suddenly, a loud shout arose from a distance. A bold, hefty man sternly stared at the warrior who was talking to Shi Yan. Liu Tao mused and shut his mouth immediately. He slightly trembled in fear, looking away into the distance.

Shi Yan also looked at the direction towards a small mountain not far away from him. At the bottom of the mountain, there was a row of red-tile-roofed houses. A prominent figure slowly walked out from a three-story house.

It was Qu Yan Qing.

The clean, neat, silvery costume made her heart-shaking body even more beautiful. That ordinary face glinted with sharp, bright eyes, which revealed some kind of dignity that no one dared to despise.

In the Heaven Lake Divine Land, Qu Yan Qing had a high and noble position. To the general warriors of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, Qu Yan Qing was undoubtedly the noble character whom they could only behold from a far distance. No one dared to express

any feelings toward her, and could only keep them in their hearts.

On the road, many warriors of the Heaven Lake Divine Land stared at her with a dignified look when she passed them. However, after she had walked over, those people's eyes stuck onto her s\*xy rear end.

Qu Yan Qing walked upright all the way while her beautiful eyes brightened. She headed straight to Shi Yan's place. "A stranger comes to the island?" She looked at Shi Yan, but the question was certainly for Liu Tao.

Liu Tao slightly bent in fear and flattered. "This guy said that he is from the Tuta Sea and went around the Yuanluo Sea. He said that he came to our Black Sea to find some cultivating materials. He has been cautious on the way and didn't confront the pagans."

Qu Yan Qing eyed Shi Yan from top to toe and then said, "Follow me. I have something to ask you." Her tone sounded like she didn't allow him to refuse.

Shi Yan coldly sneered in his heart while still keeping a calm face and said, "Okay."

"Brat, behave. You have to answer when the Holy Maiden asks you. If you are not obedient, I will let you know what pain is."

Shi Yan shrugged, but he was still calm.

"Follow me," Qu Yan Qing obviously came here because of him. She threw a glance at him with a cold and arrogant attitude, clearly considering him just a normal warrior.

Shi Yan didn't say much and just followed her quietly.

On the way there, he realized the warriors of the Heaven Lake Divine Land kept staring at Qu Yan Qing with greedy eyes when they were behind her back. However, when they were in front of her, they all showed a frightened and serious expression.

Secretly laughing in his mind, Shi Yan knew that Qu Yan Qing

was apparently delicious in those warriors' eyes, but they could only see and never have the opportunities to touch her for their whole life.

He suddenly remembered the abandoned place where he had soothed this woman's bottom and torn her mask. So, on seeing those warriors of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, he suddenly had a feeling of arrogance.

I've touched your Holy Maiden!

Shi Yan laughed and talked to himself.

Arriving at the red-tile-roofed house, Qu Yan Qing went into the central fifty-square-meter chamber which could seat many people.

Qu Yan Qing sat down on the principal chair and waved her hand, indicating that Shi Yan should also sit down on her left side.

Shi Yan calmly sat down and looked at the front, realizing that the door was just slightly closed. There were two vague figures of warriors very far away, who could not see the scene or hear anything from here.

"You have said that you are from the Tuta Sea. So, do you know the situation over there? Well, as long as it's the useful information, I'll give you a good reward." Qu Yan Qing's voice was clear but cold, her eyes haughty. While talking, she slowly hauled out something and put it on the table. They were three top grade shining spiritual stones. Her fingers gently tapped on them and asked indifferently.

"I don't know," Shi Yan shook his head.

"What?" Qu Yan Qing frowned and revealed an unhappy face. "For a warrior with a low realm like you, these three spiritual stones are not a small reward. Do you still feel that the reward is still low? Alright. Let me see how precious your information is. If it is rare enough, I will give you more rewards. What do you think?"



"I'm not short of spiritual stones," Shi Yan shook his head and said. "I just want to know what's the current situation here. You are the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, so you should be aware the situation very well. Do you have anything to tell me?"

Qu Yan Qing's smile froze; her eyes looked at him strangely.

When regular warriors saw her, they all appeared uneasy and scared. Given her identity and cultivation base, those warriors couldn't even make a smooth sentence. However, this person spoke calmly and even dared to pose her question.

This made Qu Yan Qing startled a little bit, as she felt that the person in front of her was somehow strange.

"Do you know the situation of the Tuta Sea after all?" Qu Yan Qing hesitated and asked arrogantly while her face darkened. "You should answer what I've asked you. I don't like people bargaining with me."

After pausing for a short moment, Qu Yan Qing spouted and ridiculed. "Do you think you are qualified enough to bargain with me?"

Shi Yan smiled and confirmed with a nod, "Yes."

"What?" Qu Yan Qing raised her eyebrows and asked impatiently, "Based on what?"

"I've touched you."

"You want to die?" Qu Yan Qing suddenly stood up. Her face and eyes were cold. It seemed she was about to attack the man in front of her.

As soon as she raised her hand, she immediately realized that Shi Yan had disappeared.

In the next moment, a rough breath of a man blew on the nape of her neck. She was dumbstruck, and before she could have time to

react, her thin mask was ripped off.

"I always like your face behind the mask." Shi Yan smiled and bluntly tapped her breasts and said, "They are still amazingly elastic like before. Your body is still mesmerizing. It is really not a waste for me to think about you."

Qu Yan Qing's face changed. Her graceful body suddenly trembled, and her voice seemed to be lost. "You, your voice...?"

He had restored his original voice when saying those words.

Shi Yan laughed and said, "Little beauty, you still remember my voice although we have been separated for so long. Not bad, not bad at all. Seems you have such a deep feeling for me. I'm thrilled."

"I will never forget your evil voice."

Qu Yan Qing gritted her teeth tightly and turned around coldly. She didn't know if she was in fear or excitement when she stared at him fiercely and said, "You dare to come back?"

Shi Yan smiled with a surprised look and asked, "Why can't I return?"

After asking, he sharply gazed at her beautiful, delicate face and complimented it with a smile. "You obviously have a mesmerizing face, so why do you want to cover it? It's really annoying. Well, I'm a person who is fond of flowers. Every time I see you, I will make this face display to receive the sunlight and absorb the Heaven-Earth aura."

"You b\*stard!"

"Yes, I'm a b\*stard." Shi Yan accepted it and constantly nodded. He also reached his hand out and bluntly caressed her face. "But, many people are even more terrible than me. After promising me something, they immediately turned their backs and even sent someone to kill me. So, you tell me... Your fellows or I, who is more of a b\*stard? And you... If it weren't for me saving you, could you still come back alive from the Chasm Battlefield? Could you

live until now?"

Qu Yan Qing's aura suddenly weakened.

"I remember in that abandoned place, you were the slave that I'd purchased. I was busy at that time, so I didn't really enjoy you. Shall we make it up now?" Shi Yan beamed an evil smile and said with a cruel tone.

"You!" Qu Yan Qing was angry and regretted that she couldn't devour him.

"You what?" Shi Yan sneered coldly.

"I admit that what my master did was inappropriate." Qu Yan Qing suddenly sighed, avoiding his provocation and then sat down with a gloomy face. "But I couldn't control it. I didn't participate when my fellows were sent to kill you. Since you had left, you shouldn't have come back. When you come back, the situation will repeat. Those who are against you will do the same to you once again."

"They haven't been beaten up by the Demon Dwellers and Dark Dwellers?" Shi Yan kept a cold face and smiled. "It seems the Endless Sea will be destroyed soon, and you guys still care about internal conflicts. When I have come back this time, I'm able to see the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers have completely occupied the Endless Sea. Well, that may be good anyways. Those people might as well die instead of staying in the Endless Sea. It is such a waste of cultivation materials if they live. Instead, they should save the resources for the pagans."

"You should not come back." Qu Yan Qing said with a confused face. "There is no place for you in the Endless Sea. You can live well in other places, so why do you want to come back here?"

"Oh, you seem to care for me a lot." Shi Yan was surprised. "Little beauty, did your heart fall for me? Well, I know my charm is irresistible, and you and I used to have s\*xual contact. Women

have a strange mind indeed. It is said that they have special feelings to those who ignore them or are contemptuous toward them. Are you the same?"

"I don't care whether you are alive or dead." Qu Yan Qing's face changed immediately. Her body trembled as she regretted that she couldn't strangle Shi Yan to death.

Shi Yan still kept his cold attitude and looked at her with meaningful eyes. It seemed he was aware of something strange.

## Chapter 431: Shi Yan's influence

---

Four eyes met, and both of them fell into silence all of a sudden.

The atmosphere seemed to be bizarre.

"You are the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Divine Land. As long as the Heaven Lake Divine Land does not perish, you still can keep this noble position and receive the worship from these inferior fellows," Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then said calmly. "The reason why I'm here in front of you now is that I'm sure you are not narrow-minded, and perhaps you can tell me the current situation of the Endless Sea."

"What do you want to know?" Qu Yan Qing frowned and asked.

"I only know that the Yuanluo Sea and the Kyara Sea have belonged to the Demon Dwellers and Dark Dwellers. I'm not sure about the Three Gods Sect, the Gu family, and the Dongfeng family. I'm curious where these three forces are now. Since the Demon Dwellers have already occupied the Yuanluo Sea, they obviously need some place to cultivate."

"The Dongfeng family is temporarily settling down in the Black Sea. The Gus went to the Tuta Sea to rely on the Cao family. As for the Three Gods Sect..."

Qu Yan Qing hesitated a little bit and then said, "The Three Gods Sect's disciples don't stay in the Endless Sea. According to our speculation, they are probably staying hidden in the seabed and observing the situation discreetly, waiting for the Demon Dwellers, the Dark Dwellers, and us to die, so that they will then come out from the ocean floor."

"Tell me about the situation this year then."

Qu Yan Qing slowly nodded and told him all about the situation that she knew.

As Shi Yan had been staying in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist

for one year, he completely lost connection with the Endless Sea and didn't know anything about its situation.

One year ago, not long after he had left the Endless Sea, the Heavenly Gate of the Demon Area and the Kyara Sea was fully opened. Meanwhile, the Corpse Soul Bridge had been extended from the Demon Area to the Kyara Sea.

The true bodies of the Demon Kings Bo Xun and Chi Yan had appeared in the Kyara Sea. They also brought along thousands of elite warriors. In just a week, the Demon Dwellers had arrived the Yuanluo Sea and wiped out all the obstacles there.

During this period, Ouyang Lou Shuang of the Three Gods Sect had revealed her talent. She had used the Silver Moon Martial Spirit that had been condensed from the thousand-year moonlight to fight Bo Xun. After half a day of fighting, the Demon King couldn't resist any longer. He was defeated.

That was why the Three Gods Sect withdrew from the Yuanluo Sea. One part of them had sneaked to the seabed while the other part stayed hidden in the holy land. It had been a long time since they showed up from the sea.

Even Ouyang Lou Shuang was also defeated. Gu Shao and Dongfeng Jue could only avoid the Demon Dwellers' attack, dividing their forces and moving to the Tuta Sea and the Black Sea.

Many civilians became the sacrifices, miserably beheaded by the Demon Dwellers. Their corpses were everywhere.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian had to come out and guard at the Black Sea and the Tuta Sea. They gathered all forces in the Endless Sea to cope with the invasion of the Demon Dwellers.

Ouyang Lou Shuang often appeared during this time. Her fighting ability was gradually increasing, and her power became more and more terrifying. She was finally as powerful as Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian.

In the Tuta Sea, while the Demon Dwellers were preparing for the invasion, a group of Demon Dwellers was beheaded mysteriously.

After that, the Demon Dwellers sent Demon Master Ma Qi Jie to investigate. At the area of the Corpse God Sect in the Tuta Sea, Ma Qi Jie was severely injured and almost couldn't return alive.

Bo Xun was in a rage and departed personally, going to that sea area alone to find the Corpse God Sect for retaliation.

In the Corpse God Sect, the two giant ten-thousand-year King Corpses united, using the essence of the Five Elements of Heaven and Earth to deal with Bo Xun, making him return without getting anything. Under cover of the Five Elements Sky Net, the Corpse God Sect was fully enveloped, and even Bo Xun's soul consciousness could hardly pierce through.

After this war, the Corpse God Sect had attracted the worldwide attention.

Although Qing Ming was the cult master of the Corpse God Sect, he unexpectedly didn't participate in that earth-shaking war.

After this war, the Corpse God Sect had some changes. The two King Corpses got out of Qing Ming's control and became the real master of the Sect. The corpse slaves that were initially in confinement suddenly became the pillars of the Corpse God Sect, and the original disciples became the servants of the corpse slaves.

The two King Corpses rebelled, re-writing the history of the Corpse God Sect. The King Corpses and the corpse slaves gathered and became a dominant force, dominating Qing Ming's disciples.

The King Corpses had a ten-thousand-year-old intellect and were now in charge of the Corpse God Sect, making the Sect even stronger.

Even Demon King Bo Xun couldn't get any benefits from the unity of the two King Corpses. This made all warriors of the

Endless Sea aware of how terrible the King Corpses' power was for the first time.

The Xia family had declined; the former master of the Xia family, Xia Jing Hou, suddenly left his secluded life at the Vault of Heaven Sea Area and fought with the Dark Dwellers at the border of the Kyara Sea, slaughtering hundreds of Dark Dwellers of different levels.

The three Dark Sky Yama Kings (1) of the Seven-layered Underworld fought with Xia Jing Hou but couldn't kill him.

Xia Jing Hou became famous after one battle. He then gathered the remnants of the Xias and rose up in the Vault of Heaven Sea Dream, re-establishing the strength and forces in the Heavenly Demon Mountain Range and re-housing the Xia family. After this war, everyone suddenly realized that Xia Jing Hou had entered the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. Moreover, his soul cultivation was extremely profound. Even Yang Yi Tian had to admit that his soul ability was not as good as that of Xia Jing Hou.

The Xia family re-embarked on the stage and was even more dazzling than ever.

Yang Yi Tian of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area had to acknowledge Xia Jing Hou's strength, let him dominate the said Sea Area and fight with the high-class warriors of the three Dark Sky Yama Kings at the Kyara Sea.

The ten-thousand-year King Corpses in the Tuta Sea, Ouyang Lou Shuang of the Three Gods Sect, and Xia Jing Hou made their rebellion all of a sudden. These four masters appeared and sabotaged the plan of the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. Furthermore, Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian also contacted and gathered all forces everywhere to resist and suppress the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers.

The Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers wanted to clear the Endless Sea in a short time. However, seeing the four masters



appear intimidatingly, they had to consider carefully and didn't dare to carry out their schemes recklessly. Instead, they gradually invaded and acquired the three Sea Areas.

Over the past year, the two Demon Kings and three Yama Kings had respectively fought with Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian, the ten-thousand-year King Corpses, Ouyang Lou Shuang, and Xia Jing Hou, but they couldn't get any benefits from these masters' unity. They had all got injured several times and began to subside.

After that, the inferior warriors started to fight with each other. A small war happened every three days, and a big war occurred every seven days.

A year later, under the resistance of Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian, the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers still couldn't conquer the Endless Sea. Both sides gradually fell into the war of attrition, where they competed for manpower and resources.

Qu Yan Qing sat on her chair, took a sip of green tea and then said, "Over the past year, pagans have been fighting against us every single moment. What I just told you are the big events that happened in the past year. Except for these things, other small matters have nothing related to you. As I think you are not interested in them, I won't tell."

"The thousand-year King Corpses, Ouyang Lou Shuang, Xia Jing Hou..." Shi Yan muttered, revealing a strange face and beaming a smile.

He suddenly realized that all of those people somehow had a connection with him.

If it weren't for his Life Seal that had activated the Thousand Year King Corpses' consciousness, they wouldn't have had the wisdom to betray Qing Ming or appear to resist Demon King Bo Xun and take over the Corpse Gods Sect, making the corpse slaves become masters.

It could be said that he alone had led to the transformation of the Thousand Year King Corpses.

Ouyang Lou Shuang's case was almost the same.

That year, if it weren't for him having the Star God inheritance that stimulated the transformation of the meteorite, Ouyang Lou Shuang could still have ascetically cultivated inside the meteorite, not being able to wake up that early.

Because of his appearance, Ouyang Lou Shuang woke up that fast. She then entered the Endless Sea and became the shining God Realm warrior of the Three Gods Sect.

Xia Jing Hou's case wasn't different.

Shi Yan knew the reason that Xia Jing Hou could regain his normal state that fast was the benefits from the Vain Spirit Pellet of Ye Zhang Feng. Ye Zhang Feng had said that Xia Jing Hou had arrived the swamp in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, and had been trapped for many years. That's why he had gotten one remaining drop of the clear God Soul.

After having absorbed that crystal clear God Soul, the Reincarnation Martial Spirit of the Xia family had mutated, leading to his insanity.

After having taken the Vein Spirit Pellet, he had gradually recovered and digested the immortal spirit in that crystal clear God Soul. This helped him enter the new realm, the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, and master the magical martial technique left in the crystal clear God Soul. Hence, he was finally strong enough to fight with the Dark Sky Yama Kings.

The King Corpses, Ouyang Lou Shuang, and Xia Jing Hou...

Shi Yan grinned, his face joyful.

Over the past year, although he hadn't stayed in the Endless Sea, he had either intentionally or accidentally contributed to the strength of those three masters. They could substitute him to rise

and get involved in the distress of the Endless Sea.

To a certain extent, he had been quietly affecting the situation of the Endless Sea, even though he hadn't been here.

"What are you laughing at?" Qu Yan Qing was surprised.

"Nothing," Shi Yan shook his head, hesitated for a while and then continued. "Do you have any news of the Yang family? Are there any Yangs showing up over the past year?"

"One part of the Yangs should be on the seabed this time. We have received news saying that Yang Mu and his fellows used to appear in Barren City at the bottom of the sea. However, the situation in the Endless Sea is grim, so nobody wants to find them to start more troubles. As far as we can see, Yang Mu and the others should have come out from the Chasm Battlefield and arrived at Barren City," Qu Yan Qing said.

"The Barren City?" Shi Yan looked surprised.

"Yes. The Barren City in the ocean floor is opened by the Sea Tribes. Its purpose is for them to exchange some goods with the human race. Although materials in the seabed are rich, some cultivating materials can only be found on land. The Sea Tribes have opened the Barren City so that the warriors on the sea surface can exchange their cultivating materials for the submarine materials."

"Did Yang Mu actually appear in the Barren City?" Shi Yan muttered while his eyes suddenly lit up.

(1) Yama King: Diyu (Chinese: 地獄) is the realm of the dead or "hell" in Chinese mythology. The exact number of levels in Diyu and their associated deities differ between Buddhist and Taoist interpretations. Sometimes they say it is divided into 'Ten Courts of Hell'; each of which is ruled by a judge (collectively known as the Ten Yama Kings).

## Chapter 432: Seabed

---

"Do you want to visit the Barren City at the bottom of the sea?"

Qu Yan Qing frowned and slightly shook her head. "The Barren City's very complicated. There are Sea Tribes, demonic races, human race... That's a multiracial area. Fights happen all the time, and it never seems to be peaceful. That year, when the Yang family was still strong, the Sea Tribes still had regards for them. But now, since Yang Tian Emperor has been captured and probably will not be able to come out from the confinement, the Sea Tribes will not have to continue to respect you guys anymore. I think Yang Mu and his group are not happy in Barren City. You can't change anything even if you go down there."

Shi Yan contemplated and beamed a faint smile; he didn't care about what she said.

"You'd better stay away from the Endless Sea." Qu Yan Qing's eyes brightened as she said with a sincere tone. "You aren't the same as the other Yangs. Even though the forces of the Endless Sea know that Yang Mu and his group are in the Barren City, they will not do anything to them. However, if they know you're there, I'm afraid..."

"What?" Shi Yan frowned, "What do you mean?"

"Even if Yang Mu and the others are still alive, they are not able to revitalize the Yang family. They can't make the Yang family shine again in the Endless Sea. So, they're not a big threat to the others." Qu Yan Qing said with a solemn face. "You are different. You have made the leaders of the other forces in the Endless Sea realize that you have endless potential. Your performance even surpasses the Yang Tian Emperor when he was young. If you have more time to cultivate, I believe that one day, you will certainly replace the Yang Tian Emperor, help revitalize the Yang family and firmly stand in the Endless Sea again."

Shi Yan grinned and revealed a flattered expression. "Thank you, thank you."

"They will not let you go. Once the news of your presence in the Barren City is spread out, the people of the Endless Sea will find ways to deal with you. You're a big threat to them. Many people are afraid of you, and thus, they will not let you grow and become another Yang Tian Emperor," Qu Yan Qing said seriously.

"How can I not go to the Barren City on the seabed?" Shi Yan ignored her advice and asked with a smile. "I have to go there. If those people want to do something to me, just let them do what they want. Let see if I can continue to live well or not."

He had arduously been cultivating in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist for a long time, and had entered the Sky Realm. Moreover, he had helped the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame regain their energy. If he could reunite these three living beings together and borrow the mysterious giant sharp sword, he was confident that nobody could harm him unless Cao Qiu Dao and Yan Yi Tian appeared.

As the situation of the Endless Sea was grim right now, he didn't believe that people like Cao Qiu Dao and Yan Yi Tian would go all the way to the Barren City to kill him.

At most, those people like Gu Shao or Yu Qin would probably come. But of course, he was not scared of them.

"Do you really want to go?" Qu Yan Qing's face became cold as she was a little angry because of his stubbornness. "Even if you go there, what will change? The situation of the Endless Sea is very complicated right now, and the Yang family cannot help you with anything. So, why do you want to go there? With your potential, after ten years, you will definitely set foot on the summit. By that time, when you come back to the Endless Sea, who can deal with you?"

"I have made up my mind." Shi Yan smiled while staring at her.

"You seem to care about me a lot, eh?"

Qu Yan Qing's face stiffened. She growled, "I just don't want to see you die early. If you are alive, perhaps you can do something for the Endless Sea in the future. Maybe like Ouyang Lou Shuang and Xia Jing Hou, you can intimidate Demon Kings and the Yamas and prevent the Endless Sea from falling into the pagans' hands."

"I don't care what the Endless Sea will become," Shi Yan said with a cold voice. "Tell me, how can I go to the Barren City?"

Qu Yan Qing pondered a little bit, gritted her teeth, and didn't look at him as she seemed to be in a rage.

Shi Yan was bewildered. "A woman like you really has feelings for me?" Shi Yan was confused.

Qu Yan Qing was very angry and finally said, "The Yang family has a Transfer Formation that connects with the Barren City. It's on the Immortal Island. Currently, the Immortal Island has become the operating house of the three great Yamas. If you go there, you will die. Actually, you can dive into the sea. The Barren City's right underneath the Kyara Sea. You just need to go to the ocean floor to find it. If you find it, it means you have to die. I don't want to give you any more advice."

Shi Yan was not angry, but smiled instead. "That's good. I didn't expect to see you when I come here. Well, it seems that you're still very kind. If I destroy the Heaven Lake Divine Land one day, I will spare your life."

"Arrogant!"

"Ha ha ha, I'm always arrogant. Goodbye, beautiful lady. Either reporting or not reporting my presence here is up to you. I'm not afraid of the Heaven Lake Divine Land people sending someone to kill me."

"I'm not that bored."

"See you later then."

Shi Yan didn't linger. He burst into laughter and then suddenly reached out to touch her face. He even gave a compliment before leaving.

Getting out of the three-story house, Shi Yan turned into a bunch of light, flying away.

Qu Yan Qing sat motionlessly on the spot. Her beautiful eyes glinted with a confused beam of light, and her face gradually reddened.

Half a day later, she shook her head while her hand caressing the cheek that Shi Yan had touched. She whispered, "Live well. I still haven't settled things with you... Such an annoying guy!"

After leaving the Black Sea, Shi Yan went to the Kyara Sea alone. When he arrived at the border of the Kyara Sea, he saw the dark yin aura hovering in the sky, and his face became gloomy.

After he had looked for a moment, his body suddenly shone as he used the Dark Light Shield to cover his entire body. He then sneaked into the sea.

The sea water was incredibly blue. Some fish swam back and forth from time to time, and the seaweed was shining green. The submarine world was magnificently colorful and mesmerizing.

While he was diving all the way down, the water pressure continued to increase, pressing on the Dark Light Shield.

The Dark Light Shield flashed with a dark light and wasn't deformed by the water pressure yet. Many flows of Profound Qi slowly poured into the Dark Light Shield's halo. The halo of the Dark Light Shield gradually spread out, allowing him to move his limbs and use his various forces.

Although he was in the sea, the stars in the sky could still penetrate his body.

His body was enveloped by the Dark Light Shield, but was still able to feel the star power's injection. Shi Yan closed his eyes,

immersing his mind in the Star Martial Spirit.

After his mind had immersed in it, it was like he had just entered the endless sea of stars and slowly ran in the star domain. There seemed to be numerous stars around, that were twinkling and releasing the immortal star power.

He seemed to turn into a minute dot of starlight that was moving in the star domain. When he realized the mystery of the stars sea, he immediately forgot his body and threw himself into them completely.

Comprehending the Star Martial Spirit was a slow process, and he should keep trying his best to be persistent in cultivating, so that he could grasp the insight of the realm.

At the Sky Realm, he had to comprehend the true meaning of Heaven and Earth to make his realm sublimate and enter the new level.

In the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, he had soon known that the Sky Realm warriors were very different from the Nirvana Realm warriors. It was all because of the understanding and mastering the Intent Domain.

With the three martial spirits, the Immortal Martial Spirit, the Petrification Martial Spirit, and the Star Martial Spirit, as long as he could get the truth from one of these three, his spirit could sublimate, facilitating him to take another step to the new level.

Understanding this, he considered these three martial spirits' intent domains his next main goal.

Through what Cai Yi and others had told him, he knew that because his martial spirits didn't go through an arduous cultivation, it was more difficult for him to comprehend the true meaning of the Intent Domain than ordinary people.

That was why he didn't dare to be lazy. Whenever he had some free time, he would immediately comprehend the mystery of the



Intent Domain.

Since he came back from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, he had continued to study the Immortal Martial Spirit more, often using a sharp instrument to cut his fingers, using his mind to recover his body through the comprehension of the Immortal Martial Spirit and understanding its mystery.

However, because his knowledge of the Immortal Martial Spirit was not too deep, he didn't comprehend much, and it seemed to be difficult to grasp the key factors.

He didn't know what the effect of the immortal blood was after all. This time, when he came back to the Endless Sea to find the predecessors of the Yang family, his main purpose was to ask for the true mystery of the Immortal Martial Spirit.

Ever since he had come back to the Endless Sea, Yang Tian Emperor seemed to have been concerned about him and also given him a lot of help.

In this difficult occasion, he felt that he should be together with the Yangs, contributing his small part to help the family. Moreover, he had admired Yang Tian Emperor for a long time, but had never seen him with his own eyes before, which was a regret.

He always felt that he needed to meet Yang Tian Emperor once to ask him about the effect of the immortal blood.

Immersing in the comprehension of the Immortal Martial Spirit and the Dark Light Shield, he didn't know how much time had passed and continued sinking into the sea slowly.

Shi Yan suddenly woke up.

Within the Dark Light Shield, he opened his eyes and frowned. He looked ahead, revealing a surprised face.

A group of strange raced beings with humans-like upper bodies and snake tails was holding knives and forks, going back and forth on patrol to guard the sea ahead. They were approaching him.

A woman was taking the lead. Her upper body was moving gracefully, exposing mesmerizingly slender curves, emerald green eyes, and a delicate face. Her lower body was a snake tail with bluish-gray circular patterns. She was swaying her tail from side to side with a fast speed, which made her look like a bunch of green lights moving in the sea.

The five alien race men with snake bodies behind her were all warriors who knew how to use Heaven and Earth energy. They all had the cultivation base of the Earth Realm, holding forks and knives and revealing ruthless eyes.

The Naga Tribe!

# Chapter 433: The Naga Tribe

---

Just with a quick look, Shi Yan immediately recognized the identity of these pagans.

The Naga Tribe was one of the Sea Tribes. They had a human torso and a snake body, living in the seabed all year-round. But they also visited the land from time to time.

The Naga Tribe liked to cultivate in cold, miasmal places. They never had a good feeling for the human race. When they met a human on the ocean floor, they always provoked and attacked first.

As far as he had known, the Naga Tribe seemed to have a good relationship with the Yang family. The current matriarch of the Naga Tribe was a woman called Li Sha, who seemed to have an equivocal relationship with Yang Tian Emperor.

That year, when Yang Tian Emperor was still young, he had made a tour around the seabed and saved Li Sha's life.

The fact that the Yang family could firmly set their feet in the Barren City had something related to the Naga Tribe. Even the Transfer Formation which connected the Yang family and the Barren City had been built with the strong support of the Naga Tribe.

Members of the Naga Tribe were united and extremely hostile. As long as someone offended them, they would inevitably remember in their hearts and always think about revenge.

Sea Tribes included many races, and the Naga Tribe was a powerful one among them. Their strength was intimidating, and they didn't lack high-class warriors. The matriarch of the Naga Tribe, Li Sha, seemed to be a Spirit Realm warrior with exceptional powers. All Naga Tribe members respected her.

A series of information related to the Naga Tribe continuously

crossed his mind. He then instantly set up a plan for dealing with them.

That graceful woman led a line of six Nagas. They all were at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, holding long, silver spears with blue serpentine patterns, which had strange green fluctuations stirring up from time to time. They were like a stream flowing next to the spears and producing wonderful sounds.

The Nagas slowly approached with caution. The woman taking the lead suddenly raised the long silver spear in her hand when she was ten meters away from Shi Yan.

The five Nagas, who were at the Earth Realm, suddenly all stopped.

"Human, did you see a Silver-horned Electric Eel?" The Naga Tribe woman coldly looked at him, slightly raised the corner of her cherry mouth and spat out sound waves.

"Silver-horned Electric Eel?" Shi Yan was surprised, shaking his head, "Never met before."

Silver-horned Electric Eels were level six demonic beast in the sea. They could release a strong electric current, acting and moving quickly in the seabed, which made them harder to be captured and killed. Silver-horned Electric Eels also had a demon crystal, a useful cultivating material in refining weapons. In Barren City, the horn of a Silver-horned Electric Eel was quite precious.

"You didn't see it?" The Naga Tribe woman suspiciously looked at him with cold eyes and grunted, "It's clear that the Silver-horned Electric Eel came towards your direction. How come you didn't see it? Or you did see it but don't want to tell me?"

The Naga Tribe members were very suspicious and lacked trust in the human race, as they always believed that human race was cunning and evil. It was only because Yang Tian Emperor had

saved Li Sha, the current matriarch of the Naga Tribe, that the Yang family could have a good relationship with the Nagas.

"I didn't see it." Shi Yan smiled and said with a friendly attitude. "If I saw it, I would tell you. I don't need to deceive you."

"Fei Ya, this brat isn't serious. He's obviously not a good human. He must have seen that Silver-horned Electric Eel but doesn't want to tell us." A feeble, thin and young Naga Tribe man that looked like a bamboo stick with a yellow face grunted and exposed his unfriendly attitude.

The woman who led those Nagas also coldly looked at Shi Yan while her eyes slightly lit up, as she seemed to be guessing his true realm.

Since Shi Yan had come down here, he always hid his real strength and made himself look only at the Third Sky of Earth Realm.

When those Nagas realized that his realm was only at the Earth Realm, they looked down on him as they thought that with their cultivation base, they could easily capture or chop him off.

"If you don't tell the truth, don't blame us for having no mercy." Fei Ya's face became cold. While talking, she raised her hand, and her long silver spear suddenly emitted a bunch of cold lights. As soon as those lights burst out, the seawater instantly splashed everywhere with an extraordinary power.

Shi Yan calmly looked at her, didn't show any fear and smiled. "I am one of the Yangs."

"The Yangs?" Fei Ya's face loosened a little bit. She said, "How do you prove it?"

Shi Yan didn't say anything, stretched out his hand but didn't perform the Petrification Martial Spirit. Instead, he hauled out a small sword and cut his finger.

The Immortal Martial Spirit then started to exert its effect.

Blood stopped bleeding from that cut. Under the magical effect of the Immortal Martial Spirit, the wound gradually healed and disappeared without a trace.

"Immortal Martial Spirit?" The six Nagas all exclaimed simultaneously.

Fei Ya hesitated a little bit before saying, "You are the Yang family's descendant?"

Shi Yan nodded.

"What's your name?"

"Shi Yan."

"Shi Yan?" Fei Ya revealed a suspicious face, turned around looking at the other five behind her and then asked, "Have you ever heard whether the Yang family has someone with this name?"

Those five people shook their heads.

"If you are one of the Yangs, why is your surname Shi?" Fei Ya grunted and didn't seem to believe him.

"I have the Immortal Martial Spirit. Do I need to prove anything else?" Shi Yan froze for a moment and couldn't help but feel troubled. He shook his head and said, "Never mind. It's up to you if you want to believe it or not. I'm too lazy to talk much. I just want to know the exact direction of Barren City. Can you tell me?"

He just knew that Barren City was right underneath the Kyara Sea, which was vast. Thus, without the exact direction, it was not easy to find the city.

From the seabed, it was impossible to see the sun and stars, and hence, it was hard to identify the direction. If he continued to look around, he would waste a lot of his star power.

Of course, that was not the result that he wanted to see.

"What are you going to the Barren City for?" Fei Ya asked.

"I have something to do there," Shi Yan beamed a faint smile. "Could you tell me the location of the Barren City?"

"It's very far from here." Fei Ya thought for a while. "The Yangs are now staying in the center of Barren City. They aren't in good condition. So, even if you go there, you will not have any support. I have heard that the Demon King trapped Yang Tian Emperor, and the Kyara Sea is also occupied by the Dark Dwellers. The Yang family has been declining; their business is worse than ever. Their role to the Sea Tribes is less important, and thus, they are not respected as much as before."

Shi Yan was very clear about this.

Until now, the Yang family had been gathered in the Kyara Sea and had transported cultivating materials from the land to Barren City through the Transfer Formation. They exchanged those cultivation materials that couldn't be found on the seabed for precious spiritual jade stones of the Sea Tribes. That made both parties happy.

The reason why the Yang family could hold power in the Endless Sea was that they could get a significant amount of cultivation materials from the Fourth Demon Area that the Endless Sea didn't have. On the other hand, they also relied on the trade with the Sea Tribes, making a lucrative profit from the Sea Tribes' unique materials.

The Sea Tribes, through the Yangs, also got precious cultivation materials that had never appeared in the seabed. Because of this reason, the Yang family's position was secure in Barren City.

However, it was now different from the past. The Yang family had been evacuated from the Kyara Sea to Barren City, without bringing a lot of materials. Hence, it was difficult for the Sea Tribes to continue getting the cultivating resources on the sea surface through the Yang family. Moreover, the news that Yang Tian Emperor was being confined by the Demon King was spread

out in Barren City, which made the Yang family's position in Barren City gradually change.

It looked like because Yang Tian Emperor was captured, the attitude of the Naga Tribe towards the Yang family also changed subtly.

Shi Yan pondered on the Naga Tribe's attitude.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.

Just when he was tired of Fei Ya and the others, an intense electric current suddenly came from behind him.

Two ten-meters tall Silver-horned Electric Eels stormed out from the sea water. These two Silver-horned Electric Eels had a beautiful halo radiating from the horn on their heads, while the dazzling lightning burst out towards Shi Yan.

"How come there're two of them?"

The thin, feeble Naga, who didn't have a good attitude towards Shi Yan earlier, couldn't help but squeal as soon as he saw the two Silver-horned Electric Eels appear.

His cry was ear-splitting, extremely unpleasant to ears, like the sound of a saber hacking on a stone.

Shi Yan felt irritated on hearing it. He couldn't help cover his ears, as he was repugnant to the Naga's sharp sound.

As for the two level six sea beasts, he didn't mind of them. With his current realm, these kind of level six beasts were nothing to him.

The Naga Tribe people chased after the two Silver-horned Electric Eels. If it were only one of them, with Fei Ya's Nirvana Realm, together with the other five who were at the Third Sky of Earth Realm, dealing with one Silver-horned Electric Eel was not very difficult.

But if there were two of them, the situation was completely



different.

Fei Ya could only cope with one Silver-horned Electric Eel. Meanwhile, even if the other five had united, they would not be able to kill one Silver-horned Electric Eel. Once the two Silver-horned Electric Eels joined each other and took on Fei Ya as their target, this group of Nagas would not be able to resist.

Shi Yan didn't care about it. Seeing the two Silver-horned Electric Eels releasing the electric currents and quickly rushing towards him, he frowned slightly and actively avoided them.

As soon as his figure moved, he was like lightning, flying one hundred meters away from Fei Ya and the others.

Among the two Silver-horned Electric Eels, one had blood stains on its body. It seemed to have been injured from the attack of Fei Ya's group. After calling for help from the other, it bluntly stared at Fei Ya's group. They ignored Shi Yan, crossing him to rush to Fei Ya and the others.

Lightning weaved. The electric net shrouded the six of them, and they quickly fell into a difficult situation.

Shi Yan stood aside with an indifferent face. He didn't say a word, looking at those six Nagas who were being chased by the Silver-horned Electric Eels, without any intention of intervention.

Fei Ya could deal with one Silver-horned Electric Eel only. She flung the spear on her hand. Silver lights scattered everywhere, stabbing the Silver-horned Electric Eel mercilessly.

As the other five Nagas were struck by the electric currents from the other Silver-horned Electric Eel, they constantly screamed ear-splittingly. Shi Yan's ears were discomforted. He was considering if he should leave this place or not.

"Help us. We can take you to Barren City later." Fei Ya suddenly shouted. Her face looked worried, and it didn't have the previous trace of arrogance anymore.

Shi Yan smiled, shaking his head.

# Chapter 434: I like a woman who smiles at me!

---

Fei Ya's vision was extraordinary.

Just seeing Shi Yan move one hundred meters in an instant, she immediately realized his real realm. He just didn't show his strength yet.

She was aware that when Shi Yan met them, he didn't show any fear, which meant he was not afraid of them.

She also knew that her race's reputation was not good. As long as ordinary human warriors met them, they all stayed away and didn't dare to be near them.

When Shi Yan saw them, he didn't avoid them, but kept his calm face while talking to them naturally. He was not afraid of them at all.

Because of this discovery, she didn't dare to act rashly towards Shi Yan. When the Silver-horned Electric Eels appeared, Shi Yan instantly teleported one hundred meters away, which made her more confident that Shi Yan's cultivation base was exceptional. That was why she decided to call for his help.

However, Shi Yan refused.

The Naga Tribe was famous for remembering hatred as well as gratitude. As long as someone did the Nagas favor, they would definitely repay that person.

Having a good relationship with the Naga Tribe was always a dream of human warriors.

Fei Ya proactively threw an olive branch (a symbol of peace - TL) to him. With her understanding of human warriors, she felt that Shi Yan would immediately agree to help her kill the Silver-horned Electric Eels without any hesitation so that they would repay his

help.

However, Shi Yan shook his head, refusing the request without any hesitation. It was hard for Fei Ya to accept.

"You!" Fei Ya shouted, revealing a darkened face and quickly flung the silver spear that instantly left some traces on the Silver-horned Electric Eel's body. Seemed like she did that to vent out her anger.

Her realm was out of the ordinary, and thus, it was not a problem in dealing with the Silver-horned Electric Eels.

The five Nagas were different. Under the Silver-horned Electric Eel's attack, they were struggling to resist.

A bunch of lightning interweaved quickly, forming a vast electric net that shrouded those five guys. With the Earth Realm, when the spears in their hands were lifted up, the lightning instantly struck them, and they were agitated immediately, showing a painful expression.

As the Silver-horned Electric Eel was a level six beast with mighty strength, it didn't get injured yet. The lightning that it released was even sharper than that of the other Silver-horned Electric Eel.

Under the attack of that Silver-horned Electric Eel's lightning, the five Nagas gradually couldn't resist it anymore.

One of them was charred by the lightning. His movement was getting slower, and thus, he would probably be killed first.

"What do you want?" Fei Ya was worried at heart, as she didn't know what Shi Yan really wanted. "As long as you help us deal with the Silver-horned Electric Eels, I will satisfy your requirements."

Humans were shameless. They looted when the house was burned, and that was what they were good at in her mind. Fei Ya secretly gritted her teeth. Flames of anger burned up in her heart as she regretted that she couldn't handle him first.

"What do I want?" From one hundred meters away, Shi Yan hesitated a little bit and then said with a smile. "If your attitudes were better earlier, with the relationship between the Yang family and the Naga Tribe, I would have helped you deal with these two Silver-horned Electric Eels."

After pausing for a moment, Shi Yan looked around and continued. "Well, I'm not feeling good right now. I don't need anything from you; I just don't want to help. I'm dissatisfied with your attitude. Although the Yang family is now in difficulty, their future will still be glorious in the Endless Sea. The Naga Tribe has such a short vision. You guys don't want to extend the relation with the Yang family. Well then, I will just step aside watching the scene."

Fei Ya was angry to the point that she wanted to vomit blood.

When Shi Yan dared to speak like that, he obviously had the confidence to deal with the Silver-horned Electric Eels. He apparently had the ability but didn't want to take any action. Instead, he just stood aside and taunted her, which made her angry to death.

Under the attack of one Silver-horned Electric Eel, the five male Nagas couldn't resist anymore.

One of them had his tail electrocuted and twisted. He shook constantly; all his movements were powerless. If this situation kept going this way, he would soon be killed.

"What do you want me to do to satisfy you?" Fei Ya gritted her teeth with hatred in her heart, but had to restrain her feeling. She looked at Shi Yan and begged him.

"I don't know." Shi Yan laughed without any concern and intention of rescuing them.

"I'm sorry. We should not have treated you like that earlier. I promise that after this, I will treat you as a friend of the Naga Tribe

and will not let anything like that happen again."

Seeing her fellows falling into a difficult situation, Fei Ya couldn't help but bow her head and beg him.

Shi Yan dragged a smile out of his mouth, revealing a happy face.

"Can you be more sincere and less deceitful?"

Fei Ya was in rage but didn't dare to show it out. Instead, she tried to restrain her anger and showed him a bright face. "Help us a little bit, I beg you. I promise I will repay it. Thank you in advance."

"That's right." Shi Yan burst into laughter with a refreshing look and then spoke up loudly, "I like a woman who smiles at me. I don't like the one who is cold and arrogant. Hahaha, if you treated me well earlier, we would not have had this misunderstanding, and you would not be this awkward. Hmm, all women are the same. If they're not in difficulty, they will not stop with that cr\*ppy attitude."

After talking, he slowly moved to the five Naga guys.

They were in a dangerous situation, and if Shi Yan delayed taking action, they would probably have to suffer a lot.

One of the five guys was electrocuted. His body shriveled without any energy and floated up on the sea.

The Silver-horned Electric Eel suddenly stormed forwards, opening its mouth, which was like a blood basin. It seemed to about to swallow that Naga.

At that moment, Shi Yan appeared in front of the Silver-horned Electric Eel instantly.

He clasped his hands, and his palms were filled with splendid lights. A bunch of star lights suddenly flew out, and under his handprint, the starlight gradually condensed into a Northern Dipper Arrow.

A bunch of bright stars rode on the Northern Dipper Arrow while the starlight flashed dazzlingly and surged strongly.

Swoosh.

The Northern Dipper Arrow shot out.

The sharp Northern Dipper Arrow flew out, dragging along blazing lights. Those seven stars also turned into a stream of lights, attaching to the Northern Dipper Arrow to enhance the power of the Northern Dipper Arrow.

Such extremely sharp arrow like that had never appeared before. It could even break the stones and pierce the sea.

Boom.

The Northern Dipper Arrow shot out towards the Silver-horned Electric Eel. A bunch of electric lights instantly went into the Silver-horned Electric Eel's head.

The Silver-horned Electric Eel had no reaction; its ten-meter-tall body sank into the sea.

Right after that, many dots of starlight blinked from its body. The starlight slowly drilled out like sharp sabers, and the Silver-horned Electric Eel's body suddenly twinkled with numerous stars.

The starlight slowly moved according to the star trajectory.

The trajectory of the Northern Dipper appeared. Dazzling starlight flashed, and the Silver-horned Electric Eel's body suddenly split up, with blood splashing everywhere.

When the Northern Dipper Arrow pierced into the Silver-horned Electric Eel, the star power decomposed the beast's body.

A kind of immortal Star Intent Domain attached to the top of that Northern Dipper Arrow continued to condense after the Silver-horned Electric Eel's body had been decomposed.

Each dot of starlight that flew out from that Silver-horned Electric Eel's body had condensed in the sea water once again.

Another Northern Dipper Arrow emerged.

The star power gathered and didn't scatter, and the Intent Domain was as sharp as before. The new Northern Dipper Arrow was formed and shot out again.

At this time, this Northern Dipper Arrow flew towards the other Silver-horned Electric Eel.

Nothing was out of expectation.

The Silver-horned Electric Eel didn't have enough time to hide. The Northern Dipper Arrow hit it right in the middle of its head. After the arrow went into the beast's head, the star power immediately burst out and killed this Silver-horned Electric Eel.

In only five seconds, the two Silver-horned Electric Eels, the two level six beasts, were struck to death by Shi Yan's Northern Dipper Arrow that contained the Star Intent Domain. They both were split into blood clots.

Fei Ya and the other five male Nagas were all stunned, while their eyes were flooded with fear.

"If you had a better attitude, you would not have wasted too much time like this." Shi Yan beamed a faint smile and said calmly. "They're just two Silver-horned Electric Eels. I can kill them easily."

Fei Ya wanted to question Shi Yan, but she now felt that her throat was dry and choked. She finally gave up that intent and just silently looked at him, hesitated for a while before asking, "What is your real realm?"

"Sky Realm."

Fei Ya's face changed in fear.

The five Naga guys also look frightened. They subconsciously held the weapons tightly in their hands and seemed very cautious.

"Well, you guys want to take action?" Shi Yan shook his head and



said bluntly. "I'm afraid that the six of you are not enough to deal with me. Although there're a lot of high-class warriors in the Naga Tribe, those whose realm is below the Sky Realm should not act rashly. Or else, they will have to suffer a great loss."

"As I've said, you are a friend of the Naga Tribe." Fei Ya said with a serious face. "We'll treat you as a friend and will be honest with you. We will not harm our friend."

The other five Naga guys nodded continually and looked much more serious than before.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded with them. "You all want to get the silver horns and demon crystals. They're all floating on the sea now. So why are still staying dumbstruck here? Go get 'em."

"You have killed these two Silver-horned Electric Eels. So, the silver horns and the demon crystals belong to you," Fei Ya said.

"I don't need them." Shi Yan shook his head and waved his hand. "You guys just go and take 'em. Otherwise, when they all go far away, it's more troublesome to find them."

The eyes of the six of them lit up.

"Really?" Fei Ya asked.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded.

Fei Ya hesitated for a moment and then revealed a sincere smile. "You are actually not a b\*stard."

# Chapter 435: Changes of Temperature in human emotions

---

After getting Shi Yan's permission, the eyes of the six Naga Tribe people couldn't help but light up. Fei Ya looked at him with a slight smile.

Silver-horned Electric Eels were level six beasts, so its silver horn and demon crystals were both valuable. These six Nagas had consumed a lot of their strength to kill the Silver-horned Electric Eels to collect the silver horns and demon crystals.

The value of the two silver horns and demon crystals was out of their expectation. They thought that when Shi Yan killed the Silver-horned Electric Eels, he would take these valuable cultivating materials for his own. They had never expected that Shi Yan didn't really care about them.

"If you guys want to get those silver horns and demon crystals, you'd better hurry. Otherwise, when they sink into the sea, you will have to spend a lot of energy to find them." Shi Yan looked around and didn't seem to have greed for the silver horns and demon crystals.

The six Nagas stared at Shi Yan for a while, and after being sure that Shi Yan didn't seem to care about those things, they excitedly went to get them.

Not long after that, these six Nagas had the two silver horns and two demon crystals in their hands. They looked at Shi Yan with much friendlier attitude.

"He isn't a bad guy. He doesn't take our things." Fei Ya thought for a while and said, "Well, anyway, we have to go to Barren City. We will take you there. Is it okay?"

Shi Yan smiled and nodded. "That's good."

Fei Ya carefully stashed away the silver horns and demon crystals

while secretly thinking what price she should offer for these silver horns and demon crystals when they arrive at Barren City.

Making a proper calculation, Fei Ya was in a good mood. She led the way and signaled Shi Yan to keep up.

Barren City was on the seabed underneath Kyara Sea. Human warriors who didn't know its location would need at least half a month to find it.

As the Naga Tribe stayed in the seabed all year-round, they obviously knew the location of Barren City. With these six Naga Tribe people leading the way, Shi Yan was happy.

The six of them were leading in front, and Shi Yan was following them leisurely.

After knowing Shi Yan's terrible strength, those six Nagas treated him more respectfully, and no longer showed their arrogance. No matter where it was, everyone respected the Sky Realm warriors. In the Sea Tribes, they were even considered masters.

Even more important was Shi Yan's young age.

"Are you really one of the Yangs?" Fei Ya was very curious. She suddenly slowed down, turned her head around while glancing at Shi Yan and said with suspicion, "Seems like none of the Yang family's masters have the surname 'Shi.' We know the three great Asura Kings with the Sky Realm. You are still very young, so you cannot be one of them. You said that you are the Yang family's descendant. So why haven't we heard of your name?"

Shi Yan smiled and casually explained, "I came to the Endless Sea not long ago. I had lived in the other area before, so it's understandable that you have not heard of my name. If I can see the Yang family people in Barren City, they will prove it to you."

Fei Ya's complexion looked weird. She wanted to say something but just stopped.

Shi Yan suddenly asked, "Did Yang Mu and his fellows encounter any trouble in Barren City? Please tell me if you can."

Fei Ya didn't reply right away but frowned and contemplated. After a long while, she gently nodded and said, "This time, the Yangs are really not good..."

"What happened?"

"Since the information about Yang Tian Emperor being confined was spread out from the Endless Sea, many tribes of the Sea Tribes in Barren City, who used to have a good relationship with the Yangs, now no longer have a friendly attitude towards them." After pausing for a while, Fei Ya continued, "Including the Naga Tribe."

Shi Yan was startled a little bit and then nodded. "The Kyara Sea is now occupied, and until now, the Yang family has been transporting the inland materials to Barren City in the seabed through the Transfer Formation in the Kyara Sea. But now, since the Yang family has declined, apparently, they will no longer have a lot of materials to deliver to the seabed. I can imagine that point."

Fei Ya dragged a smile out of her mouth, contemplated for a while and continued. "Not only the Sea Tribes that live in Barren City. In fact, there are many human warriors as well. Many of them committed crimes in the Endless Sea and offended big forces everywhere. Thus, they don't dare to stay in the Endless Sea and chose to go to Barren City."

"Oh?!"

"In Barren City, there are a lot of fierce warriors who set their own camps, occupying one area. That year, when the Yang family was still strong, those people always respected and treated the Yangs well. Previously, the Yang family maintained the order of Barren City."

Fei Ya said with a serious face. "Barren City is very suitable for human life. Many Sea Tribes members can also temporarily stay in

there. The initial purpose of building Barren City was for the human race. That place has a humid atmosphere, and it has water as a defensive barrier outside. The human warriors stay there to do business with the Sea Tribes.

"On the opposite, the Sea Tribes members who exchange cultivating materials do not stay in Barren City. Most of us cannot leave sea for a long time. Although Barren City is wet and humid, and we can stay there temporarily, we can't spend too much time hanging in there. Most of our Sea Tribes members stay on the outskirts of Barren City."

Shi Yan didn't know much about Barren City. Now, when Fei Ya told him in detail about it, he really focused and listened carefully.

"The Yang family maintained laws in Barren City before. Most of the humans in Barren City are from the Endless Sea and are not really the good ones. After coming to the City, they were no better and often got involved in many fights there. The Yangs formerly protected Barren City, maintaining the order of the City, terrifying and preventing those warriors from acting rashly.

"However, now, it's not the same. After the Yang family's crisis, small forces that relied on the Yang family get more involved in battles, making Barren City mixed up. The Yang family is no longer able to manage them, so they can only ignore them.

"Sea Tribes members actually don't care about human race's involvement in those battles. As long as they can give us enough cultivating materials, it's good enough, and we don't need to care about their matters. As the Yang family loses control, Barren City becomes more chaotic, and many fights continuously take place there."

Fei Ya frowned, as she didn't seem to be happy with the current situation of Barren City either.

"How about the Yangs? What do you mean by saying the Yang family is not in a good condition?" Shi Yan asked.

"The Yang family seems to stash a lot of cultivating materials in Barren City. I am not sure if it's true." Fei Ya did not answer but asked him back.

Shi Yan was stunned, contemplated for a while, and then nodded and said with a gloomy face. "Maybe it's true."

That year, when the Yang family moved out from the Immortal Island in the Kyara Sea, they transported a lot of materials to the Fourth Demon Area. There were also some materials that were delivered to this Barren City at the bottom of the sea.

Many years after the Yang family's accumulation, even if a tiny part of the materials flowed to Barren City, for the ordinary people, the wealth was already hard to imagine.

A part of the warriors there should be aware of the news. They continually acted recklessly, provoking the dominant position of the Yang family, probably to test the family's response.

Fei Ya looked at him carefully. From a change in his eyes, she knew that he should understand the point. She then nodded and said, "What you think is right. Many warriors in Barren City are greedy for the cultivating materials that the Yang family transferred there. Those warriors continue to provoke the Yangs' position to test their reaction, to see if the Yangs are still able to suppress them or not. However, as the Yang family has no masters who came to Barren City, they can only ignore the provocation."

After pausing for a moment, Fei Ya continued, "Hence, those warriors consider the Yang family as nothing, and they are getting more bold and presumptuous. Recently, we have received the news that these people seem to have the plan to take action soon, looting the cultivating materials of the Yang family. That's why I said that the Yang family isn't in a good situation."

"The Yang family and the Sea Tribes are close. Do the Sea Tribes have the ability to stop this matter?" Shi Yan pondered and coldly looked at Fei Ya with his sharp eyes.

Fei Ya nodded without hiding her thought. "Yes. If the Sea Tribes come forward to stop it, those people will not dare to act rashly."

"You guys just want to wait and see?" Shi Yan grunted and said bluntly, "If I am not wrong, many people in the Sea Tribes are also interested in the Yang family's materials, right? Perhaps, those daring people also get a part of the support from the Sea Tribes?"

Fei Ya's face slightly changed. She didn't deny it, nodded and said, "Yes."

"How about the attitude of the Naga Tribe?"

Listening to Shi Yan's question, the faces of the other five Nagas immediately changed. They looked uneasy.

"Our matriarch wanted to protect the Yang family. However, the other races of the Sea Tribes came and secretly talked about the future of the Sea Tribes to persuade our matriarch. For the time being, our matriarch does not either accept or refuse, not putting her hands to help those who go against the Yang family."

Fei Ya hesitated for a while, sighed and said, "If Yang Tian Emperor still protected the Kyara Sea, I think that many tribes of the Sea Tribes definitely would not do that. However, since Yang Tian Emperor's situation is unknown, and the Yang family is no longer able to keep the Kyara Sea, the Yang family has lost their value for the Sea Tribes, and protecting them seems to be unnecessary. Hence, many people of the Sea Tribes have given up on the Yang family, as they assumed that it will be better for the future of Barren City."

Shi Yan coldly sneered, as he wore a gloomy visage.

# Chapter 436: A turn for the better? Shi Yan?

---

Frankly speaking, it was all because of the word ‘benefit.’

When the Yang family was still strong, they could transport a significant amount of inland cultivating materials, so all the Sea Tribes got benefits.

For this reason, even if it were in the Barren City at the bottom of the sea, the Sea Tribes determined to protect the Yang family, making the Yang family become the real leader of the City.

Since the Yang family had declined, they could no longer provide any support for the Sea Tribes. Obviously, the Sea Tribes wouldn't continue to protect the Yang family.

Not only that, because the Sea Tribes knew that the Yang family had transferred a large quantity of cultivating materials to Barren City, they even got greedy for them. So, the warriors in Barren City either secretly encouraged or supported human warriors who had evil intentions towards the Yangs.

Shi Yan was enlightened. His mind was clear about that matter.

"How many clans of the Sea Tribes no longer trust the Yang family? And, how many clans are neutral? How many still want to get the Yang family's materials?" After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan suddenly asked.

Fei Ya beamed a faint smile and shook her head, "This depends on what you observe by yourself. I am a member of the Sea Tribe anyway, so I cannot help you. I can only say that the Snakeman Clan do not fish in troubled water. Our matriarch even wanted to stop other warriors, but we are outnumbered, and thus can only be neutral, not taking any sides."

"It's not bad when you remain neutral." Shi Yan nodded, but his attitude couldn't be said to be friendly. "It seems that no matter where it is, there are always some bad people with a short vision. I



come to Barren City this time to help the Yang family to re-establish the order of Barren City, making some people more obedient."

The six Snakeman Clan people were stunned for a moment. They looked at him strangely as they didn't seem to be very optimistic about him.

"Although you have a Sky Realm cultivation base, it doesn't seem to be realistic if you alone want to revitalize the Yang family's glory."

"Wait and see." Shi Yan coldly said with an arrogant voice.

Fei Ya and the other five seemed to restrain their feelings, revealing ridiculing eyes. Apparently, they didn't think that Shi Yan could have that ability.

Shi Yan didn't talk much, furrowed his brows and kept silent. His eyes flashed up with cold lights, while his face cracked a brutal smile.

...

In Barren City at the bottom of the sea...

That was a city with surrounding barriers that prevented water from flooding in; also, it was filled with a heavy humidity. A large number of human warriors stayed in the city.

This city had different business alliances and was divided into five areas, the East, the South, the West, the North, and the Central. In Barren City, the buildings were made of hard stones and some colorful corals, scattering mesmerizing lights and looking extremely luxurious.

The barriers above Barren City shined with lights year-round, making the city always bright even without the sun, moon, and stars.

In each of the five business areas, there were a large number of

human warriors. Big shops, streets with a variety of stalls that sold colorful cultivating materials, jade stones, spiritual pellets, ancient books, secret treasures, everything one could look for was available.

Many Sea Tribe people stayed in Barren City as well. They had a lot of cultivating materials found on the seabed, which they either brought to Barren City to sell or exchange them with human warriors for other highly valuable materials.

This was a huge multiracial trading place.

In the past, the Yang family had maintained the order in these old areas in the city. Human warriors who came to Barren City to sell their materials needed to have the Yang family's permission to get in, and also had to pay a certain fee on time.

The Sea Tribe members, on the other hand, were not subjected to this restriction.

Any tribe of the Sea Tribes could freely travel in Barren City and didn't have to pay the fee to the Yang family.

In this city, the Yangs had a big complex of buildings made of shining stones and colorful corals. They were not only rigid, but also extraordinarily luxurious. This showed how powerful the Yangs were in Barren City.

Many businesses were originally set up in the complex of the Yang family, including for a variety of cultivating materials that could not be found on the seabed. That was the place for different Sea Tribes members to come and find valuable materials for themselves.

Big businesses all happened in the place.

If Sea Tribe warriors wanted some precious cultivating materials, as long as they paid enough deposits, the Yang family would search for them on the land. In return, they also obtained other equivalent cultivating resources from the Sea Tribes.

Through this kind of business, the Yang family got many rare treasures of the seabed. Once these treasures were transported to the Kyara Sea, they would be distributed through the Yang family's channel and sold to the Cao family, the Martial Spirit Palace, and the Evil Wonderland. In the end, the Yangs got huge profits from those business affairs.

The fact that the Yang family could become the most prominent force in the Endless Sea and have good businesses in Barren City was substantially associated with the Sea Tribes' trust for the Yangs. They made the Yang family become their connection with the Endless Sea. Because of that, they maintained a good relationship with the Yang family, as well as supported the Yang family's dominating status in Barren City, accepting their management towards human warriors.

This situation had continued and only changed after the Yang Tian Emperor was imprisoned.

...

In the center of Barren City.

In the Yang family's complex.

A beautiful building made of coral that used to be a busy trading market was now empty. None of the Sea Tribes went there to find unique cultivating materials anymore.

Since the Yang family withdrew from the Kyara Sea, this business place was gradually shut down, as the Yang family no longer had enough cultivating materials to sell, nor continued to buy precious items that the Sea Tribes got from the seabed.

The Yangs always stayed hidden in that beautiful complex, and rarely went out, as if they had all sunk in there.

Over the past year, human warriors rarely came here to pay the fees and always found excuses to shirk, saying that they had no crystals at hand.

The Yang family's attitude was tough at first, and they even handled those human warriors strictly. However, after several incidents, they couldn't get any benefits and also suffered a great loss.

Gradually, the Yangs gave up on managing those human warriors' fee payment.

Therefore, more and more human warriors started to ignore the Yang family's leadership and no longer paid the fees.

Over time, those who didn't pay the fees secretly had greed for the cultivating materials that were hidden in that complex watched by the Yang family. They started to find excuses to provoke the Yangs, saying that the value of the materials that they had previously sold to the Yangs was very high, but the Yang family had given them too little rewards.

Some of them began to ask the Yangs for compensation.

...

Inside a vast building.

In a chamber, there were a variety of cultivating materials, including rare ores, submarine spiritual herbs, medicines, pellets, and even many precious treasures in the Endless Sea.

This part of the cultivating materials was only one-tenth of the amount that had been kept in the Immortal Island. When the Yang family left Immortal Island, they brought all of those materials to Barren City through the Transfer Formation.

In the chamber, a group of the Yang family warriors was checking the inventory of materials with wry faces, frowning and talking unpleasantly.

Yang Mu, Yang Zhu, Yang Xue, Yang Kei, Yang Meng, and Li Feng all stayed in there.

Four generations of the Yang family were gathering in this

chamber, looking at a large quantity of cultivating resources with worries.

Yang Zhou, Yang Zhu's father, had a cultivation base of Nirvana Realm, and was the elder of this group. He worriedly looked at the pile of materials on the floor, shook his head, and sighed unceasingly.

"Father, this part of the materials must be sent out early. If we're late, I'm afraid that they will not belong to us anymore." Yang Mu's face was cold while saying. "Many people in Barren City are aiming at these materials. Lately, they have become less and less impatient. If it continues like that, they will attack this place directly.

"Father, although there is no news yet from the trip to the Xia family, we still have to prepare in advance." Yang Zhu let out a sigh. "If the Xias can come earlier, perhaps they can scare these bastards a little bit. Unfortunately, we might not be able to wait for them to come. Hmm, if we could have either Grandpa Mo or Grandpa Li here, we would not be in this passive situation."

Mo Duan Hun and Li Mu were the two of the three great Asura Kings at the Sky Realm. They were very famous in both the Endless Sea and Barren City. Many people were afraid of these two people.

Unfortunately, there was no news from them since these two Asura Kings had entered the Fourth Demon Area.

"Grandpa let the high-class warrior sneak into the Fourth Demon Area because of the future of our family. We now temporarily suffer the humiliation, but we are waiting until the right time comes to bring the Yang family back into the sea, suppressing everyone and becoming the true leader of the Endless Sea again." Yang Zhuo looked calm while talking.

"The fact that our Great Grandpa is in the Fourth Demon Area is not an accident?" Yang Mu wryly smiled and asked.

"You should never doubt your Great Grandpa." Yang Zhuo hummed and said, "For many years, your Great Grandpa has always been waiting for a chance to let the Demon and Dark Dwellers invade the Endless Sea, which allows the Yang family to go dormant to protect our own strength and forces. When the crucial time comes, we will then come out and regain glory. Right now, the Yang family is temporarily staying low as our Great Grandpa had planned earlier. As long as we stay patient, we will have a day when the Yang family's forces dominate everything."

"But I'm afraid that it's hard to protect these materials." Yang Mu gently shook his head. "I fear that we cannot resist any longer."

"If we can resist for even only a day, we will do it." Yang Zhuo contemplated for a while before speaking with a complicated face. "That year, your Great Grandpa said that at the most difficult time, there would be a big change. So, we should be patient. No need to take action yet."

"A big change?" Yang Mu, Yang Xue, and others all looked stunned.

"Hmm," Yang Zhuo didn't seem to be so sure and said with a strange complexion. "That year, your Great Grandpa used the immortal blood to foresee Shi Yan's future. He said that Shi Yan would be a great help in the future, supporting the Yang family to enter Barren City at the bottom of the sea. Our Great Grandpa said that we should wait for his arrival when we are in the most difficult time."

Everyone was dumbstruck.

## Chapter 437: The most difficult time comes

---

"Shi Yan?" Yang Mu arched his eyebrows, showing a puzzled look as he was astonished. Yang Zhu, Yang Xue, and Li Feng, the future pillars of the Yang family, were also startled, looking at Yang Zhuo with strange faces.

"Yes, it is Shi Yan," Yang Zhuo confirmed with a nod. "That year, your Great Grandpa had foreseen that the Yang family would encounter a great change in the future, and Shi Yan would show up when the Yang family is in the most difficult time. He will help us cross the storm."

Actually, Yang Zhuo was not really sure about it, but to raise up everyone's spirits, he had to tell them the truth. However, he had no affirmation about whether it could turn out like Yang Tian Emperor's reading or not.

"Would Great Grandpa make a misreading?" Yang Zhu hesitated for a moment and then shook his head with a wry smile. "I admit that Shi Yan was exceptional. Although he hasn't been in the Endless Sea for a long time, his ability is not little. His progress is what makes people admire him. I could never believe that he could break through that fast."

After pausing for a moment, he continued. "Anyway, Shi Yan has just come to the Endless Sea for not too long a while, and his cultivation base is far lower than those who have been dominating the Endless Sea for many years. I know that he's strong, and his potential is endless. But saying that he can help us overcome the most difficult time is somehow unbelievable, isn't it?"

Yang Mu and Yang Xue also nodded, as they obviously didn't believe it and felt that Yang Zhuo's words were more to comfort their spirits.

"That year, Shi Yan and we entered the Chasm Battlefield, and before entering the next spot, we were separated. Three years

later, we got out from the battlefield and immediately came to Barren City on the seabed. We don't know what happened to him during this time, and we're not sure if he's still alive or dead. He didn't show up or come to Barren City. Hence, saying that he will appear at the most difficult time is a little bit unrealistic, isn't it?"

Li Feng knitted her eyebrows tightly, unable to help but remember Shi Yan's performance in the Chasm Battlefield. She had recognized Shi Yan's potential and knew that if he were still alive, and after such a long time of cultivation, his realm should not be below, even reaching the Nirvana Realm was possible.

She couldn't imagine that in such a short period of time, Shi Yan had crossed the Nirvana Realm and entered the Sky Realm.

With the integration of the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame, he had used the mysterious sword to cut off one arm of the Demon Master Mo Qi Ta. Moreover, he had even wakened up the Ten-thousand-year King Corpses' consciousness, making Gu Shao, Qing Ming, and the other masters of the Endless Sea lose their faces.

As the Yang family had been staying in Barren City for a long time, they basically had no connection with the Endless Sea, and thus, didn't know the situation inland.

One year ago, Shi Yan had shown his ability at the Yuanluo Sea and carried out the slaughter everywhere. However, only leaders of big forces knew about it. Since Shi Yan had humiliated Gu Shao, Yu Qin, and Qing Ming, and also cut off Mo Qi Ta's arm, the Demon Dwellers and leaders in the Endless Sea all felt disgraced.

They obviously would not want this kind of insult to be spread out, and tried to block it totally. Therefore, only a minimal number of high-level leaders had the information about Shi Yan. Ordinary warriors might not have ever heard about it.

If Yang Zhuo knew that Shi Yan had stirred up the Endless Sea like that, giving the Demon Dwellers and the masters of the



Endless Sea sleepless nights, perhaps he would have believed in Yang Tian Emperor's words more.

However, currently, they definitely would not entrust their lives to Shi Yan.

"We will take a good care of these materials." Yang Zhuo said nothing more about Shi Yan, contemplated for a while before instructing Yang Mu. "You will continue to send people out of Barren City to visit the Xia family in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area first. We'll explain them our situation here to see whether they still remember the good relation in the past and send their men here to help us stabilize the situation in Barren City."

Yang Zhuo continued, "Yang Zhu and Yang Xue, you guys instruct people of our family that they should not act recklessly in Barren City. As for the four forces that are provoking us in the city, we don't need to care about them. As long as they don't really attack here, we won't care. However, we need to pay attention to their actions. Remind our people outside. If they carry out a large-scale movement, we must know it in advance."

Yang Zhu, Yang Mu, and the others all nodded.

Yang Zhou slammed his brows together, contemplated for a moment, and said while looking at Yang Ke, "You go and see if there's any good news from the Naga Tribe. They used to have a harmonious relationship with us. If the matriarch of the Naga Tribe, Li Sha, can come out, I think that those four forces will not be too arrogant."

Yang Ke revealed dark eyes, let out a sigh and gently shook his head.

"You have nothing to say?" Yang Zhuo looked at Yang Ke and asked, "If they don't even want to show up, they should at least say something. Doesn't the matriarch Li Sha care about the relationship we had in the past?"

Yang Ke was responsible for this matter. He silently sighed hearing Yang Zhuo's question and then said, "Those who were sent there couldn't see the matriarch of the Naga Tribe. A Naga elder asked our people to leave and told them that their matriarch didn't want to see them. Since the Yang family has declined, the Naga Tribe stopped the relationship with us, and that matriarch of the Naga Tribe couldn't wait to break all connections with us. So, why should they care about our difficult situation?"

"Hmm..." Yang Zhuo looked very upset. He beamed a wry smile. "People are unexpected. The Yang family has done many things for the Sea Tribes, but when we decline, they immediately forget what we've done for them. It seems that we can't rely on the Naga Tribe."

"We can't count on anyone except for ourselves." Yang Mu wore a glum face and gritted his teeth. "Wait until one day when our Yang family revitalizes its glory, I will definitely make those people regret, teaching them what they will get when they offend the Yangs."

"No need to say these words for now. Instead, we should think about how to deal with the difficulties." Yang Zhuo waved his hand powerlessly. He depressively looked at the colorful materials in the chamber. He thought about how much effort the Yang family had spent to gather these materials, and how soon they would lose them. There seemed to be a big rock pressing on his heart, making him unable to breathe.

Tinkling tinkling.

A hanging wind chime suddenly produced a crisping sound.

Yang Zhuo and the others were startled, revealing worried faces. They stopped talking and immediately mounted the ladder to get out of the chamber.

The big conference hall of the Yang family's building complex was above the chamber. Right now, at the center of the hall, a

Yang family's deacon was standing there with a worried face.

Yang Zhuo and the others went out in line.

"Li Yu, you hastily called us to come. What happened?" Yang Zhuo looked calm, standing in the hall with a serious complexion.

"The situation is not good," Li Yu whispered while walking over, bent down and continued, "The four forces suddenly stopped the war, not fighting against each other nor competing for territory anymore. The entire Barren City has quieted down. I have received the news that the leaders of those four forces seem to begin to talk and cooperate with each other."

As soon as his words came out, the faces of the all the Yangs in the hall changed simultaneously.

In Barren City, when the Yang family still presided the situation, no other forces existed, and the warriors in Barren City all acted decently. After the Yang family declined, some high-class warriors in Barren City started to have wicked intentions, starting to fight to take control of the city.

In just a few years, many small forces appeared in Barren City. Some high-realm warriors gathered a group of extraordinary warriors to challenge the dominating status of the Yangs. They secretly confronted the Yangs and refused to pay any fees.

When challenging the authority of the Yang family, these forces also fought against each other for the control of the four major areas.

After several years of engaging in war, there were now four most influential forces in Barren City, which stayed in the eastern, western, southern, and northern areas respectively. They occupied these areas, taking taxes from the businessmen who wanted to have their protection.

These four forces took over the Yang family's dominating position. Except for the central city, these forces continuously

fought each other to occupy pieces of territory.

And so, Barren City recently became chaotic. Fighting even occurred in some business areas. After such a long war, the four forces had a deep hatred towards each other, and thus, the chance of them shaking hands was nearly impossible.

But now, they suddenly stopped fighting, so there could be only one possibility. They now shared a common interest, which was the rich cultivating materials that the Yang family was keeping.

The faces of Yang Zhuo and the others all paled. From the news that the four forces had ceased the war, the Yangs realized that something was bad.

"Only for some great interests can those four forces stop fighting and agree to cooperate with each other. Of course, their target is our cultivating materials." Yang Zhuo took a deep breath, contemplated for a moment, and then ordered immediately. "Put forth all things to defend. From now on, no one is allowed to leave. We have to operate all barriers and defensive formations we used to set up. If they dare to come in, even if we cannot resist, we have to make them pay a painful price."

Everyone's face suddenly became brutal.

The Yangs were never afraid of death. In this difficult moment, they would be even more united.

After setting the path, Yang Zhuo immediately began to prepare. On one hand, he called all the warriors outside to come back. On the other hand, he activated all defensive barriers in the buildings, readying to cope with the incoming war.

"Although these four forces have the protection of Sky Realm warriors, if we really have to fight, we will not be afraid of them," Yang Zhuo grunted, coldly sneered and said. "The Yangs can always find a way to defeat the stronger ones. Our Immortal Martial Spirit can help enhance our strength greatly. Moreover, no

matter whether it's a secret treasure or top martial techniques, we will find some defensive solution. We also have better conditions than they do. So, defeating them isn't impossible."

Yang Zhuo constantly encouraged everyone.

None of the Yang family warriors showed any fear. They all had a determined look, ready for the incoming bloody battles.

# Chapter 438: All forces join hands

---

Barren City suddenly quieted down.

The four areas of the city were often lively. Human vendors would sell all kinds of cultivation materials or members of the Sea Tribes would bring precious submarine treasures here to trade. In the shops along the streets, many silhouettes would walk back and forth while bargaining loudly.

But today was different.

The four major areas of the city were empty. Those who regularly came here to set up their stalls all hid in their homes, not daring to go out.

A few groups of human and Sea Tribe people gathered and discussed with each other, looking at the direction of the central city area from time to time with a cold countenance.

Many people had heard the rumors and seemed to know that there would be something big happening today, and that a shaking change would burst out in Barren City. They knew that after this war, the powerful force dominating Barren City for many years would collapse soon and could never stay safe and sound in this city.

Everyone was waiting for something in silence.

At noon, human warriors began to gather in the four major areas of the city. Four Sky Realm warriors were taking the lead, quietly approaching the central area.

Those four Sky Realm warriors quickly arranged their teams and kept walking ahead. More and more warriors joined them from other places of the city.

Gradually, these four Sky Realm warriors had already gathered almost eight hundred warriors with different realms and attires. Some had red ribbons tied on their cuffs, some wore small, black

caps, and the others wore blue robes, while some had their gloves on.

Just with a glance, it was easy to see a clear distinction between those four big forces.

After an hour of gathering, the four forces already had nearly eight hundred members. All of them slowly moved to the intersection in the central area of the city.

All of a sudden, everyone halted.

Immediately, the four Sky Realm warriors walked out of their teams respectively and went to the center of the crossroad. They stopped at an open-air wine shop and sat on a table, backing four different directions.

Seeing the four of them arrive, the face of the owner of the wine shop changed instantly. He didn't dare to say anything, just silently served good wine to the four of them and then bent down while moving back away from them, not daring to linger any longer.

"Ming Hai, the Yang family didn't treat you bad. That year, under the pursuit of the Gu family, you had to run all the way to Kyara Sea. Thanks to Jiao Han Yi's appearance, those pursuers finally retreated. After Jiao Han Yi suggested you join the Yang family, although you refused, he didn't say anything else and even told you that you could come to Barren City to earn a living. Still, you've made up your mind on this?"

The beautiful woman with a graceful body and a gentle voice, Jiu Lan Xin, beamed a smile and glanced at Ming Hai, who was sitting opposite her.

Ming Hai had a cultivation base of Second Sky of the Sky Realm, which was the highest realm among the four of them. He had received a favor from the Asura King Jiao Han Yi and relied on the relationship with him to cause enmity in Barren City. He was a

ruthless and cruel man, acting without caring about life or death.

That year, to take revenge for his family, he dared to kill a descendant of the Gu family. After that, the Gu family put all of their forces to capture him, chasing him all the way to Kyara Sea. When he was under their siege, Jiao Han Yi passed through by chance, and after understanding the situation, decided to help him get rid of the Gu family people and protect his life.

The reason for Jiao Han Yi to do so was that he admired Ming Hai's courage to not to be afraid of the Gu family.

After Ming Hai entered Barren City, he often boasted about this matter, fraternizing with Jiao Han Yi, making many people in Barren City mistake him for having some relation with the Yang family. Hence, people there were scared of him.

Jiu Lan Xin mentioned this matter to ridicule him, making him embarrassed.

In the past few years, Jiu Lan Xin and Ming Hai had distorted and monopolized the north area of the city, getting involved in many battles.

In the beginning, Jiu Lan Xin was always at a disadvantage, being suppressed by Ming Hai. After that, Jiu Lan Xin established a relationship with the Water Scorpion Clan, and since then, she was no longer afraid of Ming Hai, tightly controlling the north area in her hands.

When everyone united to deal with the Yangs this time, Jiu Lan Xin still remembered the hatred in the past and took this opportunity to say some mean words.

"Yes, Jiao-ge did treat me well," Ming Hai grinned. "If Jiao-ge is still alive, as long as the informant comes to send some words, I definitely will not have wicked intentions and even fight against you to protect the Yang family's interests."

Ming Hai shook his head and said with regret, "Unfortunately,



Jiao-ge's gone. I've received the news that Jiao-ge's spirit perished, and his body was occupied by Demon King Chi Yan. Hmm, such a hero could still end up with his current bad situation. Jiao has spent the essence of his whole life for the Yang family. Although he got the title of Asura King, what else did he get? He was still just a watchdog of the Yang family. At the critical time, wasn't he still sacrificed?"

"No matter what people say, Jiao Han Yi was still one of the Yangs. If he knew how you treat the Yang family now, he would probably have regretted saving you in the dwelling place of the dead," sneered Jiu Lan Xin coldly.

"Well," Ming Hai's visage looked ruthless as his eyes gazed at her coldly. "I do this because of Jiao-ge. The Yan family's done now, so I just take the things that Jiao-ge had worked hard to earn. Isn't it better than letting others abuse them? With those materials, I can enhance my strength, and one day, I will probably enter the Spirit Realm. By that time, I will remember Jiao-ge's favor, and I will find a way to take revenge for him."

Fu Hao and Yan Feng suddenly laughed.

These two were the leaders of the eastern and the southern areas respectively. They were both at the First Sky of Sky Realm. Hearing Ming Hai's clumsy reason, they couldn't help but burst into laughter.

"What are you laughing at?" Ming Hai showed a gloomy face and asked, "Is it funny?"

"Very funny," FuHao nodded steadily and bluntly said, "Bo Xun exterminated Jiao Han Yi's soul, and Chi Yan occupied his body. Ming Hai, you're saying that you want to find the Demon Kings to take revenge. You tell me if it's funny or not."

Ming Hai revealed a pernicious look but didn't continue to explain.

"I have a suggestion," Jiu Lan Xin hesitated for a moment and then suddenly said. "The one who kills Yang Zhuo can have the bigger part. How does it sound?"

As soon as her words came out, the other three people were all startled.

"Do you think you can kill Yang Zhuo?" Yu Hao frowned and coldly said. "Although Yang Zhuo is only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, everyone knows that his Immortal Martial Spirit is mighty. If the Yangs desperately involve in the battles, they can have the ability to upgrade their realm. Yang Zhuo is one of the Yang family's descendants with numerous secret treasures and top martial techniques. Hence, although he's only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm, it's not easy for you to deal with him alone. Do you really think that with the support of the Water Scorpion Clan, your strength could be improved that much?"

"I certainly don't think so," Jiu Lan Xin spouted. "I'm just worried that you guys will not put all of your strength to deal with Yang Zhuo. Although it will not be easy to defeat him, we still can suppress him. If the two of us unite and wholly put out all we have, he will not be able to resist. And of course, under the full attack of the three of us, he will obviously die. I'm just talking for the sake of everyone as I'm afraid that you will not try all best and waste a lot of time. That's why I have this proposal. What do you say?"

After listening to her, Ming Hai, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng kept silent for a while and then nodded, agreeing with her suggestion.

"Although the time is plenty, we should act soon to get those materials." Yan Feng was the most urgent one. He was the first one to stand up. "The detailed plan's unchanged. I'm responsible for the attack from the east. You guys have your own responsibilities to take care of. We will be all present in that conference hall at the time the chamber is opened. Hmm, your insiders are still good? Any problems?"

Yan Feng glared at Ming Hai.

"Absolutely fine. No problem." Ming Hai revealed a vicious smile. "Before the Yang family declined, its members were very loyal. But now, it's easy to find some insiders. Everyone aims for a better living after all. Hence, when they have a way out, they know what to choose."

"That's good." Yan Feng nodded and was the first one to leave, walking towards the Yang family's building in the east.

As soon as he moved, hundreds of warriors immediately stood up and followed him.

The other three, Ming Hai, Fu Hao, and Jiu Lan Xin sat still, drinking a few mouthfuls of wine. After that, they also stood up and left, leading their people.

In the barrelhouse, the shopkeeper slowly came out from the back with a wry smile and then cleaned up the glasses on the table, shaking his head and letting out a sigh.

"Boss, why are you shaking your head? You don't seem to like them?" A waiter came over and asked.

"Those people come here to drink and eat but never pay." The owner sighed. "They are not as good as the Yangs. Even when the Yang family was the most powerful, the Yangs always paid when they came here to eat and drink. None of the Yangs who came here to eat and drink didn't pay. As for those people, not only don't they pay, but their subordinates also come here to enjoy without paying. If it continues like this, we will not be able to stay longer in Barren City."

The waiter looked glumly. "They are too strong."

"The Yang family's much stronger than them but never breaks the rules." The shopkeeper slightly raised his voice but then immediately realized that it was not good, and quickly lowered his voice again. "After those four people have taken over the control of

the four major areas, they charge taxes much more than the Yang family did, always exploiting the merchants. They use flattery to treat the Sea Tribes but suppress the people in the city. They eventually call the shots in Barren City. Many people find it hard to live here."

"Yes. I've recently heard that a lot of people are considering leaving Barren City. Hmm, if one were without enemies in the outside world, no one would be willing to come to the bottom of the sea to reside. When the Yang family was still in their glory, the city never had wars. The Yang family protected us, not letting the Sea Tribes bully us. But now, when those four are taking control of the city, the Sea Tribes members become more arrogant. They don't respect us at all."

The young waiter frown, looking at the beautiful complex in the central area of the city and said, "I hope that the Yang family can continue to stand firmly to maintain the order of the city and that those four can't defeat them."

"It's easier said than done." The shopkeeper sighed and helplessly shook his head, thinking whether or not he should leave Barren City soon.

# Chapter 439: Strong wine grows murderous spirit

---

"Elder, bring two jugs of wine, please. The strongest ones."

A clear voice suddenly arose from a distance. A grand figure of a young man with bright eyes, black shoulder-length hair, and black clothes came over.

Behind him, six Nagas followed step by step with strange faces.

The shopkeeper showed a surprised face, looking around at the deserted streets, seeing no shop open this time. This young man seemed to be an outsider and didn't seem to have heard the rumors, not knowing that Barren City was about to have a significant change today.

"Little brother, have you just come to Barren City?" The shopkeeper looked around and quickly said with a low voice without waiting for him to come closer. "You should leave soon. This place is too close to the Yang family. You should not stay here too long."

He was afraid of the six Nagas and thus lowered his voice, as he didn't want to let the six of them hear what he said.

The young man grinned and seemed to know what the shopkeeper was scared of. He came over and sat at the table that Ming Hai, Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin had perched on earlier. After seating himself, he waved his hand, signaling the six Nagas not to come and said with a smile, "I just heard you were talking about the Yang family. Can you tell me more about it?"

The shopkeeper's face froze, and he quickly shook his head. "No, no. I didn't say anything. You must have misheard it."

"I'm one of the Yangs."

"..."

The faces of the shopkeeper and his waiter both changed into a shocked look.

"Don't be nervous. I will not disclose anything." The young man smiled and said to the waiter, "Bring me two jugs of strong wine."

The waiter looked at the shopkeeper.

The shopkeeper flashed a hesitant look, thought for a while and then nodded towards the waiter.

The waiter turned around and quickly brought over two jugs of wine, respectfully putting them on the table. He also brought a dish of beef and said, "No one would want to pretend to be the Yangs this time. Hmm, this dish is complimentary. I don't think the shopkeeper will blame me for this."

The shopkeeper sighed and nodded without saying anything further.

"You don't seem to like Ming Hai and the other people. Is it true that a lot of people in here all hope that the Yang family will take over the control of Barren City in the future? Elder, don't worry. Just tell me what you know. I will not spread it out, so you can just say it." The young man smiled, hauled out a piece of crystal and threw it to the waiter. He then sat straight, lifted the jug of wine and drank it.

The shopkeeper was surprised.

The waiter was shocked as well.

"This is too precious." The shopkeeper hurriedly came forward, wanting to snatch the crystal from the waiter's hand. He said anxiously, "These two jugs of wine are not worth this piece of crystal. Little brother, would you like to buy my barrelhouse?"

The young man burst out laughing and waved his hand. "Elder, you don't need to be too concerned. You just tell me about the situation of Barren City. I have many crystals like that. You can keep it."

The shopkeeper looked surprised, looked at him for a while, wanting to say something.

"Alright, alright. Although I'm one of the Yangs, I still care about life and death." The young man meant that the shopkeeper should not be too cautious. "You said that when the Yang family took control of Barren City, the merchants all trusted and respected them. They even helped you deal with the Sea Tribes people. Is it true?"

The shopkeeper nodded and then said, "Those four people have already occupied the four major areas of the city, doing foolish things and helping the Sea Tribes members deal with our people. Many merchants are indignant but don't dare to say anything. They are considering to leave this place. Hmm, if it weren't because we have enemies in the outside world and cannot stay in the Endless Sea, we would not have continued to stay in Barren City. Life's getting worse."

Seeing that young man was easy to talk, the waiter quickly chirped about Ming Hai and the others, gritting his teeth with an angry look as if he regretted not to be able to make those people die soon.

The young man continually nodded while listening and asking for some more details. He then waved his hand, signaling the two of them to leave.

The six Nagas came over.

"You've asked too many things. What's the use?" Fei Ya frowned. "Ming Hai and the others protect the benefits of the Sea Tribes. Hence, the Sea Tribes are naturally satisfied. They can always confront us and expel us from Barren City. Life goes like that. Those who are powerful have a strong voice."

Shi Yan beamed a smile while he kept drinking. He didn't use his Profound Qi to restore his normal state from the effect of alcohol. Drinking one jug of strong wine, his face gradually reddened.

"Ming Hai's group has started to take action. Don't you want to help the Yang family? So, why do you still linger here?"

"No need to be hurried."

Shi Yan's eyes were a little reddish, looking at the Yang family's complex in the distance. He said calmly, "They haven't started yet, the fighting has not yet happened. So, I don't need to come out soon. Wait until they think that they are able to destroy the Yang family. I will show up and make them regret."

"The four of them all have the Sky Realm cultivation base. Ming Hai is at the Second Sky of Sky Realm; the other three also have mysterious martial spirits and secret treasures. They should have some supports to be able to stand out from many forces in the barren city. Do you think you alone can help the Yang family?"

Fei Ya apparently didn't feel optimistic about him. She paused for a moment and said, "As far as I know, Jiu Lan Xin has a good relationship with the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan, Bao Wen. Actually, she's Bao Wen's lover, and Bao Wen seems to favor her a lot. He supports her a lot. That's why Jiu Lan Xin dares to confront Ming Hai. Do you know the cultivation base of Bao Wen?"

Shi Yan froze for a moment and said, "How is it? Is that Bao Wen very powerful?"

"First Sky of Spirit Realm," Fei Ya spat out word by word with an extremely serious face. It looked like she was waiting for his expression.

Beyond her expectation, after Shi Yan heard about Bao Wen's First Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base, he just exclaimed 'oh' without showing any fear, as if that Bao Wen was only an ordinary warrior, and couldn't cause him any impact.

"Spirit Realm!" Fei Ya repeated.

Shi Yan said impatiently, "I know. So?"

"Even if you can deal with Jiu Lan Xin, do you think you can deal



with Bao Wen?" Fei Ya looked at him pitifully. "Bao Wen's very fond of his lover. There will be a big change today, so he's definitely observing everything from somewhere. If you really dare to deal with Jiu Lan Xin, I think Bao Wen will certainly show up."

"Then let him do that." Shi Yan lifted his face up drinking the second jug of wine. He wiped his mouth and said calmly, "No matter who dares to take action against the Yang family, I will let him suffer."

"You really don't know life and death," Fei Ya grunted coldly.

The other five Nagas also sneered, looking at Shi Yan with despise.

"Elder, bring me another two jugs of strong wine. We have to drink a lot to feel good when killing them." Shi Yan shouted while violent aura suddenly scattered out from his body. He sat straight, looking like a sharp sword that was about to fly out of its scabbard to show its sharpness to the world.

...

Outside the Yang family's complex.

A shriek arose. Ming Hai strolled to the front gate of the Yang family's complex. Hundreds of warriors stood in line with red ribbons on their arms, coldly looking forward.

Ming Hai stood in the forefront, burst out laughing and thundered, "Yang Zhuo brother, I, Ming Hai, come to visit you. I hope you will meet me."

The big gate was still closed.

Yang Zhuo's voice suddenly came out from the inside. "Ming Hai, the Yang family treated you well. I didn't think that it's you who comes here, standing in front of our door."

"Yang Zhuo brother, it's because the Yang family had treated me

well that I come here to negotiate." Ming Hai grinned, looking at a fifty-meter-high ancient coral building behind the big gate. On the terrace, the Yangs gradually appeared one by one, including Yang Zhuo.

"As long as you give us the materials, I will assure your safety. Hmm, having regard for Jiao brother, I will let you continue to stay in Barren City. You just need to pay the fees on time, and there will be no one in Barren City who will go against you. Of course, you also have to give up these buildings."

Ming Hai looked at Yang Zhuo from a far distance and shouted.

The people of Yang Zhuo's group revealed dark faces, coldly looking at Ming Hai with rage.

These buildings in the central city had been built with a purpose. It was the symbol of the Yang family's dominating status in Barren City. If the owner of these buildings was changed, it meant the Yangs' power over the past years was gone entirely.

The significance of these buildings was hard to describe. The Yangs would definitely not give them up.

"Ming Hai, don't dream," Yang Zhuo replied with a cold voice.

Ming Hai was not angry as he seemed to know it beforehand. He shook his head, sighed and continued to convince his opponent. "Brother, you're a wise man. You certainly know that today's situation is awful for the Yang family. You even abandoned the Kyara Sea, so why can't you give up these things? Being alive is more important than anything else. Because I have regard for Jiao brother, I embrace this task, protecting and arranging for the Yangs. So, don't disappoint me."

Yang Zhuo sneered coldly but didn't say a word.

"Well, seems that you're very persistent." Ming Hai revealed a hateful complexion, looking ahead and then said after contemplating for a moment. "In ten minutes, if you don't give any

response that satisfies us, Yang Zhuo, I have to say sorry."

Yang Zhuo and others still kept silent.

Ming Hai didn't say anything further, looking at the warriors behind and nodding at them. Those warriors then spread out and lined up in front of the big gate, besieging the surrounding area of the gate.

The atmosphere was depressing.

Ten minutes later, Ming Hai waved his hand and order, "Kill!"

From three directions, the bustling shouts of Jiu Lan Xin, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng all rose simultaneously.

Outside the Yang family's walls, many warriors' figures flew back and forth, all kinds of light beams and the attacks of secret treasures were thrown out, bombarding toward the Yang family's buildings.

At the same time, Shi Yan, who was sitting indifferently and constantly drinking wine, finally slowly stood up with a red face. He paced toward the Yang family's complex without saying a word.

Evil, murderous aura quietly flowed out from his body, and gradually spread in all directions.

# Chapter 440: Enter the stage!

---

The Yang family, in the city center.

Four forces from all directions started to bombard the Yang family's buildings together. Many energy light curtains expanded on the walls of the buildings, shrouding a majority of warriors and blocking the way down. Ming Hai, Fu Hao, Yan Feng and Jiu Lan Xin, the four Sky Realm warriors, were not in a hurry. They didn't proactively take action right away, just coldly watching their people attacking.

Behind the walls, Yang Zhuo and the others stood atop the tallest building with solemn faces, watching the enemies storming over like surging tides.

The situation was dangerous.

The battle was boiling. When Ming Hai realized that the layers of the defensive barrier were gradually weakened, he couldn't help but shout, " Brother Yang, you are too stubborn! You don't want to understand anything, but just persistently keep some materials. It will lead the Yang family to suffer a disaster."

Yang Zhuo's countenance was cold. He didn't utter a word.

Ming Hai stood outside the walls, clasping his hands while looking at Yang Zhuo, who was standing up there, from a distance. His face chilled down.

After half a day, he finally couldn't wait any longer. He suddenly hauled out a square stone seal, poured his Profound Qi into it, and then fiercely threw it out

As soon as the stone seal flew out, a strange Intent Domain suddenly spread out of it.

The stone seal gradually enlarged as big as a mountain, fiercely assailing the layers of barrier enveloping the gate.

The Stone Seal above the Intent Domain became prominent. That small mountain slowly pressed down, bringing along an extremely heavy force.

The ten layers of barriers directly burst out just under the pressure of one strike.

Ming Hai burst out laughing; his left and right hands joined, launching an energetic Seal. A strange halo flickered in his palms, as the energy was continually pouring into the center. The stone seal, which was like a small mountain, absorbed more and more powerful energy. Halos kept spreading out and scattering from the impact. Seemed the protective halo couldn't resist any longer.

At the same time, Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin also took action together.

Fu Hao shouted. His body was like a sharp sword that shot directly to those energy light curtains, piercing through ten layers at once.

Yan Feng sneered coldly and condensed the Fierce Wind Power. Hundreds of wind blades flew out shinningly, tearing down the layers of barrier one by one.

Jiu Lan Xin smiled and shouted, "Yang big brother, why do you need to do it? What you are doing now is just useless and can't change anything. You better make peace, giving up your benefits, and we won't need to spend too much effort. All of us will then be happy. Isn't it good?"

After talking, Jiu Lan Xin opened her mouth and spewed out a bunch of icy lights. Inside the icy light, a jade ornamental hairpin shone and pulled out a dozen ice square beams, looking like beams of lights aggressively striking those barriers.

Four Sky Realm warriors were launching their powers together, destroying more than half of the defensive barriers surrounding the Yang family's walls.

Seeing those barriers be ripped off, the warriors of the four forces around were surprised and clamorously drilled in.

For the time being, hundreds of warriors aggressively rushed into the Yang family's courtyard, laughing loudly and storming towards Yang Zhuo and the others.

Ming Hai looked cold, clasping his hands behind his back while walking in, strolling without any trace of guilt.

These buildings were built by the Yangs. Jiao Han Yi had set up these layers of barrier himself. Today, under Ming Hai's leadership, these barriers were destroyed.

Looking at the Yang family warriors who were continuously retreating, Ming Hai was happy. He murmured, "Jiao big brother, don't blame me. Although you were attached to the Yang family's forces, they are not yours. You are dead, and I can't stop my steps of progress because of you. If there's one day Ming Hai can reach Yang Tian Emperor's level, I will definitely remember the past favor of yours and find the opportunities to take revenge for you. I'm doing this so that in the future, I can repay your favor of saving my life that year."

Ming Hai comforted himself. His footsteps didn't stop, sauntering towards the building where Yang Zhuo and others are staying.

Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin boisterously utilized their Sky Realm powers, killing those who blocked their way. They were constantly laughing, and also moved towards Yang Zhuo and the others.

All the Yang family warriors temporarily stayed in Yang Zhuo's building. There were approximately only a hundred of them. It was not enough to deal with such a fierce force.

In the complex, there was the last layer of defense that focused all the powers. However, it just begrudgingly coped with the

impact of the four mighty forces.

Gradually, under the leadership of Ming Hai and the other three, hundreds of warriors gathered and surrounded Yang Zhuo's group in the tallest building.

These people tried not to destroy everything. They even told their men to be careful.

Especially Jiu Lan Xin, she constantly scolded and came to the people of Ming Hai, Yan Feng, and Fu Hao to instruct them. "Be careful. Don't destroy this building. We have a prior agreement that this building belongs to me. Do not damage any grass or trees. They are mine."

Ming Hai and the others sneered as they knew that this woman was greedy for the Yang family's gorgeous courtyard. At the time she decided to join them, she relied on Bao Wen to make the Water Scorpion Clan take action to seize this building for her and then she would turn it into a perfect palace for her and Bao Wen.

Ming Hai, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng also dreamed about this place. But after receiving the message from her man, the three of them had no choice but to agree.

Although the Water Scorpion Clan was not the most influential clan among those of the Sea Tribes, they were ruthless and vicious. The way they dealt with their enemies were always merciless. Unless people had any other choices, they would never want to offend the Water Scorpion Clan.

Hearing Jiu Lan Xin's shout, Ming Hai flashed a trace of disdain. However, as they already had the prior agreement, he didn't say anything, and also instructed his people to be careful, so that Bao Wen would not cause them troubles in the future.

Jiu Lan Xin was overjoyed with a broad smile. Holding a jade ornamental hairpin in her hand, she gently walked towards the people of Yang Zhuo's group. She raised her head, looking up at

Yang Zhuo on the high platform, grinned and said sweetly, "Yang big brother, come down here. As the master of this gorgeous building, if it's damaged, I will be upset."

Yang Zhuo's face was as cold as ice. He said with hatred, "B\*tch, when you just came to Barren City, you were penniless and didn't even have a crystal to pay tax. If it weren't me who forgave you sometimes, you would not have even had a foothold in Barren City. Today, you're having the upper hand and plotting to take over the Yang family's fortune. Such a person like you will have a tragic end sooner or later."

Jiu Lan Xin became cold as she grunted coldly. "When I entered Barren City, I didn't have money indeed. However, if it weren't for the Yang family's dominating power at that time, with my cultivation base, I could have soon built up my own force. Yang Zhuo, weren't you arrogant? You ignored me, looked down on me, and now, are you regretting it?"

"What?" Hearing these words, Ming Hai suddenly laughed, shook his head, and said, "So, the rumor's true."

Fu Hao and Yan Feng also cracked an interested smile, looking at Jiu Lan Xin with a weird visage.

In Barren City, the comments about Jiu Lan Xin's relationship were never good.

It was said that when this woman first came to Barren City, she was only at the Nirvana Realm. She was a concubine in the Endless Sea. However, the First Lady (the first wife apart from the other wives or concubines in polygyny - TL) sent some people to kill her, continuously chasing after her so that she couldn't stay in the Endless Sea anymore and eventually had to take refuge in Barren City.

When she arrived at Barren City, she was severely injured and penniless. She couldn't even afford the cost of living.



At that time, this woman had nothing except for her weak body. It was said that she came to the Yang family alone, wanting to use her beauty in exchange for the status in Barren City in the hope that Yang Zhuo would marry her, as she wanted to rely on the Yang family's power to avenge and get a particular position in Barren City.

Unfortunately, Yang Zhuo seemed to know that she was not honest. He directly refused her, just gave her some crystals and sent her away.

This woman didn't say anything and seemed to be grateful to him. She even told people that she had a relationship with Yang Zhuo, making them mistakenly think that Yang Zhuo and her really had an ambiguous relationship.

Many of the Yang family warriors also heard the news that she had made up herself. Although Yang Zhuo denied it, they still didn't dare to take her tax, which allowed her to gain a foothold in Barren City.

With the ambiguous rumor, Jiu Lan Xin gained a status in Barren City. She often took the Yang family's fame for granted, doing business in Barren City, helping her reinforce her foothold.

"Regret?" Yang Zhuo looked cold. He grinned and said contemptuously. "The fact that such a B\*tch like you didn't join the Yang family is actually our big luck. I will never fancy such an incestuous woman like you, who I call a sl\*t. You were never regretful, and it's the same even now. B\*tch, in another one hundred years, don't ever expect to catch my eyes."

"Yang Zhuo, such a fickle, scant and righteous man! Since you don't like me, I will ruin you." Jiu Lan Xin was enraged. Her eyes were full of hatred and viciousness. She said with a cold voice, "I will destroy all of you today, letting you wish to die than to live. Yang Zhuo, Yang Zhuo, I will make you regret the whole life."

"Hahaha," Ming Hai suddenly burst into laughter, clapped his

hands and said, "Love gives birth to hatred. Very interesting, very interesting! I even thought that it was just a rumor and nothing that could be true."

Fu Hao and YanF eng also wore an odd face.

Yang Zhuo coldly gazed down with an unchanged look. He said emotionlessly, "Since you all come here, the purpose is clear. You want to get the cultivating materials of the Yang family. Are you ready to bear a severe loss?"

"It's obvious to pay a little higher to have a big harvest." Fu Hao burst into laughter, looking at Ming Hai and Jiu Lan Xin and then ridiculed. "Vicious woman Jiu, won't you feel bad if this building is broken? If you want to kill Yang Zhuo, this building must be destroyed."

Jiu Lan Xin looked ferocious and snarled, "Destroy everything."

"It should be." Fu Hao laughed loudly and then shouted, "Brothers, do it. The more Yangs you kill, the bigger money you can get."

"Kill the Yangs?" A cold voice suddenly arose behind them.

A young man with a red face and carrying a jug of wine in his hand sneered coldly while sauntering.

His eyes and manner were arrogant and domineering. He drank and strutted over at the same time, laughed and then said, "I would like to see who can kill a Yang today."

"Shi Yan!" On the platform, Yang Zhuo and the others suddenly shouted, revealing surprised faces.

# Chapter 441: Bloody Repression

---

"Great Grandpa once said that in our most difficult times, Shi Yan would appear."

After listening to Yang Zhuo's words, all of the Yang's descendants immediately cheered up.

In the crucial time, Shi Yan did come.

He really came.

The young man kept drinking wine and strolling around amidst the warriors, who looked like a pack of wolves. He grinned and walked step by step, attracting all the warriors' attention.

"I want to see who dares to start?"

The young man looked at Jiu Lan Xin and Ming Hai with cold eyes, disregarding everyone around, revealing a domineering look.

"Kid, who are you?" Fu Hao's face darkened. He coldly looked at Shi Yan and suddenly waved his hand towards a young warrior next to him. "Fu Jie, kill him."

Fu Jie was Fu Hao's cousin, who had entered Barren City with him. Fu Jie was at the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm, Fu Hao's cruel and ruthless right hand. During these years, Fu Jie did a lot of shady things for Fu Hao.

Fu Hao was confident about his cousin's cultivation base.

"Got it."

The two-meter-tall hefty guy with a scarred face fiercely laughed and rushed to the young man.

The young man grinned, revealing teasing eyes. He held the wine jug in his right hand and continued drinking. Only until Fu Jie's body rushed over like a sharp sword did the young man then lazily launch his shot. His left hand stuck out like lightning and quickly grabbed Fu Jie's neck.

The young man grabbed the neck of the two-meter-tall guy by one hand and lifted him up, while his iron fists bombarded on that sturdy guy, producing dull sounds of metal colliding. The young man's face remained calm, without even the slightest change.

With one hand lifting the sturdy guy, the young man grinned, shook his head and said, "You're the first one."

Puff.

The young man squeezed vigorously, and Fu Jie's neck was totally squeezed off. Fu Jie's head flew up from his body into the sky.

Blood splattered out massively.

Under the violent power of a squeeze, Fu Jie's neck was actually smashed.

Such an incredible power!

Everyone was suddenly chilled.

The young man looked indifferent, disregarding the blood splashing in front of him. He held the wine jug and continued to drink from it, and then burst into laughter. "Strong wine grows murderous intention. Drinking and killing at the same time is a great thing in life."

While talking, the young man kept walking forward, ignoring the crowd who was now chilled to the bone.

A First Sky of Nirvana Realm warrior stood in front of him with a frightened look, subconsciously wanting to retreat.

The young man's visage remained unchanged. He slightly frowned and suddenly launched a punch.

Puff.

His two hands drilled straight through the chest of that First Sky of Nirvana Realm warrior.

His hands forcefully ripped that warrior apart from the chest, splitting his body into two halves. Organs and blood mixed and splashed everywhere, sputtering to a group of other warriors next to him.

Whether it was Fu Jie or the warrior who was torn into halves, they seemed to be just a thin sheet of paper in that young man's hands. They couldn't bear even one strike of his; the neck was squeezed and broken, and the body was ripped apart without any resistance.

Many warriors felt a shiver running down their spines. Their eyes were full of fright.

Yang Zhuo, Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Li Feng, and other Yang family warriors were utterly shocked and dumbstruck.

"Shi Yan, Shi Yan, is it you?" Yang Mu paused for a moment. His lips were dry as that bloody scene frightened him very much. He started to doubt about everything that he had just witnessed.

The two warriors at Nirvana Realm were crushed to death just like that, without being able to resist even a bit. How strong was that young man?

The young man couldn't help but burst into laughter, looking at Yang Mu on the platform and said, "Big brother, it's been only four or five years. How come you don't recognize me?"

Yang Mu smiled embarrassedly; he was both surprised and delighted.

"Kid, who are you?" Ming Hai changed his face, subconsciously taking one step backward while his eyes were unpredictable. "You are one of the Yangs?"

Shi Yan smiled and nodded. "That's right. That year, Jiao Han Yi entered the land of Quiet Cloud to take me to the Endless Sea. Hmm, uncle Jiao was arrested because of me. I'm very uneasy about it. Since I meet you today, uncle Hai, it seems I can do

something for uncle Jiao."

"You, what do you want to do?" Ming Hai grunted, trying to show his toughness.

"Clean up some trash."

Shi Yan looked cheerful, raising his head up and looking at Yang Zhuo. He smiled and said, "Uncle, do you mind me doing something for uncle Jiao?"

Yang Zhuo was stunned for a moment and said, "Ming Hai has the cultivation base of Second Sky of Sky Realm. Shi Yan, be careful..."

"It's a piece of cake," Shi Yan smiled. "Leave the matter here for me to handle. No need to bother or you, uncle. Well, uncle, big brothers, you observe from the platform and see those who have betrayed the Yang family have a tragic end."

All of the Yangs looked strange, wanting to say something more.

"Such an arrogant kid," Jiu Lan Xin suddenly screamed and then hurriedly told the others, "Everyone joins hands. Kill this annoying brat, and we'll deal with Yang Zhuo later."

Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Ming Hai also had the same intention. After listening to the woman, they all nodded with dark faces and wanted to take action right away.

"No need to be hurried. Don't team up. I'd like to take time to handle things." Shi Yan smiled and waved his hands indifferently. A white, icy smog suddenly spread out like rippling water, storming towards Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin, forming a layer of ice that prevented the three of them from joining hands with Ming Hai.

At the same time, Shi Yan's suddenly reddened. He shouted, "Come out."

A blood halo emerged from the Blood Vein Ring, and a bunch of

light flashed. A ferocious demonic insect flew out and rushed towards Ming Hai.

The King of Demonic Insects! A level eight beast!

The sharp, shining green eyes of the King of Demon Insects gazed at Ming Hai coldly. A terrifying power like an electric current struck and bored into Ming Hai's Sea of Consciousness.

Ming Hai wanted to launch his attack, but suddenly felt an extreme headache. He held his head and groaned.

The King of Demonic Insects flew out, turning into a bunch of green light and then disappeared into Ming Hai's body.

Crack crack crack.

The creepy gnawing noise came out from Ming Hai's body, making people tremble and be chilled to the bone.

Ming Hai suddenly screamed crazily, rolling on the floor while his body gradually shriveled. He frantically cried and shouted continually. "Kill me! Kill me quick. I'm begging you, kill me!"

The King of Demonic Insects was nibbling the organs in his body. He could even hear the sound!

Everyone's scalp tingled.

Watching Ming Hai's miserable appearance, the other warriors were all frightened. Their legs trembled, and they subconsciously receded.

Shi Yan calmly looked at Ming Hai, who now didn't look like a human anymore. He cracked a smile and said softly, "Uncle Ming Hai, how does it feel? Do you feel wonderful when your organs are being chewed? Well, you can take time to enjoy that feeling. This demonic insect is very reasonable. It will eat your body first and then go into your head and enjoy your brain. By that time, you may die immediately."

Retch.

A few people started to vomit. The warriors who followed Ming Hai felt their stomachs turn upside down. They even puked out all the food they had yesterday.

Jiu Lan Xin, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng, the three of them paled, as they had never seen such a terrible scene before. Even the Yang family people on the platform turned their heads around, unable to bear to watch it.

Yang Xue, Li Feng, and some other girls couldn't hold it any longer. They all squatted down, vomiting while their faces didn't have any colors.

Too cruel.

Anyone who saw this scene felt chilled to the bone as they were terrified. Shi Yan was incredibly vicious.

Even before fighting, they were already scared.

"A crazy brat. He's a crazy brat."

Someone screamed in fear. "Jiu big sister, I quit. Even if you give me money, I have no blessing to use it. Goodbye." After talking, that person clutched his stomach and was about to retreat.

Shi Yan suddenly turned around, calmly glanced at that guy and said softly. "I didn't say 'go'... No one is allowed to move. You'd better be obedient."

That guy shook his head. "Only ghosts believe you."

He hurriedly receded, ignoring Jiu Lan Xin and ran away desperately.

Shi Yan grinned. "Then you can't blame me."

As soon as he finished his words, the running man's body was instantly lifted in the air. It looked like a big, invisible hand was slowly grasping him and suspending him in the air.

Golden silky fibers appeared in the air from nowhere, weaving into a net and lowering down slowly.



His body was like a piece of tofu that was cut into numerous small pieces. Blood flowed out and dripped down from the sky.

The six warriors who retreated with that guy could run only ten meters away before realizing that they were entering an unknown gravitational field. They were then covered by countless golden silky fibers and split into numerous pieces.

They even couldn't let out a cry.

Shi Yan beamed a smile, then gently shook his head. "I just said that without my permission, no one is allowed to move. If you don't want to listen, kindly step forward."

Nearly eight hundred warriors around the Yang family paled while their strengths seemed to be taken away by a mysterious force. They could hardly stabilize their breaths.

Watching that ruthless young man, everyone was terrified, not knowing what to do.

Phew phew.

A Nirvana Realm warrior suddenly knelt down and kowtowed towards the young man. "I was wrong. I was bewitched. I deserve to be killed millions of times. I'm begging you to spare us. I want to live."

"We want to live." Another warrior knelt down. His eyes were flooded with tears while he mournfully whined, letting out miserable cries like a cuckoo singing.

"You want to live?" The young man laughed, paused for a moment, and then gently nodded. "I'll give you one chance."

"What should we do?" Everyone kneeling on the ground was overjoyed, constantly shouting cheerfully.

Pointing at Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin, the young man said, "Kill those three, then you can live. Otherwise, all of you will die."

Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin trembled, showing their pale faces and frightened eyes.

# Chapter 442: Reversal

---

Shi Yan stood in front of the Yang family's building, freely and vigorously taking action, immediately suppressing the aura of Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin.

At his side, a dozen warriors were kneeling with frightened faces, as they were afraid that he would be enraged all of a sudden.

He had just launched a few strikes with some bloody means, and had already made two Nirvana Realm warriors perish. He had also released the demonic insect that directly drilled in Ming Hai's body. It was still eating his internal organs.

That sound was creepy and hair-raising, and it still hadn't stopped yet. Everyone's scalps tingled, and they couldn't even stand still.

Yang Zhuo and other Yangs were standing on the platform, blankly staring at what was happening down there. They became excited.

At this time, Yang Mu, Yang Xue, and Li Feng, who were the masters of the Yang family's new generation, couldn't help but recall Yang Zhuo's words earlier. "Your Great Grandpa said that in the most difficult time, Shi Yan would appear and help us reverse the situation, giving all the offenders a bitter end."

Previously, Yang Mu, Yang Zhu, and the others still had a doubtful attitude about these words, not daring to lay their hopes on him. However, in the most difficult time, Shi Yan, who had disappeared four or five years ago, appeared.

He had used some thunderbolt like means to swoop over everyone, threatening and making dozens of warriors kneel on the ground. With what just happened, the Yang family suddenly thrived from desperation.

"Shi Yan." Yang Mu was overjoyed while shouting. "Kid, why did

you disappear for so long? In the Chasm Battlefield, what did you encounter in the end? How come you have such a terrific cultivation base?"

Yang Zhu, Yang Xue, Li Feng, and the others also had a curious complexion, looking at him with astonishment.

Lifting his head up and revealing a smile, Shi Yan didn't reply. He then glared at the warriors who were kneeling on the ground. "Let see if you guys can grasp the opportunity that I give you. It depends on you. Hahaha. Yan Feng, Fu Hao, and Jiu Lan Xin, these three, although they have the Sky Realm cultivation base, there are nearly eight hundred of you. If you unite to deal with only three of them, you can kill them in a short time. I'm waiting for your action."

Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin were shocked. Their eyes flickered with light, vigilantly looking around.

"We can give you benefits, but this kid cannot. Instead of joining hands to deal with us, you guys better work together to deal with that brat. And, together with the three of us, it's easy to kill that kid. As soon as this kid dies, our agreement will be honored. After having the Yang family's materials, all of you will have a part of it."

Jiu Lan Xin gritted her teeth, expressing a cold face and talking to those who were kneeling on the ground.

Fu Hao and Yan Feng were also in shock. They then hastily promised the benefits as well in the hope that their followers would agree to join forces with them to deal with Shi Yan.

"Even if you listen to this kid and kill the three of us, you have nothing afterward. And, are you sure what this kid said is true? After killing the three of us, you are grass without roots. This kid can do whatever he wants to you. You should think carefully." Fu Hao smiled and said.

Yan Feng constantly nodded and said, "Brothers, I, Yan Feng, didn't treat you bad. I also give you a lot of benefits. What can this kid give you? Once he wins, the Yang family will continue to rule Barren City, and your fate will be unchanged. Why? Being friends with him will only lead you to a tragic end, like Ming Hai."

Jiu Lan Xin, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng showed a sincere expression and persuaded their warriors earnestly.

These three people's words were very sharp and sweet, pointing out the benefits and harms. They actually could convince many people. Even the warriors who were kneeling down on the ground also thought about it, realizing what the three of them said might be more reasonable.

Those who were kneeling regained their cold faces and stood up. Their eyes flashed with cold lights.

The warriors who were standing further away moved forward together quietly. They surrounded Shi Yan, submerging him and waiting for the orders from Jiu Lan Xin and the other two.

The situation was reversed again.

Yang Zhuo and the other Yang family masters looked at the repelling waves, and the smiles on their faces gradually faded. They put on a solemn look again. Yang Zhuo lowered his voice, instructing Yang Mu and the others to be more cautious and be ready to help Shi Yan when the situation was not good.

Shi Yan, who was now the focus of everyone's attention, on the other hand, remained unchanged, and did not react to the reversal of the situation. The smile was still on his calm and cold face.

He looked around, slowly nodded, revealing cold eyes, and then softly said, "You think that all of you together can kill me? Hahaha, seems like you will not shed tears without seeing a coffin. Hmm, who wants to try first?"

After saying that, he used his mind to urge the King of Demonic

Insects, making it speed up immediately.

Screech screech.

Abnormal sounds echoed faster and clearer from Ming Hai's body. Everyone could see the King of Demonic Insects slowly crawling from his neck into his brain.

Ming Hai's eyes bulged. He fearfully held his throat, which was producing terrible whining sounds.

"This brat's heart is cruel. Making friends with him will give you nothing good." Jiu Lan Xin continued to convince the others. "You guys can see Ming Hai's outcome. Once this brat wins and has a firm foothold in Barren City, everyone will have bad karma."

Everyone's face changed dramatically.

Thinking about Shi Yan's deeds, these people were shivering. They subconsciously looked at Ming Hai, and all felt that it was difficult to get along with Shi Yan, who was even more terrible than all the Yangs combined.

Thinking about the relationship that they might have with this kind of person, these warriors were all frightened. They restlessly hesitated for a while before becoming determined.

"Kill him!"

"Kill that imp!"

"Only after killing him will the Barren City be in peace. If he is not dead, no one could ever have a good day."

For the time being, the clamoring came and went. All the warriors who followed Yan Feng, Fu Hao, and Jiu Lan Xin became fierce and furious.

Shi Yan's smile was unchanged. He stood in the middle of the siege without fear or saying anything. He seemed to wait for these people to take action first.

"Kill!" Jiu Lan Xin shouted as she was the first one who fiercely

stormed towards Shi Yan like a crazy tigress, wanting to break the layer of the ice barrier.

Shi Yan smiled and opened his left hand. A bunch of splendid rippling ice suddenly spread out.

Ice flowed out from his palm and once again increased that ice's defensive barrier, preventing Jiu Lan Xin's jade ornamental hairpin from performing its real effect. Thus, the ice barrier couldn't be broken either.

"Kill him!" Yan Feng and Fu Hao waved their hands at the same time.

Dozens of warriors who had kneeled down to show their loyalty earlier also rushed to Shi Yan this time.

Many silhouettes were moving. Dozens of them revealed ferocious faces and ruthless smiles. Their bodies' energies increased to the peak, turning into many beams of light violently striking at Shi Yan.

In the crowd, Shi Yan stayed motionlessly like a rock. His smile became cold.

"It's good that you're coming."

He still didn't move and even revealed a gentle smile. He just said one sentence, and then sat down as if he was meditating.

Everyone looked excited as the warriors thought that he was scared. They got even more courageous and clamorous, launching all kinds of martial techniques.

Dozens of colorful columns of light like a rainbow suddenly zoomed over from everywhere, all aimed at Shi Yan.

Like stones being thrown into the sea, many beams of energy light that were shot over suddenly disappeared, leaving no ripple just around ten meters away from Shi Yan.

Dozens of warriors came ten meters away from him before their

entire bodies suddenly flew up and got suspended in the air.

There seemed to be an invisible hand that caught all these ten warriors. Their bodies quickly circled, and their energy started to get turbulent. They were not able to gather their powers to protect their bodies.

"How could it be?"

"I can't move!"

"My Profound Qi doesn't follow my order."

Those warriors suddenly screamed in panic; their faces were full of fear, they didn't know what was going on.

"Don't shout. You will die soon. It's useless to shout." Shi Yan gently shook his head and said regretfully, "I wanted to spare your lives. Unfortunately, you can't see the situation clear enough. I can only send you off first."

Many beams of golden light suddenly flew out from the Blood Vein Ring.

Golden silky fibers were extremely sharp, scattering in the sky and twisting. Once those golden fibers touched the warriors in the sky, their bodies were like soft tofu, directly being cut into pieces with blood dripping down massively.

It happened the same as what happened to those people who had fled away earlier. More than ten warriors had been smashed down even before they could know what was happening.

Shi Yan cracked a smile from the corner of his mouth and started to come towards the warriors who were more distant.

For the time being, with Shi Yan as the center, the warriors in the range of ten meters screamed and cried in fear, desperately wishing to escape.

It seemed like a demon was there that could tear people's bodies, secretly hiding and taking lives away. No one knew what



happened; they just knew that more and more warriors' bodies were minced into pieces by that invisible demon.

The sky was flooded with splashing blood and flesh, as if there was a colossal cutting machine operating. No matter what realms the warriors were at, as long as they were in a specific range, they were all affected. And once their bodies were circled, it meant their lives were coming to an end.

In just half a minute, nearly fifty warriors had been minced without any known reasons. Their bodies turned into different crumbled blocks of flesh. Blood splattered in the sky and then dripped down like trickles of water.

Not to mention the warriors outside, even Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin were so petrified that they didn't dare to move. Not daring to escape or coming close, they could just stand still on the spot with pale faces.

Shi Yan once said that without his permission, anyone who dared to leave would have his flesh and bone crushed instantly.

His words were still there, and no one would dare to escape.

## Chapter 443: It was good to have you here

---

Those who came close to Shi Yan were crushed to death eventually. Hundreds of torn bodes proved that cruel fact. Everyone was petrified. They didn't dare to escape or take action against Shi Yan.

They tried to calm down in this suffocating atmosphere.

The scent of blood was everywhere.

Under this situation, Yang Xue, Li Feng, and the other female warriors all had to turn their heads away and take out their handkerchiefs to cover their mouths. They squatted down and puked out continually.

Although the way Shi Yan had treated Ming Hai earlier was bloody cruel, the scene was not terrifying though, and the shock was still limited.

However, this large-scale slaughter instantly made flesh and blood of fifty warriors splatter everywhere. Their stumps scattered, and their organs were strewn on the ground. This scene could not just be described as a bloody one.

"I said earlier that if you want to live, kill Yan Feng, Fu Hao, and Jiu Lan Xin for me. As long as these three people die, you can leave safe and sound. Otherwise, you and the three of them will have the same consequence, turning into a pile of crumbled flesh at this place." Shi Yan was emotionless, beamed a gentle smile and said softly. "I'll give you half an hour. After that, if the three of them are still alive, hahaha, you know what is waiting for you."

"Kill Yan Feng!"

"Kill Fu Hao!"

"Kill Jiu Lan Xin!"

After being silent for half a minute, someone suddenly shouted.

And many others responded.

All of the warriors were in extreme panic and fear. They no longer cared about the rhetoric of the other three. Under Shi Yan's thorny pressure, they finally collapsed.

More than seven hundred warriors got crazy all of a sudden, shouting and attacking Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin.

No matter what the three of them said, they could not control the situation anymore. Under Shi Yan's horrifying influence, the warriors just wanted to live, just wanted to use the lives and blood of those three people to preserve their lives.

Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and Jiu Lan Xin all had Sky Realm cultivation bases, but facing the warriors who were storming over like a surging tide, they were completely powerless, revealing a trace of bitter sadness.

The three of them had spent four or five years to create this force. However, in the most difficult time, their men were uniting to deal with them, which was even harder for them to accept than being killed by Shi Yan.

When Fu Hao and the other two looked at those warriors with red eyes, who used to be their henchmen, their faces looked tragic, and their resistance was not as sharp as before.

Shi Yan stood up, ignoring the crazy crowd, walking straight to the main building of the Yang family. When he came to the gate, someone bent down and opened the door for him.

A Yang warrior bowed his head with a respectful and frightened face. "Young master Yan."

Shi Yan smiled and nodded at him. With the warrior leading the way, Shi Yan calmly mounted to the platform on the top of the building.

Earth-shaking screams arose behind him, but he pretended to not hear them. He still looked calm, not showing any of his thoughts

except his usual smile.

Not long afterward, Shi Yan went to the place where all the Yang warriors were gathering. Yang Zhuo was waiting with a cheerful face.

Bending down to him, Shi Yan softly called, "Uncle."

Yang Zhuo continually nodded, laughed, and said, "Good boy! People say that a person will change after being gone for only three days. You didn't just change that simply. Hahaha. One cannot believe it indeed. Hahaha. The Yang family finally has a successor. Even if Great Grandpa doesn't come out from the Demon Area, this kid can still keep Barren City safe and stable as a rock table."

Shi Yan smiled, looked at Yang Xue, Li Feng, and Yang Meng, and said kindly, "Don't rush."

Li Feng's slanted eyes were shining, glancing at him. She then rebuked, "Is that you? Why did you need to be so bloody while killing people like that? You can kill, but could you just make it not too terrible and disgusting?"

Yang Xue and Yang Meng also nodded in agreement with Li Feng. They showed their bitter faces while blaming Shi Yan for being so brutal.

Shi Yan burst out laughing. "Sometimes, when we deal with some people, we need to give them unforgettable excitement, so that they will be honestly obedient. We still need to make a living in Barren City. If one day, the Yang family loses ground and those people have wicked intentions, it is not good. I do this so that they will remember the consequences of betraying the Yang family. This will give them nightmares every night. Hence, even if the Yang family declines one day, they will not dare to have any wicked intentions."

Yang Zhuo's face was full of appreciation. He nodded, "Makes sense."

Yang Mu, Yang Zhu, and others stepped forward and hugged him warmly.

"It's good to see you come back." Yang Mu patted Shi Yan's shoulder and said loudly, "You should have come earlier; we were almost unable to resist. If you were a little bit later, you would probably have seen your big brother's dead body."

Shi Yan's eyes batted. He gently shook his head, "Big brother, do not say these unlucky words. Aren't we still living well? Although the Kyara Sea doesn't belong to us now, I still think that it will fall into our hands again in the future. Furthermore, our future won't have only the Endless Sea."

Everyone was startled.

"Are you sure?" Yang Zhuo was stunned and asked with a soft voice. "Have you heard any news related to our Great Grandpa? Shi Yan, tell me, do you know anything? Honestly, since we've come to Barren City, we lost connection with the family. Although we got some news about Great Grandpa before, we still worry."

All of the Yangs looked at him with expectation.

Shi Yan sighed inside, knowing that everyone was holding the feeling for too long. Because they were continuously defeated in Barren City, and in the meanwhile, the situation in Endless Sea was complicated, they couldn't see any hope for the future. They thus started to have doubts about Yang Tian Emperor's instructions, wondering if his words were true or not in the end.

He needed to reassure everyone.

"I did receive some news." Under everyone's scrutinizing gaze, he gently shook his head and said with certainty, "I got news from a friend from the Fourth Demon Area, saying that Great Grandpa has escaped the Demon King's confinement. But he still has something to do in the Demon Area. I think that the two Demon Kings are having a headache now."

As soon as he finished his words, all the Yangs cheered up, revealing an extreme joy on their faces.

They just needed a confirmation.

Shi Yan just gave it to them.

"You should not be too worried. Based on the current situation, our Great Grandpa probably will not return soon from the Demon Area in a short time." After pausing for a moment, Shi Yan continued. "However, once Great Grandpa comes back from the Demon Area, the situation of the Endless Sea will be in the hands of the Yang family. Hmm, I think we can recreate the order in the Endless Sea, clean up the mess, and recapture the things that belong to us."

Everyone put on the happy face again and nodded continually.

Especially Yang Zhuo, he was totally overjoyed. "Boy, you're worth the trust of our Great Grandpa. That year, when Great Grandpa let Jiao Han Yi go to the Quiet Cloud Place to pick you up, we didn't understand it. But now, we realize Great Grandpa's sharp eyes. How could he see your potential? We greatly admire Great Grandpa's vision."

Shi Yan smiled, came to Yang Zhuo, and looked down at the crazy fighting below. "Fu Hao and Yan Feng are over."

Sure enough, right after his words came out, under the attack of hundreds of warriors, the minds of the two of them collapsed, and their defensive halo directly blasted.

The group of warriors swarmed and instantly submerged Fu Hao and Yan Feng. All kinds of secret treasures bombarded the two of them until even their bones were crushed. They tragically died on the spot in the end.

What about a Sky Realm warrior?

When hundreds of warriors with different levels launched the attacks together, releasing the combined powers, it was arduous

for even Spirit Realm warriors to resist, let alone Yan Feng and Fu Hao.

After Yan Feng's and Fu Hao's deaths, there was only Jiu Lan Xin left.

"This woman...." Yang Zhuo frowned and shook his head. "It's not easy to deal with her. Do you see that those people are afraid of dealing with her first? This woman is very good at taking advantage of any connections she has. This time, she depends on Bao Wen of the Water Scorpion Clan, who has the cultivation base of First Sky of Spirit Realm. As those warriors know it, they don't dare to attack her right away."

Shi Yan looked down.

It was exactly as what Yang Zhuo said.

The warriors surrounded Jiu Lan Xin like surging tides, but no one dared to start attacking her yet.

Jiu Lan Xin's face was completely pale. She constantly moved backward and cried, "If you guys dare to deal with me, Bao Wen will not forgive you. You all know my relationship with Bao Wen as well as his cultivation base and means. If something happens to me, don't ever think you can leave Barren City alive."

Her threat was effective indeed.

The warriors around her hesitated. They looked at Shi Yan, who was standing on the platform while staring at Jiu Lan Xin. He was considering and hesitating.

Although Shi Yan was strong and cruel, Bao Wen's reputation was popular in Barren City for a long time.

Any of the warriors who came to Barren City all knew that the Water Scorpion Clan would definitely take vengeance on those they begrudged. They knew how powerful and cruel Bao Wen, the brother of the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan, was. If it weren't for Bao Wen to act as her backing, she would have died

soon.

Thus, when she said the name Bao Wen, everyone had to be careful. Although many people were afraid of Shi Yan, more people were much scared of Bao Wen.

Therefore, even though Jiu Lan Xin was surrounded by many, no one dared to make the first move.

The intimidation of a Spirit Realm warrior was really effective.

"Bao Wen has a Spirit Realm cultivation base," Yang Zhuo pondered for a moment, smiled and said, "Otherwise, Jiu Lan Xin would have been already over. You showed up in time to help us. If you kill this merciless chic Jiu Lan Xin, Bao Wen will certainly be enraged, and we will have to deal with his anger. Hmm, if Great Grandpa were here, we would not be scared. However, we do not have Spirit Realm warriors in Barren City."

After listening to Yang Zhuo, although other people of the Yang family didn't really understand much about the meaning of the Spirit Realm warriors, they hesitated and helplessly nodded, indicating that they also agreed with Yang Zhuo's words.

"That's right. Bao Wen's a Spirit Realm warrior; he has great power in the Water Scorpion Clan. Offending Bao Wen means offending the Water Scorpion Clan. If so, setting the foothold in Barren City will be unfavorable. If we can go back to the Endless Sea, we don't need to be afraid of him. But now..." Yang Zhuo sighed.

"No need to mention Bao Wen, even if the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan personally comes here, I can make him obedient." Shi Yan sneered.



# Chapter 444: Domineering

---

Yang Zhuo was stunned, wearing a disbelieving look. He looked at Shi Yan and said, "Little Yan, you aren't joking, are you?"

Yang Mu and the others also looked surprised and dumbstruck. They all realized that Shi Yan had a cultivation base of Sky Realm, and even Shi Yan had admitted it.

With the cultivation base of Sky Realm, together with the power of the demonic insects, it was more than enough to handle a warrior like Jiu Lan Xin. However, if it were against Bao Wen, it seemed he might overestimate his strength.

Sky Realm and Spirit Realm were considerably different. The gap could hardly be measured.

It was extremely easy for a Spirit Realm warrior to cope with or even kill a Sky Realm warrior. Only if a Sky Realm warrior who wanted to confront a Spirit Realm warrior had the peak of his Sky Realm cultivation base, perhaps it could be a trace of possibility.

However, it was almost impossible for a First Sky of Sky Realm warrior to confront a Spirit Realm warrior.

It was not that Yang Zhuo and his people didn't have confidence in Shi Yan, but the way he said it was really appalling. They couldn't believe that Shi Yan was able to deal with Bao Wen given his current realm, let alone the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan.

"We can't joke about this kind of matter." Shi Yan smiled and assured Yang Zhuo and the others. "Uncle, don't be worried. I obviously have a good backup when I say this. Jiu Lan Xin surely has to die today. It's fine if Bao Wen doesn't come. But if he comes, I will kill him as well."

As soon as Shi Yan finished his words, everyone's faces immediately changed.

On the platform, Shi Yan beamed a gentle smile and kept his relaxed look. It seemed like he did not care about the famous Bao Wen. He watched Jiu Lan Xin down there, quietly waiting.

The warriors in Barren City had surrounded Jiu Lan Xin, but they were all hesitating. Under Jiu Lan Xin's threat, no one dared to take the first move. The fame of the Spirit Realm warrior, Bao Wen, was enough to deter everyone.

Shi Yan was not anxious, but deliberately standing on the platform. After waiting for a while, seeing none of those warriors dare to take action, he thundered. "Hurry up. Time is almost up. If Jiu Lan Xin is not dead, hahaha, you guys will die before her."

Everyone down there all felt chilled in their hearts.

"I gave you time. As long as you take action, Jiu Lan Xin will certainly die. I'll wait a little more. Let's see what you guys will do." Shi Yan smiled. "Although Bao Wen is powerful, he isn't here anyway. If you're scared of him, after killing Jiu Lan Xin, you can leave Barren City right away. I don't think that Bao Wen dares to chase after you to the Endless Sea."

"Little brat, don't bully me," Jiu Lan Xin wore a cold face while looking at him. "If you dare to do anything to me, Bao Wen will definitely not forgive you. If you care for the Yang family, you'd better let me go soon. Let me tell you this, Bao Wen stays near Barren City. I have sent the message; he will be here shortly. You should be obedient, and I will ensure everyone is safe later."

Yang Zhuo's face changed.

The other Yangs were also frightened, subconsciously looking here and there towards Barren City. They felt that Bao Wen was hiding in the crowd and could show himself at any time.

They knew that Bao Wen was wicked and cruel, and that once he came here and got indignant, he would slaughter everyone. The Yang family's situation now was not as good as before. If they still

had Yang Tian Emperor here, they wouldn't be afraid of Bao Wen. However, the news that Yang Tian Emperor was imprisoned in the Demon Area had been spread out throughout the Endless Sea. Even those tribes on the seabed also knew it. If Bao Wen were still afraid of the Yang family, he would not secretly support Jiu Lan Xin.

Apparently, they had to be careful with a Spirit Realm warrior who could turn Heaven and Earth upside down and determine the world's situation.

"Oh?" Shi Yan burst out laughing. He looked around and spoke up loudly, "Where is Bao Wen? If you're here, show yourself. If you come late, you can only pick up this woman's dead body." Everyone was startled in fear because of his arrogance.

This man was only at the Sky Realm, and under the other warriors' attention, he dared to call Bao Wen by his name, also saying such outrageous words. Although his strength might be not as powerful as Bao Wen, his guts were big enough to make everyone admire him.

"Shi Yan, don't act recklessly. If you do so, the Water Scorpion Clan will not let it go. We know the Water Scorpion Clan's spleen; they are extremely vengeful. If you're too provocative like this, the Yang family will not get anything good. Listen to me. Let it go, let that woman go. It's the best for you." A cold and clear voice suddenly came up from behind the crowd. Fei Ya of the Naga Tribe slowly appeared together with another five male Nagas.

Farther away, some other Sea Tribes members from various races with different appearances also exposed themselves quietly.

The Sea Tribes masters who did business in Barren City had known that the Yang family would have a big change today. They used to have a neglectful attitude, as they thought that the Yang family would be removed from the city today. They eagerly waited for the situation to be steadied before coming and cleaning up the Yang family's belongings.

However, Shi Yan's clamor that came from the Yangs' complex was really arrogant, which surprised some Sea Tribes members who were secretly gathering, as they didn't know what was really happening. With their curiosity, they all came closer to have a better look and realized the situation here was not going as they had imagined.

The dead bodies of Ming Hai, Fu Hao, and Yan Feng lay at the most eye-catching place in the crowd. The Sea Tribes masters came over to see, and their looks immediately changed just after a quick glance. They subconsciously looked at Shi Yan on the platform with batting eyes and astonishment.

"Is that kid who killed Ming Hai and the others? It's impossible. This guy's still young. How can he be the opponent of the three of them? What happened?" More than ten Sea Tribes' men were very confused, curiously assuming the situation.

"I don't need the Naga Tribe to be involved in my business." Shi Yan laughed unruly and declared loudly. "I'll be here today to see how many Sea Tribes members have wicked intentions towards the Yang family. I'll put those evil thoughts down."

"You're too arrogant."

"Brat, you dare to provoke our Sea Tribes? Do you think you are Yang Tian Emperor? I can see that you don't want to live anymore."

"Even when Yan Tian Emperor was still powerful, he still had to be polite when facing us. And what are you to be impudent?"

"Do you want to die?"

"Brat, get out of Barren City. This place doesn't welcome you."

"Get out of Barren City!"

For the time being, the Sea Tribes members were full of rage. They scolded and shouted at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan sneered the grunted. "You guys don't deserve to talk to me. I'm too lazy to care about you."

When the Yang family was still strong, they had done many things for the Sea Tribes members on the ocean floor. All the materials that the Sea Tribes lacked came from the Yang family.

It could be said that the Yang family's existence was beneficial to the Sea Tribes, and that the submarine members got a lot of benefits.

Right now, when the Yang family had declined, the Sea Tribes no longer remember the favors they had and even manipulated puppets like Jiu Lan Xin, seeking the Yang family's cultivating materials. They bluntly suppressed and tried to occupy the Yangs'. That made Shi Yan hate them, having an unfriendly impression toward the Sea Tribes.

He also figured out that it was not a big deal to evacuate from Barren City, or at most destroying the whole city if he was so irritated. He could temporarily take the Yangs to the Divine Great Land to avoid the current wars in the Endless Sea.

Anyway, he was not scared of them turning their back to the Sea Tribes. That was why he was that arrogant and impudent.

"Shi Yan, you're too arrogant. What you're doing just makes the situation worse." Fei Ya showed a cold face, shook her head, and stopped persuading him.

"Time's running out. If Jiu Lan Xin's not dead, you guys will die before her." Shi Yan's face darkened when he spoke.

"Who dares to kill Bao Wen's woman?" A voice arose from the southeast of Barren City. A gray figure quickly flew over from the clouds. The water steam above Barren City rapidly condensed, and in the middle of the mist appeared gray shadow.

A harsh and cold atmosphere enveloped Barren City entirely, agitating everyone's soul. It was producing an uncomfortable

feeling like being watched by a scorpion.

As soon as the voice faded, the warriors who were hesitant to take action, changed their facial expression instantly and quickly moved away from Jiu Lan Xin.

Jiu Lan Xin, who was in panic and fright, immediately relaxed as soon as she heard that voice, as if she just took a tranquilizer. She smiled and flashed her enchanting figure, meandering her body and then shouted prettily, "I'm here."

"Hahaha. I didn't expect the Yangs to have such an arrogant kid. Really interesting!" The gray shadow in the mist grinned and released a cold aura. A strong surging spirit suddenly shrouded all the Yangs.

The complexions of Yang Zhuo and other Yang warriors immediately changed right at the moment they heard his voice, revealing a panicked look.

"Precursor Bao Wen, this kid is harsh-spoken. He despises our Sea Tribes. He deserves to die thousands of times."

"Kill this kid so these people would know who have the voice here, on the seabed."

"Kill him! Kill him!" As soon as those Sea Tribes members saw Bao Wen of the Water Scorpion Clan, they all got excited and shouted out loud.

"Hahaha. You rest assured that since I come here today, I will crush this kid to death."

Bao Wen burst into laughter, despising Shi Yan and then ridiculing him. "It's unexpected that the Yang family can have such a good seedling. Unfortunately, he's going to be destroyed in my hands. Hahaha. Eradicating the Yang family's hope of revitalizing in the future's also a big pleasure."

# Chapter 445: Attention

---

Bao Wen grinned and finally appeared above the Yangs, turned into a beam of light and landed next to Jiu Lan Xin.

"You finally come." Jiu Lan Xin smiled and said shyly, "I even thought that you don't love me anymore. You haven't shown up lately, and I have been longing for you for too long."

Bao Wen cracked a lustful smile, stretched his hands to pat her rear end. "My little beauty, I was just outside talking to the other fellows. That's why I came a little bit late, making you wait for so long. Why wouldn't I love you anymore? Here I am!"

"It's good that you came." Jiu Lan Xin had a broad smile that squeezed her eyes into two thin lines. She then raised her head, looking at Shi Yan and coldly said, "That brat instructed other people to kill me, and even said that even if you came, you couldn't stop the fact that he would kill me." Jiu Lan Xin wore a callous look.

Bao Wen grinned. A two-meter-long scorpion tail jutted out behind his back. It curved and swayed in the air, producing a burst of chilling, surging energy that froze everyone's heart.

He glared at Shi Yan and said, calmly "Only a young guy at the Sky Realm dares to be defiant toward our Sea Tribes. Human warriors really don't know life and death, or who's the real master on the seabed."

After talking, Bao Wen's eyes suddenly flashed. A bunch of gray energy light burst out. The mixture of the energy light and surging spirit was like a sword, directly piercing Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness and seeming to wash it away.

"Soul attack..." Shi Yan smiled, shaking his head. "This kind of soul attack is the one I'm afraid the least of. Hmm, I thought you have more than that. You have disappointed me."

Bao Wen's spiritual attack dashed all the way straight to Shi Yan and instantly covered him. Surging spirit massively swamped into his Sea of Consciousness.

In his Sea of Consciousness, Shi Yan's host soul suddenly opened its third eye. The soul devouring flame from the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame suddenly burst out, rushing towards the soul attack that was attacking his Sea of Consciousness.

Like ice being melt under boiling water, all of the energy that struck his sea of consciousness was quickly burned down. Not a single trace of the soul consciousness remained.

Bao Wen's vicious eyes suddenly flashed a sign of misery. He held his head with one hand while his face changed dramatically as he cried. "Kid, you... you can destroy my soul consciousness?!"

"As I already said, whoever comes here today cannot avoid death." Shi Yan wore a cold face, sneered, and then pointed to Bao Wen. "Eat him!"

A bunch of light suddenly flew out from Ming Hai's body. The King of Demonic Insects instantly appeared and stormed toward Bao Wen.

"The King of Demonic Insects, level eight beast!" Some Sea Tribes warriors who knew the origin of the King of Demonic Insects couldn't help but exclaim in fear, expressing frightened faces. The King of Demonic Insects was a level eight beast that could be compared to a Spirit Realm warrior. As it had been gone through many years of arduous cultivation, its strength was not much lower than that of a Second Sky of Spirit Realm human warrior. It also knew soul attacks. As soon as the King of Demonic Insects came out, energy fluctuations diffused and enveloped Barren City entirely.

Immediately, all the warriors were affected. They realized that their consciousness was a little fuzzy, and their spirit became difficult to concentrate.



It was because the King of Demonic Insects' surging spirit had aimed at Bao Wen only. If it spread all of its spiritual power, the warriors would suffer more tragically.

Bao Wen's face also changed and became serious. Seeing the King of Demonic Insects dashing over, he cried, "You rely on a level eight beast, no wonder why you're that arrogant." Bao Wen didn't dare to neglect and quickly launched all of his powers. His scorpion tail made sizzling sounds and rippling lights that naked eyes could see, forming a beam of light that shot towards the King of Demonic Insects. In that light beam, the King of Demonic Insects' speed slowed down, but it still kept dashing towards Bao Wen.

Bao Wen's scorpion tail urged the strength. Bao Wen's face convulsed, and a strange piece of mask quickly grew up on his face.

A sinister aura was released from him, which made the area surrounding him explode continually. Some structures of the Yangs' building were shaken, apparently getting affected from his energy.

Once a Spirit Realm warrior released his power, it could affect the movement of heaven and earth energy.

The energy that Bao Wen gathered made the vital force at the bottom of the sea stir up, resulting in a huge change in the sea that rose all the water around.

Bao Wen shouted, wanting to cross the King of Demonic Insects to directly behead Shi Yan. The King of Demonic Insects seemed to know his intention. When he launched his power, many powerful spiritual energy fluctuations suddenly lined up and darted towards Bao Wen.

Bao Wen was flying over, but then suddenly became stagnant in the void while his face showed a pained look.

Shi Yan stood on the platform, coldly looking at Bao Wen, the King of Demonic Insects and then Jiu Lan Xin. He sneered,

revealing a confident look as if he wanted to say, 'You would not be able to escape from my hands.' Seeing Bao Wen be hindered by a level eight beast, the Sea Tribes warriors who were waiting around all had a surprised visage. At this moment, they know that Shi Yan feared nothing because he had a level eight beast.

Those who wanted to take the opportunity to launch their attacks had to be docile, and quietly moved backward on seeing the King of Demonic Insects.

Watching Bao Wen and Shi Yang fight, seven hundred human warriors were secretly relieved, quietly moving away as they were afraid that the battle would affect them, making them its innocent victims.

Fei Ya and the five male Nagas frowned, gradually moving away from the battlefield and coming closer to the Yang family's building.

A figure wearing bamboo veiled-hat with a black tunic suddenly appeared next to Fei Ya. She reached out to stop Fei Ya from moving backward, then asked with a low voice. "What happened?"

Fei Ya turned her head to look at the woman. She immediately had a shocked face, hurriedly wanting to bow down.

The woman of the Naga Tribe waved her hand. "No need to conduct the formal greetings."

"Matriarch."

The faces of the five male Nagas changed as they stood motionlessly, not knowing if they should bow down or not.

"Do not conduct the formal greetings. I happened to pass here and heard the noise, so I come to check the situation." The bamboo hat and the black tunic had covered her entire face and body. Her voice was mild and seemed to have the magical soothing effect. When her voice arose, Fei Ya and the other five males were all silent.

"Tell me what you know," The woman asked softly.

Fei Ya quickly nodded, slightly bent down, revealing a look of flattery, and then hastened to tell her about the situation related to Shi Yan.

That woman nodded gently. When Fei Ya finished, she was astonished for a while and then spoke up strangely, "I didn't expect that after him, the Yang family still has such a monster. Seems even if he completely disappears, the Yang family will not decline fast."

"Matriarch, that guy's really powerful. He's at the Sky Realm but could easily kill the two Silver-horned Electric Eels. It's terrific," Fei Ya interpreted.

"First Sky of Sky Realm..." The woman of the Naga Tribe muttered, slightly raised her head. She watched Shi Yan for a while before saying solemnly, "Even if a First Sky of Sky Realm warrior launches his full power, he can't kill two Silver-horned Electric Eels even in an hour. If he could do it that fast, it means his strength is certainly not just at the Sky Realm. The Yangs usually have some magical means. I think this kid isn't simple."

"Matriarch, we..." Fei Ya looked at the woman and asked for her opinion.

Waving her hand covered by a glove, the Naga Tribe woman casually said, "Do not take any action. We just watch. There is not only Bao Wen who is coming here. Hmm, I think Bao Ke will also be here shortly. We just stay here and watch."

"Ah, the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan is also coming?" Fei Ya and the others couldn't help but shout.

"Yes," the woman nodded and said, "The Yang family has to be removed from Barren City today. Their cultivating materials may become ownerless. It's unexpected if some people have wicked intentions. However, with the current situation, the calculation of

many people might fail."

"Is it true?" Fei Ya looked at Shi Yan with disbelieving eyes and said with surprise. "That guy only has the cultivation base of Sky Realm. If the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan comes here, what can he do? I think the Water Scorpion Clan's patriarch will kill him instantly, without any surprise."

"Such an arrogant person like him certainly doesn't have just that little strength. Let's watch. That guy's very lucky. I really didn't expect that the Yang family have this folded card. Seems like my guess is correct. Many people have made wrong calculations as they all thought that since that guy has been imprisoned in the Demon Area, he will not be able to retake the lead." The Snake Tribe's matriarch quietly sighed and commented with a sad tone.

Fei Ya and the others knew the relationship between her and Yang Tian Emperor. So, on listening to what she said, they all mused and didn't dare to have any ideas.

Outside the Yang family's walls, many clans of the Sea Tribes were slowly gathering. It seemed that all the Sea Tribes hotshots dwelling in Barren City already knew about the situation here. Intimidating aura rippled from time to time from the city.

It was unknown how many Sea Tribes supreme hotshots were hiding in Barren City, using special ways to conceal their auras and secretly observing the situation that was happening with the Yang family.

The young man, who was now the focus of everyone, was standing upright like a sharp sword plugged into the platform of the Yang family's main building. He wore a cold face while smirking. "With such a big and noisy incident like this, everyone will probably come here. I also want to see if these Sea Tribes' people are fools or not."

# Chapter 446: Arch the eyebrow

---

In the Barren City center...

Many hotshots of the Sea Tribes gathered, as well as human warriors. They were all watching the battle, which was worth being written in the Sea Tribes' history.

Almost two-thirds of the Barren City's warriors were here. They either came before the fight, or after hearing the news. They were all gathering outside the Yang family's walls, looking at a strange, young man.

The young man stood proudly on the platform with a calm appearance. Under the crowd's attention, he was not distressed but very relaxed. He had released the demonic insect to hinder Bao Wen of the Water Scorpion Clan, preventing Bao Wen from coming close to him.

A First Sky of Spirit Realm warrior was blocked by a level eight beast. He couldn't chop off that demonic insect; on the contrary, he kept retreating. Eventually, Bao Wen showed a sign of not being able to resist any longer.

This change terrified many Sea Tribes members, which changed their attitude towards the Yangs.

Even if a dominant force had declined, its intimidation would exist for life.

They thought that as Yang Tian Emperor was in confinement of the Demon Kings, it would lead to a major change for the Yang family. However, in the most difficult time, a young man appeared from nowhere. As soon as he launched his blow, he immediately caused the tragic deaths of Ming Hai, Yan Feng, and Fu Hao. Moreover, he released a level eight demonic beast that brought Bao Wen a miserable time.

This huge contrast frightened all the warriors who thought that

the Yang family would be removed from the Barren City today.

Those who stayed hidden in the dark with the intention of having a share of the cultivating materials didn't want to show up now, as they continued to hide their auras, waiting to see the situation before making their decision.

"As I said, whoever comes here today should die."

On the platform, Shi Yan suddenly became impatient, thundering with cold eyes.

Jiu Lan Xin's graceful body trembled. She suddenly had a feeling of insecurity and moved back subconsciously, looking for protection.

Unfortunately, even Bao Wen was blocked by the King of Demonic Insects this time. Basically, he couldn't provide her any protection. Hearing Shi Yan's shout, it was the first time she had a bad feeling.

Shi Yan's performance was completely beyond her expectation. How could she expect that Shi Yan had the King of Demonic Insects, that was able to suppress even Bao Wen!

"Don't you dare make any moves against me, or you will regret it afterward." Jiu Lan Xin gritted and shouted crazily, trying to show her toughness which was contrary to what she felt inside.

"You said that before," Shi Yan spouted, "The reason why I had been waiting that long was for Bao Wen to show himself. I want to let you know that after betraying the Yang family, even if you have someone's protection, you can't escape death." After pausing for a moment, Shi Yan suddenly smiled. "Now, it's time for your death."

Right after Shi Yan finished his words, a small gravitational field hovering above Jiu Lan Xin was activated all of a sudden.

Jiu Lan Xin's body shot straight up to the sky. The gravitational field stirred up her Profound Qi, preventing her from activating the defensive barrier.

Seeing the fatal end results of the others, she immediately cried in fear. "Save me! Save me!"

She was calling for Bao Wen.

Unfortunately, Bao Wen heard it but couldn't save her. The King of Demonic Insects had urged its force, as numerous silver light beams showered him. Each dot of light contained rich demonic power, along with the spirit of the King of Demonic Insects. Hence, although Bao Wen could see Jiu Lan Xin screaming for help, he didn't have enough energy to give her a hand.

"That's your end." Shi Yan burst into laughter, revealing a happy face. "An end by dismemberment."

Many beams of golden light shot out around Jiu Lan Xin. The moment the golden silky fibers appeared, they immediately cut Jiu Lan Xin's delicate body off.

There was no surprise. Jiu Lan Xin's plump and mesmerizing body was cut into countless small pieces by the golden silk, and then fell into the gravitational field.

Jiu Lan Xi was dismembered thoroughly.

The Sea Tribes and human warriors around all felt chilled to the bone. They were mute instantly.

The Sea Tribes members who shouted the loudest just now were frightened to death. They didn't dare to even look at Shi Yan. They were afraid that Shi Yan would suddenly take action and chop them off.

"As I said, no one can save you today." Shi Yan shook his head tenderly, as if he had just done some trivial stuff. He still kept calm.

"That Bao Wen..." Yang Zhuo muttered with a solemn face. "Anyway, he's Bao Ke's brother, with fame and a high status in the Water Scorpion Clan. If you fight Bao Wen, the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan will not let you go. The Yang family's

manpower in Barren City isn't enough to cope with the Water Scorpion Clan. Shi Yan, isn't it a little too much if you do that?"

"If the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan wants to fight with us just because of a b\*tch. I think he should step down from his position." Shi Yan smiled and assured softly. "Uncle, no worries. I know the limit. The Sea Tribes look down on the Yangs and secretly oppresses us when we are in a hard situation. I do this because I want to let them know that although our Great Grandpa hasn't come back yet, I still can cause them an unimaginable disaster."

Yang Zhuo looked startled.

Yang Mu, Yang Xue, and the others felt motivated. Everyone clenched their fists, and felt a pride they hadn't felt in quite a while.

"This fella really makes people..." Li Feng's eyes sparkled, looking at Shi Yan. She chuckled, as she felt that Shi Yan's charm could actually mesmerize her mind now.

Men in their powerful times naturally had a unique charm. Li Feng had lived in the Yang family for a long time. She always advocated force, and also worked hard on this aspect herself.

Shi Yan's performance today impressed her deeply, making her realize Shi Yan's charm.

"Little Feng, your heart's rippling with love. Hahaha." Yang Xue laughed and said gently, "Little Yan belongs to the Yang family. If you're attracted to him, I'm sure I'll help you. Hmm, with his charm, he can mesmerize all the girls in the Endless Sea in the future. You need to work hard on it, don't let the outsiders seduce him."

"Talking nonsense." Li Feng blushed, aggressively looked at her close friend and said softly, "If you keep talking nonsense, I will have no mercy for you."



Yang Xue smiled, not being afraid of Li Feng's threat, continuing to tease her.

Shi Yan's face remained unchanged. He just beamed a smile, pretending not to overhear these women's conversation. He just looked down and secretly released his soul consciousness to observe around.

"Not only has Bao Wen come here today," Shi Yan turned around, looking at Yang Zhuo and said, "It seems I don't have to go anywhere else. For the Yang family to continue its dominance in Barren City or not, we have to see whether those people have the courage and power."

Yang Zhuo's eyes lit up. He said pleasedly, "What do you mean?"

"I think that many Sea Tribes hotshots will use their secret ways to observe us. Perhaps, the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan might be present among them."

"If these people are hostile and take action together, we..." Yang Zhuo was worried.

"I don't think they will," Shi Yan frowned.

"It's a little risky."

"We can take risk one time. At most, we will just need to leave Barren City."

"Kid, you dare to kill my woman? I'm going to kill you!" Seeing Jiu Lan Xin's death, Bao Wen was enraged and roared.

"She's just a b\*tch. I already killed her, so what can you do?" Shi Yan stopped talking to Yang Zhuo, beamed a smile and lifted his hand to summon the King of Demonic Insects. "Get back here."

The King of Demonic Insects turned into a beam of silver light, leaving Bao Wen, and then reappeared on the platform of the Yang family's building.

At the same time, Shi Yan didn't take action personally. He took

a deep breath while his eyes became dark red, looking at the Sea Tribes and human warriors down there. His line of sight shifted to Bao Wen. "Even if I don't have the King of Demonic Insects and still want to fight with you, do you think you can stop me?"

These words were very arrogant.

All of Sea Tribes and human warriors were stunned, wearing a strange expression on their faces, as they wondered if this kid were insane or not.

He didn't know life or death indeed.

He was only at the First Sky of Sky Realm, but dared to say those arrogant words. Did he really want to challenge Bao Wen?

Was he crazy?

Everyone had an odd feeling about it.

"Without the King of Demonic Insects, you cannot even fart. I will kill you with my own hands."

Bao Wen was so indignant that he wanted to vomit blood. He went ballistic. "Kid, come down here if you dare to see how I finish you."

"I'm coming."

Shi Yan suddenly flew up from the platform of the Yang family's building, and then proudly paced in the void towards Bao Wen.

"Shi Yan, don't act recklessly."

All the Yangs couldn't help but scream in fear, as they didn't believe that he could fight one-on-one with Bao Wen without the King of Demonic Insects.

A Sky Realm warrior confronting a Spirit Realm warrior?

How could he win?

He was overreaching himself.

"It's alright," Shi Yan turned his head and smiled with full of

confidence. "Uncle, I'll let you see how powerful the ability to fight against the higher level of the Yang family is."

Yang Zhuo looked dulled.

Yang Mu and the others were also stunned.

"Well," Bao Wen grinned and shouted, "If you can use your Sky Realm cultivation base to take one shot of mine, I will ignore the animosity of you killing my woman. Moreover, I will continue to recognize the hegemony of the Yang family in Barren City. As long as I'm still here, I can assure that all of the Sea Tribes members will agree with this."

"Sure?"

"Yes."

"That's settled then."

# Chapter 447: Must change!

---

Many people thought that Shi Yan was crazy.

How could a First Sky of Sky Realm warrior fight against a Spirit Realm warrior? With such a big gap, how could he win?

On the platform of the Yang family's building, Yang Mu and the others all looked worried, as they didn't know what Shi Yan was capable of. The Sea Tribes and human warriors also revealed frightened faces, attentively looking at him and quietly waiting for something.

"Matriarch, is this guy insane?"

In the crowd, Fei Ya shook her head gently, expressing an amazed look.

The beautiful Naga woman with the bamboo-veiled hat seemed to be quietly watching Shi Yan, to see if he had any earth-shaking treasures.

"Such an arrogant kid! He either has a mental problem or a mighty strength. I don't think this guy's innocent; he must have some support. We just need to be quiet and watch." The beautiful Naga woman said with a voice full of expectations.

Some Sea Tribes hotshots, who mingled in the crowd while hiding their real auras, also frowned.

For the time being, everyone's eyes gazed at only one person.

Under the crowd's attention, Shi Yan's eyes reddened. He triggered his mind to connect with the Blood Vein Ring, releasing a strong soul consciousness to cooperate with it.

Before taking action, he had connected with the Blood Vein Ring. Although the soul in the Blood Vein Ring didn't send out an exact response, he knew that the ring would help him when necessary.

Sure enough, after his consciousness circled the Blood Vein Ring,

the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Holy Spirit God, the three living beings, suddenly had a strange change.

Three groups of strange energies wrapped around the three creatures in just a flash. A kind of surging energy that frightened people's souls immediately flowed out from them.

A vast infinite powerful energy spread out from the Blood Vein Ring and instantly poured into Shi Yan's abdomen.

The Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame fused together, interweaving with a bunch of his Profound Qi, which looked like a Yin Yang Fish Diagram. It was transporting a terrifying energy that even Spirit Realm warriors had to be worried about.

Shi Yan's eyes were bloodshot.

Negative energy overflowed torrentially, and its strength quickly grew up. The aura of the mystical giant sword suddenly arose from the Blood Vein Ring.

The sword turned into a bunch of blood lights came out from his palms.

A violent, evil, crazy energy spread out. At this moment, the surging energy caused unimaginable changes.

"I also want to see how you resist my attack."

Shi Yan grinned, feeling the torrential energy movement and then concentrated his power into the sword. The eyes on the sword gradually opened, having a terrifying red color. They looked like dormant demons in hell coming to earth.

Sizzle sizzle sizzle.

The massive protective halo above Barren City produced strange noises. This halo was built by Spirit Realm warriors, yet it seemed to be unable to withstand these powerful surging energies, showing a sign of rupture.

The faces of the Sea Tribes warriors changed while their eyes suddenly brightened up.

The eyes of the matriarch of the Naga Tribe sparked with a strange light. She screamed, "Such powerful surging energy."

Fei Ya was surprised, feeling a vehement energy flow that quickly spread out in all directions. Many Sea Tribes warriors wore painful faces on feeling that violent energy moving.

They suddenly felt that even breathing was difficult, as if there was a lofty mountain pressing their heads down, making their knees so flabby that they all almost kneeled on the ground.

"Be careful!"

"Stay away from that kid!"

"God, how could it be? How can that kid have such violent energy? Did I just have an illusion?"

"Impossible! Absolutely impossible!"

"It's impossible for a Sky Realm warrior to have such a powerful force."

Whether it was the Sea Tribes or humans, everyone screamed in fear and dodged, as they were afraid that Shi Yan's energy would press and break them.

The mysterious sword with the bizarre eyes emitted a red light that directly dashed towards Bao Wen, without any fancy moves. It seemed to split heaven and earth apart. An intimidating surging energy, which could petrify people, shot towards Bao Wen.

Strange five-colored lights flooded the space. With the attack from the sword, space here under the sea seemed to be about to crack at any time. The protective barrier twisted, changed, and absorbed all of the heaven and earth aura in Barren City's center to strengthen and save it from breaking down.

Bao Wen's complexion changed, revealing a trace of surprise. He

couldn't help but scream. "You...you have this energy?"

The giant sword didn't stop just because of his words. It released a scarlet rainbow, as if it wanted to split the world, which fired at Bao Wen all of a sudden.

Bao Wen's scorpion tail made rattling sounds. His cheeks were full of scales. A halo of dark brown lights rippled from his body, forming a light pillar that fiercely collided with the scarlet light of the mysterious giant sword.

Crack.

The light pillar that had just been formed by the dark brown lights was split into halves as soon as it touched the blood light of the sword. It was unexpected that Bao Wen's one full-power strike could not resist even for an instant.

Everyone was frightened beyond their wits.

The scarlet rainbow with its unpreventable force was still dashing over. Bao Wen's scorpion tail shook unceasingly and suddenly sputtered out a bunch of green lights.

In the green lights, a small green sword released the Intent Domain that contained everything. As soon as that small sword flew out, the barrier above Barren City immediately absorbed heaven and earth aura and then crazily poured into it.

The small, green sword expanded continually, becoming bigger and bigger, absorbing heaven and earth aura faster and faster. The tip of the green sword projected minute illusionary scorpions, shaking their heads and wagging their tails while releasing a cold and dark spiritual energy. The scorpion illusions were vivid, and they seemed to constantly attract various kinds of heaven and earth auras.

Suddenly, the scorpion illusions became extremely large, and flew towards Shi Yan from the tip of the green sword. At the same time, that sword turned into a bunch of green lights, directly

zooming over to Shi Yan's mysterious giant sword.

Attacking from two angles at the same time!

Bao Wen wanted to rely on the small sword to intercept Shi Yan's mysterious sword, taking advantage of the scorpion illusions that were condensed by a stream of consciousness and energy to kill Shi Yan.

Shi Yan shook his head and sneered coldly, "Well thought."

Above the mysterious giant sword, a strange evil surging spirit came out from those blood red eyes. When the scorpion illusions left the green sword for just one hundred meters, but were still far away from Shi Yan, they were suddenly affected by an invisible force and halted in the void.

Many beams of bloody light shot out from the red eyes as scarlet raindrops hit the scorpion illusions. The scorpion illusions were corroded like they were coming in contact with some strong acid, resulting in many eyelets.

At the same time, the mysterious sword suddenly smashed Bao Wen's green sword.

BOOM!

The green sword was covered by the bloody light, and penetrated by the evil energy. Under such a strike, the spiritual light of this treasure immediately dimmed.

Clash.

The green sword swayed a little bit in the air and then lost its vitality. Bao Wen's body suddenly swayed as if it was severely hit by a hammer, and his aura was gone completely.

The evil surging energy of the mysterious giant bloody light sword was simply earth-shattering. Under the urge of the three strange living beings, the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame, the mysterious giant sword released part of its



real power that continued to oppress Bao Wen.

Bao Wen paled. He had no more courage at this moment, and he retreated hurriedly. The mysterious sword seemed to keep chasing after him. No matter where Bao Wen dodged, the sword would pursue him closely, making him arduously run away.

The Sea Tribes warriors were terrified, and started to dodge in panic.

As soon as they saw Bao Wen coming, those warriors all cursed and hastily ran away from him at their fastest speeds.

Wherever the mysterious sword passed, it continuously released a surging evil energy. Any warrior who came close would be sluggish until they stood still on the spot, as if some evil soul power had penetrated into them.

The scene now was a complete mess.

Because of avoiding Bao Wen, many warriors ran in all directions, as well as the Yang warriors who also had to keep moving to avoid Bao Wen and the mysterious giant sword.

"Do you still want me to receive one blow of yours?"

Shi Yan hovered in the sky, grinning coldly. He shook his head and said sarcastically, "I'm still waiting. Where is your attack? Well, don't you just know how to run away? Do the Spirit Realm warriors only have that little ability?"

How could Bao Wen dare to say anything?! Even his Sacred level Secret Treasure had been defeated, and even if he had other secret treasures, he would not dare to take them out again.

All the Yangs became excited, blushing and bursting into laughter, their hands clenched tightly.

All of the insults, at this moment, seemed to be avenged completely.

With just the strength of one man, Shi Yan had suppressed Bao

Wen , who was at the Spirit Realm, making him run and avoid, not daring to attack.

With this kind of an incident, not to mention that they all were dumbstruck, even the matriarch of the Naga Tribe, who had highly-appreciated Shi Yan, was also stunned.

Half an hour later, the matriarch of the Naga Tribe shook her head, sighed, and muttered, "From now on, besides Yang Tian Emperor, the Yang family has another character, Shi Yan, who is even worthier of our attention. Even when Yang Tian Emperor was young, he could not reach that kid's level. It seems that the Yang family is still the Yang family. Just because Yang Tian Emperor was imprisoned, it's not like they will not be able to revive."

Fei Ya looked stunned, blankly looking at the young man who was floating arrogantly in the sky. She nodded gently, "So, he isn't arrogant, but he actually can suppress Bao Wen's strength. I did look down on him earlier. But it really is unbelievable! A person who is at the Sky Realm can defeat Bao Wen, making him run for his life."

## Chapter 448: Force you to give in!

---

Shi Yan was happy. Since his petrification hadn't approached the peak of mutation yet, the last time he had borrowed the powers of the three living beings, his flesh body couldn't endure it. When the vehement energy flowed into his body, he felt like his tendons and meridians were all ripped apart. As his body was too stiff at that time, his spirit, will, and fleshy body were all affected when moving. Using the power that didn't belong to him was like using a double-bladed sword. His body would bear the pain ordinary people couldn't even withstand. Even he himself couldn't bear that pain before his martial spirit hadn't been mutated.

But this time, it was different. As he had entered the Sky Realm, the mutation of his martial spirit had reached the peak, and his physique had gotten beyond his imagination. Unexpectedly, it had totally adapted with the power he had poured into it this time. Besides a little tingling in the tendons and meridians, he didn't have any other strange feelings. When the earth-shaking energy was running fast in his body, and he could feel the power overflowing his body; this made him want to cheer loudly.

He enjoyed the pleasure from the intimidating, wild power. Using his soul to communicate with the mystical giant sword, he found that this sword could absorb more of his energies. Only if it could gather enough power, it could generate a formidable force strong enough to destroy both the earth and the firmament. Bao Wen was like Mo Qi Ta; he had the cultivation base of First Sky of Spirit Realm. However, when he faced the attack from the mystical sword, he had no way to dodge. When the Sacred-level treasure and the mysterious giant sword collided, the spiritual Qi of the treasure vanished, as it had been directly turned into trash. From this minor detail, Shi Yan could confirm that the level of his mystical giant sword should be the God level! A God level treasure!

There was never a God level treasure in the entire Endless Sea.

But he got one in his hands now. What concept was this? God-level rare treasures could enhance the warriors' competencies thoroughly. Perhaps, it could help a warrior bring out abilities much stronger than his own realm. He clearly recognized how terrifying a God-level rare treasure was. "Bao Wen, didn't you want me to take one punch of yours?" Shi Yan faced up, laughing out loud. His aura was constantly increasing, torrentially emitting out like multi-ranged mountains. This gave people a helpless feeling that they couldn't cross it. Many warriors staying hidden in the dark also felt the increasing power from Shi Yan, causing fear to swell in their hearts. The Yang Family's new generation was even more intimidating than Yang Tian Emperor's generation. Everybody started to be concerned about the Yangs again. They now felt that even if Yang Tian Emperor died, the Yang Family wouldn't decline. The tremendous power Shi Yan was releasing had shaken everyone on the scene. All human and Sea Tribes warriors in Barren City would remember Shi Yan, and they would never forget him for the rest of their lives.

"Enough!" A cold voice arose from the crowd of the Sea Tribes as a member of the Water Scorpion Clan flying out. In just a blink of an eye, he had shielded in front of Bao Wen. The man frowned and spread both his hands. Numerous green patterned-light beams emitted from his palms, darting towards the mystical giant sword. In those green patterned beams appeared the illusions of thousands of toxic scorpions. Each scorpion was releasing a cold aura, aiming at the bloodshot eyes on the sword. "Da-ge!" Bao Wen shouted in excitement. He hurried to sway his scorpion tail to release the same green patterned light, blending with the other's light. More illusions of poisonous scorpions appeared inside the green light. This green light somehow had a miraculous effect, as if it was like a muddy puddle that could slow down the giant sword hacking down on Bao Wen. "You are the patriarch Bao Ke of the Water Scorpion Clan?" Shi Yan smiled as he was still floating in the sky. He nodded to the man and pointed at the mystical giant

sword.

Refined lights shot out one by one from his finger, entering the giant sword. As the giant sword was receiving his energy, it suddenly flickered and turned into a blood-like light, falling onto Shi Yan's palm. Holding the sword in his hand, Shi Yan looked at Bao Wen and Bao Ke, revealing a faint smile. He said deliberately, "Patriarch Bao Ke, will you be like your brother, wanting to battle with the Yang Family?" Bao Ke and Bao Wen looked pretty similar. They both had cold, dark, and thin faces. Cold light flared up from their eyes as they looked at Shi Yan, who was hovering arrogantly in the sky, snorted and said, "Until now, my Water Scorpion Clan has had no grudges with the Yangs. This event is unexpected, and Bao Wen has caused it himself alone. It isn't related to our Water Scorpion Clan."

"What?" Shi Yan grinned, then shook his head. "You're saying that the fact that Bao Wen triggered Jiu Lan Xin to mess with our Yang Family isn't related to your Water Scorpion Clan?"

"Yes!" Bao Ke said resolutely. Shi Yan was stunned.

"Da-ge!"

"Shut up!" The boisterous scene suddenly calmed down, as many members of the Sea Tribes looked at the patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan.

"So, what manners does your Water Scorpion Clan have?" Shi Yan frowned; his words weren't friendly at all. "Are you going to retreat and wait to see the Yang Family's situation and then decide how to deal with the Yangs?"

"I told you, Bao Wen's stuff isn't related to the Water Scorpion Clan." Bao Ke snorted, coldly glared at his brother and shouted at him. "Just because of a girl, you're fighting against our ally. Your discretion's getting worse." Unexpectedly, he gave Bao Wen a lesson. Bao Wen paled, wanted to say something, but finally kept his mouth shut under the warning eye of his brother.

"Bao Wen got his lesson. I think we should stop here. Anyway, you've killed that woman. I think you've already vented your anger, haven't you?" The patriarch of the Water Scorpion Clan mused, then faced up to talk to Shi Yan. Shi Yan smiled, nodded and said naturally, "Our Yang Family's been your good friend. Although we have some problems this time, it will not affect the relationship between us. Yeah, the Yang Family will still watch over Barren City. Nothing will change. What do you think?"

"Of course," nodded Bao Ke.

Shi Yan laughed, "Good then." Yang Zhuo and the others also felt happy, nodding at each other.

Bao Ke meant that his Water Scorpion Clan wouldn't have any different thoughts anymore. He seemed to know Shi Yan was really tough to go against, and he also knew that if he turned his back on the Yang Family this time, it wouldn't bring any benefits to the Water Scorpion Clan in the future. So, he had expressed his attitude and thoughts to Shi Yan in front of everybody.

"Our Naga Tribe's always maintained a good relationship with the Yangs. We always favor the Yang Family's position in Barren City. No matter what, as long as members of the Yangs stay in Barren City, the order in the city will still be under the family's control. As the head of the Naga Tribe, I want to express myself here, too." A soft voice arose among the people of the Sea Tribes. A beautiful female Naga wearing a bamboo veiled hat slowly walked forward.

"Matriarch of the Nagas!"

"She has also come here?"

"I can believe this woman's here." Many of the Sea Tribes couldn't help but sigh. They were discussing with low voices and strange looks.

"We, the Silver Shark Clan, also want to express our ideas." A

tenor came from a tall building on the south of Barren City. People then saw a man wearing a silver robe coming towards Shi Yan from the top of that building. His face was vague from a distance.

"Ah, the patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan!"

"Is it true that all heads of the tribes have come to Barren City today? They do appreciate the Yang Family."

"Wow! I didn't think that even the patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan has come here personally. It really surprises people." Warriors from the Sea Tribes and the human race suddenly burst out in discussion with surprised eyes. The Silver Shark Clan was the strongest among the other clans of the Sea Tribes. Yin Hui, the patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan, had the cultivation base of Second Sky of Spirit Realm, whose intimidating name was famous among the Sea Tribes, as he had used his arrogance and coldness to swagger undersea for years. Apparently, he had never been defeated. That year, when Yang Tian Emperor had entered the Spirit Realm and gone to the seabed, because of his arrogance, he had some dispute with Yin Hui. It was said that the two of them had a great fight undersea, but it wasn't clear who won. After that fight, the Silver Shark Clan approved the overlord position of the Yang Family in Barren City. As Yin Hui was as powerful as Yang Tian Emperor, and he was also the Spirit Realm warrior of the previous generation, he had a noble position among the Sea Tribes members. Many young Sea Tribe men idolized him. When this man was young, he had come to the Endless Sea and provoked many Spirit Realm warriors to engage in battles with him. And, they had rarely received news of him being defeated.

No one had expected that Yin Hui would be at Barren City today. Moreover, he had reaffirmed the overlord position of the Yang Family in Barren City. The Silver Shark Clan was stronger than the Naga and the Water Scorpion Tribes. Also, Yin Hui was personally stronger than Li Sha and Bao Ke. It made his words heavier than theirs.

"Yeah, everything stays the same. It benefits everybody. Our Yang Family only wishes for peace in Barren City. As long as we can maintain the original state of Barren City, we can attract more human warriors here for trading. This is also the best situation to your Sea Tribes." Shi Yan was still floating in the air, looking at Yin Hui and said with cold tone.

"Boy, you're more rampant and arrogant than Yang Tian Emperor that year. But, I like it." Yin Hui smiled, then said mildly, "No matter it's on the seabed or on the Endless Sea, the stronger ones have the voice. As you have demonstrated your sufficient capacity, we feel relieved to leave Barren City in your hands."

Shi Yan's brows slammed together. "One day, if you and Yang Tian Emperor both fall, my promise today will be invalid." Yin Hui snorted. "If you want to receive respect from others, you have to be strong enough. Currently, you've shown that you are strong enough; that's why I've given you my approval." After Yin Hui had spoken, he didn't want to linger. He just smiled and continued, "Don't be so arrogant. The power you have now isn't completely belonging to you. Without borrowing the external forces, you're just a Sky Realm warrior. Kid, put your best into it. Although the Silver Shark Clan won't bother with your stuff, you have to deal with the Black Flood Dragon Clan yourself. Haha, This time, the ones who want your Yang Family to doom the most isn't us the Silver Shark Clan, or the Naga and the Water Scorpion Tribes. If you could earn the approval from that fella of the Black Flood Dragon Clan, then you can be considered to hold the whole Barren City in your hands." Yin Hui laughed coldly as he was moving further and further. In just a short time, he had disappeared from the Barren City.



# Chapter 449: The Matriarch of the Naga Tribe

---

After Yin Hui had left, Bao Ke and Bao Wen brothers from the Water Scorpion Clan didn't linger; they looked at Shi Yan once and then left.

Many warriors gathering in the Yang Family to see today's events knew that nothing was exciting enough to see anymore, and hence gradually left. Not long after that, hotshots from Human Race and Sea Tribes in the Yang Family also left in silence. Shi Yan walked to Yang Mu and the others, then looked at the people leaving, smiled and spoke up to Yang Zhuo. "Big Uncle, are you satisfied now? The four people who had come to mess with us have been eradicated. As for those who followed them, I think it isn't necessary to chase and kill them all. Anyway, the future of Barren City still depends on them." Yang Zhuo felt content, nodding his head constantly. "Kid, you aren't ordinary at all. I didn't think that you could force Bao Ke and Bao Wen to nod their heads. Haha, seems your Great Grandfather's calculation is flawless. With you here in the Yang Family, Barren City won't have any other unexpected events." Yang Mu, Yang Zhuo and the other disciples of Yang Family also smiled and praised his uncommon methods.

"The Black Flood Dragon Clan?" Shi Yan frowned, thought for a while then continued, "I heard that the Black Flood Dragon Clan's the strongest clan among the Sea Tribes. They're much more intimidating than the Silver Shark Clan, the Naga Tribe, and the Water Scorpion Tribe. The Black Flood Dragon's patriarch Nu Lang is at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, and he's addressed as the peerless warrior in the seabed. Is it true?"

Yang Zhuo couldn't help but change his face on hearing him talking about the Black Flood Dragon Clan. He nodded his head and sighed. "It's true."

"How about their attitude towards us? Is the Black Flood Dragon Clan not very friendly with the Yang Family?"

"Yes, it's also true."

"Why?"

"That year when your Great Grandpa had come to the seabed and wanted to rule Barren City, the Silver Shark Clan, the Water Scorpion Tribe and the Naga Tribe agreed, but Nu Lang from the Black Flood Dragon Clan didn't. Yin Hui and Li Sha couldn't help with that. To get the approval from Nu Lang, your Great Grandpa had personally visited the Black Flood Dragon Clan. Rumors say that he had a tense situation with Nu Lang. But then, don't know why but Nu Lang agreed at the end. However, they aren't so friendly with the Yang Family. I think something was wrong with your Great Grandpa's deeds that year." Shi Yan was startled. "Nu Lang said he would give the Yangs time to prove that we are able to control Barren City. If we could benefit the Sea Tribes, he would approve of the Yang Family's position in Barren City. Although your Great Grandpa had sharp tricks, he had put the Barren City under control. After Yang Family had taken control of Barren City, we had transported a great deal of cultivating materials to Barren City. This benefited all tribes. Afterward, Nu Lang reluctantly approved of the overlord position of the Yang Family in Barren City."

"But now, it seems Nu Lang isn't satisfied?"

"Yeah, after your Great Grandpa had been confined in the Demon Area, we've lost the control of the Kyara Sea. Afterward, the Yang Family had no way to supply enough cultivating materials for Barren City. This made Nu Lang very discontented. Maybe that's why he wants the Yangs to lose our control to Barren City." Yang Zhuo's face darkened. He mused for a while before speaking up again, "If Nu Lang didn't keep this attitude, I think Ming Hai, Yan Feng, and Fu Hao wouldn't have dared to provoke the Yang Family. Even though Nu Lang didn't come out personally, his

attitude was enough to let those people act carelessly."

"No wonder." It was easy for Shi Yan to understand. Nu Lang had approved of the overlord position of Yang Family that year purely because of benefits. As Nu Lang had seen more benefits for the members of Sea Tribes when the Yang took control of Barren City, even if he didn't want to admit it, he knew how to make decisions as the patriarch for the benefits his tribe would receive.

As things had been escalated, the Yang Family was declining, and they hadn't been able to supply most of the cultivating materials for Barren City for three or five years. Of course, Nu Lang's veiled disapproval would arise. It was obvious why he had made such decision.

If he saw from Nu Lang's standpoint, who didn't really like Yang Tian Emperor, when he found that the Yang Family couldn't continue bringing benefits to him, he would have done the same.

"Seems like I have to think about the method to handle Nu Lang. As he's the strongest warrior of the Sea Tribes, if he doesn't say anything, it means he wants to wait and see." Shi Yan mused for a while, then frowned as he was somewhat worried. "If the Yang Family can show its previous power and continue to supply cultivating materials for the Sea Tribes, I think even if Nu Lang's discontented, he won't say anything. But..."

The Endless Sea was in a special situation at present. The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers had invaded Kyara Sea and Yuan Luo Sea. Big fights happened continuously in the sea. Maintaining trade under such circumstances was really difficult. The main point here was that the Yang Family couldn't control the Kyara Sea, and they weren't brave enough to work there. Thus, it was much difficult now to collect the cultivating materials there.

If he could solve this issue, Nu Lang would agree. But solving this problem wasn't easy at all. "Due to the complicated situation, we couldn't transport the materials for cultivation to the Sea Tribes in

Barren City. That caused a grudge between the Sea Tribes and us, the main reason for this great move." Yang Zhuo sighed, "I know the problem, but what to do about it? Your Great Grandpa is still in the Demon Area. He can't come back within a short time. Up there, forces from everywhere are keeping an eye on us. It's good that they didn't come here to kill us. And it's impossible to do business with them."

The group of Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Li Feng and the others also shook their heads with a helpless expression. Shi Yan let out a sigh then looked at the group of warriors from the Naga Tribe. He said in surprise, "Why haven't they left yet?" Yang Mu's group also paid attention, looking at them. They saw the group of Fei Ya not leave, but walk towards them. Li Sha, the matriarch of the Naga Tribe, was wearing a bamboo hat accompanied with a loose black robe, swaying her snake tail to move to the main building of the Yang Family with a delicate deportment. She looked at Yang Zhuo then said softly, "Can I get over there for a chat?" Yang Zhuo was surprised. After a long while, he nodded and replied with serious manner. "Precursor Li Sha's humbled yourself to come here, it's our honor. Please come!" As the guard standing down there heard his assignment, he quickly opened the stone gate and crossed his arms, bowing down. Li Sha smiled and said to Fei Ya, "Come with me." The two female Nagas mounted up the building. Not long after that, they approached the group of Yang Zhuo. When Li Sha arrived, she took off her bamboo-veiled hat, and her long, silky hair cascaded down like a waterfall. That was a charming, sexy face with vermillion lips, bright-colored eyes and a jade-like skin tone. Li Sha was worth the title of the most famous beauty among the Sea Tribes. She was delightful and ample, naturally exuding a breathtaking charm that could take people's hearts and souls. She was like a succulent ripe peach that people regretted they couldn't bite even once, extremely beautiful.

As she had taken off her bamboo hat, the whole stage suddenly brightened up. All males of the Yang Family, including Yang Zhuo,

were shaken, unable to help but throw her admired looks. Shi Yan also complimented her in his mind, as he was amazed at her astonishing gorgeous beauty. She was a beautiful mature woman, whose level was as high as Yu Rou of the White Wing Clan. Sexy appeal emitted from her entire body. She was really the enemy of all men, who could enchant all kinds of people, making them want to put her on the ground and begin to caress her.

"Matriarch Li Sha." Yang Zhuo bowed to her with a somber countenance. "Precursor Li Sha." Yang Mu, Zang Zhou, and the others held their breaths, staring at her without blinking even once. However, they all conducted the respect they should offer her. Legends said that Li Sha and Yang Tian Emperor had had an ambiguous time together. Although Yang Tian Emperor had never admitted it, members of the Yang Family didn't dare to neglect this woman.

Li Sha only glared at Yang Zhuo, then shifted her eyes to Shi Yan, speaking up with a soft tone. "Hero among the youth. When Yang Tian Emperor was at your age, even he wasn't as dangerous as you are. The Yang Family is always the Yang Family, where the next generation is stronger than the previous ones. I've come to finally know it."

Shi Yan smiled, "Thanks for your compliment." Li Sha nodded, pointed at Fei Ya next to her and said, "Thanks for giving them a hand. Without you, perhaps the Silver-horned Electric Eels would have killed them."

"The Yang Family and the Naga Tribe are good friends. I should be helping them. Precursor Li Sha, you don't need to be too polite." Shi Yan smiled and nodded at Fei Ya. Fei Ya's pretty eyes sparked with a strange light. She smiled, "Kid, you've surprised people. I have looked down on you before. Yeah, I didn't believe that you could save Barren City. Unexpectedly, you killed Ming Hai, Fu Hao, Yan Feng and Jiu Lan Xin. You also made Bao Ke and Bao Wen admit the Yangs' overlord power. It's me who has

underestimated you."

Shi Yan shook his head and burst out laughing. "You don't need to explain. I should thank you, too. Along the way, if you didn't give me the information of Ming Hai and his allies, I couldn't be sure about it. Yeah, it's you who helped me make the decision. I should say thank you."

"You're polite," Fei Ya giggled. "Don't be too polite like that," Li Sha said tenderly. "The Yang Family and our Naga Tribe have a close relationship. I did want to stand up for your Yang Family in this event. I want to make it clear that this time I came here not to take responsibility for the Yangs, but I would have interfered to save your lives when Ming Hai's group became excessive. I've talked to the other tribes. I have no voice if they don't want the Yang Family anymore, but I said I wanted to save your lives, and that's all I could have done for you guys."

Yang Zhuo was shaken. His eyes brightened up.

# Chapter 450: Wild Schemes

---

Shi Yan was also dazed. He looked at Li Sha, bowed down to give her respect and said, "Precursor Li Sha, it's too much you've done for the Yang Family. On behalf of the Yang Family, I thank you a lot."

There were many tribes among the Sea Tribes. However, the Black Flood Dragon Clan, the Silver Shark Clan, the Naga Tribe and the Water Scorpion Tribe were the four biggest tribes with the largest number of strong warriors.

The Naga Tribe was placed behind the Black Flood Dragon Clan and the Silver Shark Clan. Also, Li Sha's cultivation base wasn't as strong as Nu Lang's and Yin Hui's. However, she had come when the Yang Family was in danger, and she had done her best to save the lives of the Yangs. Obviously, she didn't need to aid the Yangs.

As she didn't throw a stone at them when they fell down the well, and was prepared to help them at the crucial time, if what Li Sha said was true, the Yang Family had to thank her.

"The reason why I stay is to explain something. In fact, members of the Sea Tribes aren't all bad as you've imagined."

Li Sha was hesitant before she watched here and there, then said, "When I proposed to protect the Yang Family's members, Nu Lang and Yin Hui agreed immediately. Even Bao Ke, whom Yang Tian Emperor had hurt before, was hesitant for a while and then agreed. No one wanted to exterminate the Yangs."

"What?" Shi Yan grinned, "So, the four great leaders of the Sea Tribes had a meeting to deal with our Yang Family?"

"I don't want to keep it from you," nodded Li Sha. "We did negotiate."

Shi Yan laughed but didn't say anything.

"We'd discussed that if the Yang Family could continue to benefit

the Sea Tribes, I think no leader would have different thoughts." Li Sha beamed a forced smile. "But since Yang Tian Emperor's been confined in the Demon Area and the Yang Family's lost the control in Kyara Sea, it's been four years since you stopped transported rare cultivating materials for the Sea Tribes. This makes many members of the Sea Tribes who depend on the Yang Family uncomfortable."

Yang Zhuo sighed begrudgingly. "We have no choice."

"I know," Li Sha smiled. "It would be alright if we had never taken it for granted. But it's been years. When a Sea Tribe member needs materials for his cultivation, we have your Yang Family to exchange for it. We've formed that habit. But then, you've stopped the supply. Many people who don't have the materials to cultivate turn to bear the grudge with you guys. Right at this moment, Ming Hai and Fu Hao stood up and committed that they could replace the Yang Family to provide the materials for our cultivation. You say should we be moved?"

"Ming Hai and Fu Hao?"

Yang Zhuo beamed a cold smile, sneered and said disdainfully, "With only the two of them?"

"Of course, they can't." Li Sha continued, "But they got the connection with the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace."

Finally, Yang Zhuo had to change his face. "How could it be!"

"Nothing's impossible." Li Sha arched her brow then smiled. "The Yang Family has earned a fortune on the seabed through Barren City. Do you think the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace wouldn't be jealous? If the Yangs could do it, the Caos and the Martial Spirit Palace could do it, too. Ming Hai and Fu Hao had come to these two forces. With this situation, shouldn't they be moved?"

Shi Yan frowned, then sighed, "I got it."



Yang Zhuo also nodded. "If it's so, I think the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace wouldn't turn them away. Indeed, they would help them discretely."

"That's the truth," Li Sha smiled. "Although the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace can't take care of themselves at this moment and couldn't send strong warriors to the Barren City, when they heard about the situation, they did show their interest. Ming Hai and Fu Hao told them that they could persuade the Sea Tribes. With this win-win solution, it had been settled like that."

Even though people from the Yang Family didn't want to accept it, they recognized that the situation was exactly like what Li Sha had shared.

"No wonder why Fu Hao, Yan Feng, and their allies had such guts. Hmph... Turns out they had the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace as their backing." Yang Zhuo gritted his teeth, smiling coldly. "Right now, the Endless Sea is a chaotic mess, but the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace still have their wild schemes to poke their noses in Barren City's business. They're really ambitious."

"Everyone has ambitions." Li Sha nodded. "It's the real situation. However, the four clans, we remember the favors the Yang Family has done to us. So, we all agreed to secure the Yang's generations and keep you away from extinguishing. Yin Hui, Bao Ke and me would come and observe the four of Ming Hai's group in case they push things too far."

"So, I've misunderstood you guys." Shi Yan furrowed his eyebrows. "If I were you, I would do the same. For the future of the clan, letting go of an ally who's not useful anymore is a normal sense. As you've remembered the favor by the Yangs and left us an exit, it's our friendship."

"We aren't like your mankind," laughed Li Sha.

The complexions of Yang Zhuo's group were a little bit

embarrassed.

"I'm just honest, don't be angry." Li Sha smiled. "The Yang Family had done many good things for the Endless Sea. If the Yangs didn't subdue the Fourth Demon Area, I think the Endless Sea's warriors wouldn't have had these many years living in peace. However, when they saw the Yang Family was about to be defeated, no force in the Endless Sea wanted to give you a hand. Ironically, they thought about how to share the Kyara Sea first. Those people didn't want to give you guys a way out. They even wanted to uproot your whole family. Isn't it true?"

Shi Yan's, Yang Zhuo's and the others' faces became more grimaced.

"Although we, the Sea Tribes, have some selfish members who always think about them first, we still know how to maintain friendships." Li Sha laughed arrogantly. "I've just told you that our Sea Tribes are better than humans in this aspect. In this regard, no matter it be the Sea Tribes, the Dark Dwellers or the Demon Dwellers, none of us are as cruel as humans, who can do anything to earn benefits."

"Sigh."

Yang Zhuo sighed and nodded begrudgingly.

Mankind was famous for their influence and heartlessness among the other great species. Even if they didn't say anything, they couldn't change that fact.

That was why when the other great species doing business with mankind always kept their conservative attitude. Many species didn't like humans, as they thought that humanity was the wickedest in the world. They were cunning; they didn't play by the rules, and could do anything to earn profits. There were numerous shortcomings to count.

"I said this in the hope that you would understand. Although

what our Sea Tribes did this time was atypical, it wasn't really ruthless." Li Sha had mused for a while before speaking up again. "This matter's solved today. I hope that the Yang Family wouldn't have a grudge with the Sea Tribes. Otherwise, it doesn't benefit any of us. If we can maintain the original relation, I think for the benefit we are about to receive, we will stand by the Yang Family's side. But if you hold grudge and do something disadvantageous to our Sea Tribes, I think it's not what we want to see."

"It's too soon to talk about that." Shi Yan contemplated and smiled. "The patriarch Nu Lang of the Black Flood Dragon Clan hasn't expressed himself yet. As the strongest warrior of the Sea Tribes, if he doesn't recognize our Yang Family's position, we can't live in peace in the Barren City. If it happens that way, the Yang Family will leave Barren City. At that time, perhaps you guys can cooperate with the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace. Haha. Anyway, allow me to remind you one thing. Currently, the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace can't take care of themselves. It's unknown if they could solely rule the whole sea area in the future like they are doing now."

Divine light sparkled from Li Sha's gorgeous eyes.

Shi Yan smiled deliberately. "One day, I'm afraid there will be a bigger event happening in the Endless Sea. After that event, I'm not sure the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace could stand still. If you have a connection with the Caos and the Martial Spirit Palace now, I don't know whether you can have the same relationship with the Yang Family as what you currently have."

"Kid, you're so haughty. You're stinkier than Yang Tian Emperor that year."

Li Sha understood his thought, eyeing him. "Why do you assume that the Yangs can prevent the Caos and the Martial Spirit Palace from becoming the sole overlord of the Endless Sea? With only you? Although you're extraordinary, you're far behind Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian. Do you really think that borrowing external

force could make you stronger than them?"

Shi Yan smiled and didn't answer her.

Li Sha gently frowned. "Kid, are you just spouting or you really have that confidence?"

"No," Shi Yan shook his head, "But I have to do that. Perhaps, it couldn't be done in just a short time. But I will consider it my goal. Maybe ten years or even twenty years later... Anyway, I think it would be thirty years max, and I can certainly do that."

People of the Yang Family were shaken. Their eyes all brightened up.

Members of the Yang Family all wore excited faces, as they were incited by the future he described, as if they were watching a picture being unfolded by Shi Yan.

This was the picture of the Yang Family holding the overlordship all over the Endless Sea, and every force had to bow to them.

"Your wild schemes are much bigger than your competence." Li Sha gazed at him for a long while before she nodded her head. "First, I wish you could fulfill your goal soon. If so, I will give you a big applause, and I will also be happy for Yang Tian Emperor."

She paused for a second then grinned. "Anyway, first, you have to persuade Nu Lang."

"Nu Lang?"

"Yeah. Now he's busy with refining a Spirit level treasure, so he hasn't come to Barren City yet. However, Nu Lang seems to tilt towards the collaboration with the Cao Family and the Spirit Martial Palace. He thinks that it would be more beneficial for the Sea Tribes if the Caos and the Martial Spirit Palace control Barren City together, more than your Yang Family doing that."

"Where's Nu Lang?"

"Of course, in the Black Flood Dragon Clan. He wants to refine

Spirit level treasures, but too bad he couldn't find the flame that was scorching enough. He has tried to do it many times, but he's failed since he couldn't melt the materials. He has quite a headache now, so I guess he's not in a good mood. If you want to find him at this time, I don't think he would give you a good face."

"Fiery flame with a high temperature?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened up, laughing out loud.

# Chapter 451: Rich Blacksmith Resources

---

"Why are you laughing?"

Li Sha furrowed her brows, wearing a disgruntled face when she thought that Shi Yan was taking pleasure in other's misfortune.

"Nothing. I just didn't expect that a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior like Nu Lang also would meet difficulty refining secret treasures." Shi Yan's expression became serious. He thought and then continued, "Precursor Li Sha, thanks for your explanation. With the information you've provided, I think we will have a better arrangement."

"What should be told, I've told you all. What the Yang Family will do, I can't control it. But I do hope that the Yangs would stay in Barren City like before. The Sea Tribes have cooperated with you guys for many years. Please don't let this current event affect our mutual cooperation. If there's nothing else, I think the other leaders won't have any other thoughts." Li Sha hesitated for a while before giving another advice.

"Matriarch Li Sha, thanks for your reminder," said Yang Zhuo.

"Don't be too polite," smiled Li Sha and then turned to Fei Ya. "Then, I will not bother you guys anymore. The other warriors in Barren City were manipulated by Ming Hai, Yan Feng, Fu Hao and Jiu Lan Xin, and as those four are dead, you guys shouldn't attack them further. Maintaining the order of Barren City is what the Sea Tribes want to see."

Shi Yan and Yang Zhuo exchanged looks.

"I should go back." Li Sha didn't linger, leaving together with Fei Ya.

Yang Zhuo's group was calm, looking at the Sea Tribes warriors leaving. Then, they all wore an excited face.

"Little Yan, I'll take you to see the materials that we are storing."

Yang Zhuo contemplated then suddenly burst out in laughter. "That part of cultivating materials has taken account of just several percents of the goods we store. But in the others' eyes, it's huge. This time you've visited Barren City, if you need any materials to cultivate, just take them from the storage."

Yang Mu and the others left with happy countenances.

"Oh, good." Shi Yan felt refreshed, following people of the Yang Family behind the meeting hall, entering the secret channel leading to the vault that kept many kinds of fundamental stones.

Looking at the colorful, dazzling cultivating materials, Shi Yan was moved.

This batch of commodities included crystals for cultivating, rare five-element metals, and many rare, precious pellets and other materials found on the seabed.

Any types of materials for cultivating that were rare on land could be found here. If there were some good blacksmiths and alchemists here, with this tremendous amount of cultivating materials, they could refine many kinds of rare treasures and pellets.

When the Yang Family still had had the control of the Kyara Sea Area for many years, they had done trading with hotshots from the Sea Tribes and Demon Dwellers from the Demon Area. Over hundreds of years, the Yang Family had been gathering so many types of cultivating materials from the Endless Sea, the seabed and the Demon Area. The Yang Family could control the Kyara Sea and attract warriors from everywhere. This was also related to this huge amount of cultivating materials.

"Do you need anything?"

Yang Zhuo wore a proud face. "Speaking of cultivating materials, the Yang Family has much more than the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace. As long as they are the materials on the

Endless Sea, the Demon Area or undersea, we almost have them all. Some blacksmiths and alchemists of the Endless Sea will come to the Yangs if they need rare materials."

"Big Uncle, do we have our private blacksmiths and alchemists?" Suddenly, Shi Yan remembered the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success he had obtained from the exotic land. If they had an excellent blacksmith, with this book, he could learn the secret methods from it.

"Blacksmiths and Alchemists are really scarce in the Endless Sea. In the Divine Great Land, these two classes of warriors are very honored. So, excellent blacksmiths and alchemists will travel around, and they won't stay in one place for a long time."

Yang Zhuo frowned and explained slowly. "When the blacksmiths and the alchemists come to one place, they come for the materials and then start to refine stuff. When they're done, they will continue their journey to other places to find new materials. Blacksmiths and alchemists don't have a permanent residence. I heard that only in the Divine Great Land is there a place where the blacksmiths and the alchemists gather. Currently, there's nothing like that in the Endless Sea."

"So, who had refined the Immortal Nature Pellet for the Yang Family?" Shi Yan was surprised. Without a private alchemist, who had produced this pellet for the Yangs?

"Some alchemists visited the Endless Sea and came to our Kyara Sea for some rare cultivating materials. Your Great Grandfather had talked to them personally, using the materials they need to exchange for their help. They then refined some pellets for the Yang Family and left afterward."

Yang Zhuo explained then shook his head. "Outstanding blacksmiths and alchemists usually don't want to be controlled. Even the Yang Family couldn't make the Spirit level blacksmiths or alchemists produce treasures exclusively for the Yangs. Most of the



time, we just use money to buy the goods. But those are usually not matched with us. Only the customized treasures could promote one's power the best." Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

"Let alone the Yang Family, even the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace with their formidable forces in Endless Sea couldn't have excellent blacksmiths or alchemists. In the Divine Great Land, the best blacksmiths and alchemists have just the Spirit Level. And those excellent blacksmiths at this level will come to the Divine Great Land. They will absolutely not linger around the Endless Sea." Yang Zhuo sighed reluctantly.

"So, the outstanding blacksmiths and alchemists are delicious cakes in the eyes of the forces from everywhere?"

"Of course."

"Is Nu Lang from the Black Flood Dragon Clan a blacksmith? Otherwise, why does he want to forge secret treasures?" Shi Yan was suspicious, and couldn't help but ask.

Yang Zhuo smiled, shaking his head. "No member of the Sea Tribes was born with a Fire martial spirit. I've never heard of any hotshots of the Sea Tribes becoming a real blacksmith or alchemist. Since the Sea Tribes members' bodies can't generate a fiery flame, they will not have the human flame, and they can't control the fiery flame skillfully. That makes them unable to become real blacksmiths or alchemists. Excellent blacksmiths and alchemists will not accept the Sea Tribes members as their disciples either."

"How about that Nu Lang..."

"He isn't a blacksmith," Yang Zhuo smilingly shook his head. "He found a volcano undersea, threw some rare cultivating materials in there and melted them into treasure shapes. He then uses his soul to refine them, using his blood to grind. This way can be considered a way to forge treasures. But it's thousands of miles away from what the real blacksmiths will do."

"Do the blacksmiths do the same when they forge the treasure?"

"Of course not," Yang Zhuo had a serious face. "Apparently, a true blacksmith has a human flame. If he's better, he can use the earth flame. In legends, the best alchemists even have the Heaven Flame! When a real blacksmith refines the secret treasure, he needs to carve the earth-and-heaven mysterious formation inside the treasure personally. Those magical formations are the essence of refining. Every magical formation has its own special effects. It can collect energy, or can gather the fire elements, or even condense the beast's soul to create telepathy with the owner. With just a flicker of one's thought, the secret treasure will answer instantly!"

"To check whether the rare treasure is made by a blacksmith or not, we just need to see if there's a mystical formation in it. The ones that have the mystical formations are made by blacksmiths. The ones that don't have the formation are just created by combining and melting some materials. That's not refining. However, the treasures that many warriors from the Endless Sea are using, including our Yang Family, are all fabricated with this bluntly cheap method."

"So, Nu Lang isn't a real blacksmith?" Shi Yan burst out laughing. "Haha, if the Sea Tribes know how to do smiting, why would they need the blacksmiths? If anybody could become a blacksmith, it wouldn't be a rare profession anymore. Otherwise, how could the blacksmiths maintain their superior position?" Yang Zhuo also laughed.

"Yeah, seems like becoming a blacksmith benefits a family or even a force." Shi Yan was startled, as a strange ray of light sparked from his eyes.

"Of course. In the legends, during the ancient times, each warrior was both a blacksmith and alchemist. According to the legends, the warriors at that time were divided into classes, blacksmith or alchemist. Any warrior would consider refining weapons and pellets as a part of their realm. So, each warrior was a blacksmith

and an alchemist. Warriors at that time wouldn't count on someone else to fabricate their treasures and pellets, as they would do it themselves. However, as time changed, the warriors were then divided into blacksmiths and alchemists among the community of warriors. In our times, the blacksmiths and the alchemists have become the special characters among the other warriors. I'm not sure whether this change is good or bad."

Yang Zhuo said after letting out a sigh.

Shi Yan attentively listened to his explanation. He was stunned for a long while. His eyes sparked radiant beams as if he was considering something.

"Little Yan, do you need any materials? Just take them directly," smiled Yang Zhuo.

"I'll stay here for several days. I'll check it out first. You guys can go." Shi Yan suddenly woke up from his thought, smiled then said.

"Stay here?" Yang Zhuo was surprised.

Shi Yan nodded to confirm. "Yes, this place. Big Uncle, don't worry. The Black Flood Dragon Clan wouldn't take action for now. Wait until I get out of here, I'll come to the Black Flood Dragon Clan to visit Nu Lang."

"Visit Nu Lang?" Yang Zhuo's face slightly changed.

"Don't worry. I have my calculations." Shi Yan was full of confidence. "I assure that I can solve Nu Lang. I'm 100% sure."

People of the Yang Family couldn't make head or tail of it. They didn't know where he got his confidence from. However, today, Shi Yan had brought them many surprises. Although they found it vague, they still had hope in him.

"Good then. If you need something, just ask. If you're not sure, just find me directly." Yang Zhuo didn't say anything further, leading the group of Yang Mu back to their place.

# Chapter 452: Pacifying

---

Only Shi Yan was left in the vault.

That big vault stored thousands of types of cultivating and refining materials. They were so colorful and brilliant that they could easily dazzle people. There was a piece of yellow paper stuck on each kind of material to tell the name and its primary functions.

When the blacksmiths and the alchemists came here, they just needed to read the notes to know what kind of pellets or secret treasures those materials could fabricate. As for the heat control and the precise amount, they depended on the method the blacksmiths and alchemists would use.

According to Yang Zhuo, when one wanted to become a blacksmith, he had to have the human flame, and it would be best if he could use the earth flame. If one had the heaven flame, even a lousy blacksmith could forge extraordinary weapons.

The human flame was the worst; the earth flame was better, and the heaven flame was something they could only meet by fortune. The heaven flame was the divine tool in the hands of blacksmiths and alchemists

In his line of sight were all sorts of refining materials. Shi Yan had the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame in his body, among which, the Earth Flame was the best flame to do the refining. In his Storage Ring, he had the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success from the toxic land, which was the method written by a Spirit level blacksmith.

Flame, materials, and methods were the three fundamental elements required by a blacksmith. He had them all.

If he paid attention, he could become a blacksmith using his flame and materials to fabricate all kinds of secret treasures with different effects. He could even make the treasures perform their

best that would give him the perfect assistance.

Sitting neatly in the vault, Shi Yan frowned while musing.

From his head to his feet, flows of negative emotions continuously oozed out, bringing all kinds of thoughts which were sufficient to disorder his mind, flooding his head.

When he killed Ming Hai's group, he had used the Gravitational Field to grind more than ten warriors. Negative energies from those people were then poured into his acupuncture points. Now, he felt a vague pain inside his whole body while the negative energies were transferred into his body.

Currently, these negative energies were being filtered, and they started to generate the counter force that affected his mind.

As he had known beforehand that he had to undergo this phase, he had asked to stay in this vault, and would use his tough will to dissolve them all.

His mind barged into the Blood Vein Ring. He called the Ice Cold Flame, and a flame that looked like a shining white gem slowly came out, floating in front of him.

"Freeze me. Before my mind restores, and if I haven't sent you any order, do not unseal."

Shi Yan sent a message using his Soul Consciousness.

The Ice Cold Flame looked at him carefully.

These years, as the Ice Cold Flame had been living inside the Blood Vein Ring, it knew about all kinds of strange and mysterious things he had. It knew Shi Yan's habits, and when to help him reduce the pressure on his body.

The Ice Cold Flame then released the extremely cold air. This cold air gathered but not diffused, turning into white mist pouring over his body.

Crack crack.

Shi Yan's body started to be covered by frost. Freezing sounds echoed around him, and within only three seconds, his whole body was enveloped inside a five-meter-thick, solid ice layer.

Like an ice sculpture, Shi Yan sat there neatly, not moving an inch as a strange force had frozen him.

The Ice Cold Flame was the ancient heaven flame, which was specialized in using the extreme cold power in earth and heaven. After it came out from the Blood Vein Ring, it could mobilize cold air enough to freeze the whole island. So, it needed just a short period to freeze Shi Yan.

Inside the ice block, Shi Yan was refining the negative energy in silence.

Staying in there, even if he had all kinds of brutal thoughts in his head, he couldn't take any action, being confined inside the ice block.

The refined aura from the negative energies flooded his mind. However, under the effect of the Ice Cold Flame, even his thoughts seemed to be frozen.

In this state, he didn't need to worry that he would destroy everything around him while he was refining all the negative energies.

Time flew by, and one day was gone.

All the negative energies had been refined, turning into flows of peculiar power, overflowing from seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points all over his body to his tendons, bones and even blood. They strengthened his physique and enhanced the purity of his Profound Qi. Four precious drops of Immortal Blood had been condensed in his palm as well.

A part of the peculiar power was absorbed by the Star Martial Spirit. This made the Star Martial Spirit radiate jade-like beams, and triggered numerous star dots moving over his heart. This

enhanced the absorption and the density of the Star Martial Spirit, helping the Stars' peculiar abilities grow, and the Stars Martial Spirit to thrive more stably.

Shi Yan slowly woke up.

He immediately felt the extreme cold all over his body. His mind flickered, sending his thought to the Ice Cold Flame.

A suction force came out from the snowflake form of the Ice Cold Flame. The cold around his body was removed, sucked into the Ice Cold Flame.

In just a flash, the ice covering his body vanished into thin air, as if it had never existed.

Shi Yan exhaled, sensing the change in his Star Martial Spirit. Also, he was holding four precious drops of the Immortal Blood. Shi Yan smiled, speaking to the Ice Cold Flame, "Alright."

"I'm getting back in the ring," replied the Ice Cold Flame.

"Hold on," Shi Yan frowned and halted the Ice Cold Flame.

"What's up?"

"We had made a deal that when I entered the Nirvana Realm, I will let you go." Shi Yan's complexion was somber. "However, after I entered the Nirvana Realm, we had a special situation. You'd sunk into silence so I couldn't fulfill my promise. But now..."

"For the moment, I don't want to leave." The Ice Cold Flame sent him a message before he could finish his talk. "The reason why I wanted to leave was because I felt one day you would take all that I had and enslave me just like my previous master, who had considered me his precious treasure. But after living together for a period, I can see you're different from him."

"What?" Shi Yan was astounded. "So, you won't leave me?"

"I don't have this thought just yet." The Ice Cold Flame mused, then sent him another message. "Wait until I find a place suitable

for me to evolve, I'll tell you. At that time, I hope you will let me go. But for now, I'll stay with you. You can be considered a foreigner among the human race. Living with you is safer than wandering alone and then getting captured by other God Realm warriors."

Shi Yan burst out laughing.

His thoughts flickered again. The Earth Flame, the Holy Spirit God and even the King of Demonic Insects flew out from the Blood Vein Ring.

The Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, the Holy Spirit God, the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm – three eccentric living beings and two demonic beasts, all showed themselves in the vault. They were forming a five-colored energy halo that rippled out from Shi Yan.

"Retrieve your powers."

Shi Yan's face slightly changed and he immediately shouted. The formidable Profound Qi in his body suddenly moved, creating a huge dark light shield, covering the surging energy of the gorgeous five-colored halo.

The five living beings hurried to withdraw their powers, preventing them from expanding when they heard him shouting.

After all of the energies had been retreated and the vault restored its quietness again, Shi Yan frowned and then talked in a low tone. "It's our fate that we can be together. I let all of you out this time to make something clear." The Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Holy Spirit God had turned into three separate beams of light, floating in front of him. The Devouring Gold Silkworm and the King of Demonic Insects were on his left and right, waiting in silence.

"I know my blood has an extreme effect on creatures and existences like you guys." Shi Yan lowered his voice, looking at the



Devouring Gold Silkworm and the King of Demonic Insects. "I promise, from now on, as long as I'm alive, I will give you a drop of blood every other month to help you evolve."

He looked emphatically at the King of Demonic Insects. "Whether or not you give me the Life Original Fluid, this promise is valid as long as you stay with me. Even if, at some point in the future, you have given me all of your Life Original Fluid, my words won't change."

Then, he pointed out and squeezed out two drops of his dark-red immortal blood. He wrapped them with his thought and made them move towards the Devouring Gold Silkworm and the King of Demonic Insects.

These two living beings revealed their eager eyes watching the Immortal Blood. They took the drops in, and when they looked at Shi Yan again, their eyes had become friendlier.

Shi Yan smiled then nodded, shifting his look towards the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Holy Spirit God. "I don't know what kind of chance or special materials in heaven and earth you guys need to upgrade. But, I promise you that one day when I have something that can benefit you guys, I'll give it to you immediately. Later on, if you find some places you want to stay and cultivate, I'll not force or bind you. I'll let you go." The Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame were the three living beings without physical entities. As they heard him say so, they all sent him thoughts to show their appreciation.

"There're many kinds of cultivating materials in this vault. Most of them are very good to humans. But I don't know if you guys want them or not. You can go and check. If you find something you want, or it's suitable for your cultivation, just take it." The Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame were excited, directly flying away to search around the vault.

It was something that actually suited these three living beings.

The three living beings had moved around the room, and unexpectedly found something that could help them evolve. They absorbed the materials, then returned to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

# Chapter 453: Memory transmission

---

"If you guys are still living with me, I'll do my best to help you evolve. But, I want to make it clear that even though you are with me, once I find out you have a different thought, I will not show you any mercy."

Shi Yan mused as his face darkened. "Maybe my current cultivation base isn't enough to subdue you, but I believe that I can oppress you all one day. If any of you have the guts to betray me or do something harmful to me, even if you can run to the ends of the world, I'll make you pay a big price. I'll exterminate every trace of your existence!"

The five living beings didn't send him any message.

"Good then. I'm done with the bad words. Currently, I want to become a blacksmith, but I don't know anything about blacksmithing. Can any of you help me with this?"

"I can."

Unexpectedly, all five living beings sent him their thoughts simultaneously.

Shi Yan dropped his jaw.

"I can tell you the refining method. What the Holy Spirit Sect used to create me, I can also tell you that," explained the Holy Spirit God.

"That year, many blacksmiths had come to the center of the earth to borrow the melting heat of lava there to refine their secret treasures. As I was being stashed inside the scorching lava, I got to know some refining methods from those blacksmiths," said the Earth Flame.

"I don't know much, but I know the refining methods to create living beings like us. People from the Heavenly Palace had carved some refining formations on my body." Unexpectedly, even the

Devouring Gold Silkworm had answered him. It seemed after the Devouring Gold Silkworm had obtained the Immortal Blood, its manners towards Shi Yan had a great change.

"I also have some formations to forge secret treasures," replied the King of Demonic Insects.

"I have some memories of the blacksmith!" The Ice Cold Flame confidently sent him a message. "If I impart these memory imprints to your head, you can become a blacksmith!"

The Holy Spirit God, the Earth Flame, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Ice Cold Flame, all sent him a positive answer telling him that they knew something subtle about blacksmithing.

Especially the Ice Cold Flame, whose soul was once occupied by a blacksmith, as it had a telepathic connection with that blacksmith. That was how it knew all the refining methods from that blacksmith. This surprised Shi Yan the most.

"Good! Excellent!"

Shi Yan laughed, as he was incredibly joyful. He wanted to fabricate something, but he couldn't become any sect's disciple. When he asked those living beings, he hadn't held any big expectations. Anyway, they weren't human beings, so he didn't think that they could help him much.

Turned out it was beyond his expectation. Each of them knew something about the refining methods more or less.

"We'll start with the Holy Spirit God. Please tell me the refining methods. Use the Soul Consciousness to lecture them all to me." Shi Yan sat down neatly in the vault, smiled and waited for the Soul Consciousness of the Holy Spirit God.

Flows of Soul Consciousness with all kinds of method to condense and refine the Holy Spirit God started to be imparted into his brain.

The method to create the Holy Spirit God was the most precious method of the Holy Spirit Sect in the Endless Sea. Beside the Cult Master of the Holy Spirit Sect, even the senior elders in the sects with a profound cultivation base couldn't know about this.

The Holy Spirit God was the condensed essence of refining. It knew the details of the refining process. Each beam of Soul Consciousness had become each fiber of memory in Shi Yan's brain, directly showing him the subtle features.

The method to refine the Holy Spirit God was really mysterious. They had collected many strange demonic beasts, fine souls of human warriors, together with the other rare treasures with Yin features. All of these were then smelted in the Black Yin Cauldron, which was burned by more than ten Nirvana Realm, Sky Realm and God Realm warriors of the Holy Spirit Sect. They had imprinted their thoughts in it to nurture the blended soul inside the cauldron. Through many years of being refined and discharging impurities, the Holy Spirit God was gradually formed.

Once the Holy Spirit God had its own consciousness, all disciples of the Holy Spirit Sect would put their faith power in it to provide it a constant and torrential, peculiar energy to boost its growing pace. The Holy Spirit God then absorbed the Qi from heaven and earth for years before it had finally become the real Holy Spirit God.

This kind of refining method was strange, very different from the other standard methods.

They used the soul to refine, collected faith power and Qi from earth and firmament to condense, and the heavenly lightning to filter impurities. With only the ordinary train of thought, one wouldn't get to know the ingenious, mystical details related to it.

As he was taking in the beams of pure thoughts in his head with the mysterious characteristics, Shi Yan was panic-stricken and moved, but he sat still. It was unknown how long it had been since

the Holy Spirit God stopped sending its memories. Shi Yan was sinking into the state of mysterious refining conditions. He didn't recognize what was happening in the outside world. His body was now in a magical state, as both his heart and mind were learning from the imparted experiences to explain this marvelous refining method.

It was like a brand-new roll of drawing was gradually unfolded in his head. Through many details of the Holy Spirit God's refining process, he had another level of knowledge, deeper than what he had known about the earth and the firmament.

Using the power of earth and firmament, and carving the ancient refining formations which carried all kinds of the most amazing inner essence, were also the ways of using intent domains. In the Sky Realm, each time the warriors broke through a realm, it wasn't only because of the Profound Qi they had accumulated. The recognition and good grasp of martial arts and intent domains were the keys to a successful breakthrough. Shi Yan had a bottleneck he couldn't solve. But through the marvelous transmission of the Holy Spirit God's refining process, he vaguely felt that perhaps through refining, he could breakthrough the realm and receive great benefits.

He gradually woke up after an unknown period of immersing in this state.

When he opened his eyes, he found that the five living beings were still floating in front of him, but the Holy Spirit God didn't send him any thoughts. Seeing him wake up, the Earth Flame regarded him and then started to send him some refining methods that it knew.

Many blacksmiths would come to places which had the earth flame to refine their treasures. This could help shorten the refining time. The earth flame was fiercer than human flame. So, it was more suitable to forge secret treasures. Those blacksmiths had borrowed the scorching lava inside a ten-thousand-year

volcano to smelt the materials. They had shown many details and refining methods there. The Earth Flame had its own life and consciousness, and thanks to its curiosity, it had memorized many methods from the blacksmiths. Although it didn't know what those methods were used for, it knew they were extraordinarily precious experiences.

If a blacksmith dared to use the Earth Flame to refine secret treasures, his realm wouldn't be low. The refining methods of those people were the essence. The Earth Flame had imparted these methods to Shi Yan, among which were the standard methods and formations that blacksmiths used regularly. Shi Yan knew that he couldn't perceive those mystical formations at once. He just tried his best to remember and carve those memories deep in his soul. Long after that, Shi Yan woke up and looked at the Devouring Gold Silkworm.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm then started to send messages to him.

As it was a demonic beast, the refining methods it knew were related to demonic beasts.

Those were the secret methods to refine beasts that the Heavenly Palace's warriors used. First, they would send their Soul Consciousness into the beast's soul, using the beast's favorite cultivating materials to earn its trust. Then, they would use their blood to feed the beast and gradually form a connection with it. When the beast used the warrior's blood and Soul Consciousness, it would eventually become a part of that warrior.

The Heavenly Palace's methods of training beasts were different from the typical methods other blacksmiths had been using. Shi Yan carefully considered each detail. He then found out that this refining method couldn't help him much at this time. Through this beast training method, Shi Yan knew how to treat the Devouring Gold Silkworm and the King of Demonic Insects, as he knew how to connect with the beasts. Suddenly, the King of

Demonic Insects sent its Soul Consciousness to him. As expected, the refining methods it knew were similar to what the Devouring Gold Silkworm had told him.

Being a demonic beast, it used to have a master. The refining method it knew was what its former master had used to connect with it, tame it, and turn it into a part of his, combining its demonic power with his power. This wasn't what Shi Yan needed right now.

Eventually, he looked at the Ice Cold Flame.

"The memories I have are really complicated and huge in amount. If I use the Soul Consciousness to impart them, you can't learn them clearly enough," The Ice Cold Flame sent him its thought. "I can compress those memories into a streak of thought and store it in your Sea of Consciousness. But, it takes time to perceive those memories for sure."

"How long it would take?"

"It depends on your host soul's capacity. If your host soul can learn fast, your perceiving speed will be fast enough."

"Perhaps it would take half a year, I think. Yeah, it's already fast. Anyway, those memories belong to a real blacksmith. And, that fellow was a Spirit level blacksmith! If you can be imparted with all those memories, I think you will be a real blacksmith too. It's the hundred-year essence of a blacksmith."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. This was what he needed the most right now.

This full knowledge of refining methods was the best for a beginner like him.

"Let's do it. I will open my mind to receive your memories."

"Excellent!"

The Ice Cold Flame didn't linger, turning into a beam of light and



directly sinking into his mind.

The icy cold spread out over Shi Yan's body entirely in just a blink.

Although the Ice Cold Flame had suppressed its power, the cold air still chilled Shi Yan to the bone. It seemed like even his thoughts were frozen, and his consciousness was fuzzy. In his brain, the bizarre memories of the Ice Cold Flame were like diffusing silky fibers of memories. Those fibers intertwined then slowly condensed into memory. The thought inside that memory was really complicated and tangled. This thought then expanded to thousands of different scenes while the light in this thought changed unceasingly.

The Ice Cold Flame had released all the memories about the blacksmith, then turned back into a beam of light, leaving Shi Yan's head.

Shi Yan's complexion was stiff. He closed his eyes and then immersed himself into a marvelous intent domain, still maintaining his meditating position.

# Chapter 454: First time doing blacksmith job!

---

It was the whole life experience of a Spirit level blacksmith.

His host soul turned into a beam of light, entering the halo of the memories. It was like he had just visited a whole new earth and firmament!

Scenes of treasure refining process appeared in that light of memory. It told the story of that Spirit level Blacksmith from the time he had known nothing about refining. He then tried to practice the refining method. Step by step, he gradually held a good grasp of the secret techniques in refining treasures. His experience had been built up through thousands of times of refining treasures. The scenes of his progress were shown one by one inside the halo of memory.

His host soul sank into it, watching countless scenes moving quickly in front of his eyes. It was like he was visiting a museum. All of a sudden, he felt helpless as he didn't know where to start.

He found the scene in which the blacksmith had started his training in refining treasures, calmed down and started to perceive the practice.

This Spirit level blacksmith used to know nothing about refining, and his knowledge of the subtle features of refining was just a white blank.

The blacksmith used a human flame. The first time he refined something, he had used various metals and crystals to forge a rough ring. A simple Spirit Gathering Array was carved on the ring to absorb the energy from the crystals. This ring was the simplest secret treasure with minor functions. It could absorb the Profound Qi and release it inside with just a flicker of thought from its master. But it could burst out only once.

The energy a simple Spirit Gathering Array could absorb was limited. Perhaps it wasn't even as strong as a full-force strike from a Disaster Realm warrior.

However, to Shi Yan, it was really tough to forge just a small treasure like that.

He lingered on that scene, quieted down his mind to grasp the knowledge. It was an unknown period of time until he could remember all the details.

He then left the halo of memory, wandering around the vault in search for the necessary materials to fabricate this Spirit Gathering Ring.

His thought fluttered as he was urging the power of the Earth Flame in his body. A small flame emerged from his palm while his finger was continually pointing at the metals in front of him. The three types of black metals, jade crystals, and flint flew out one by one, falling into his small flame.

Those three materials were being refined in the flame. He didn't know how long it had been until he was finally done. He then sent his Soul Consciousness into the flame. Inside the liquid that resulted from the three materials' complete smelting, he saw numerous impurities. Controlling the fiery flame, he started to melt these impurities down.

However, when he had just enhanced the fiery flame, the liquid from the materials smelting evaporated directly.

Shi Yan frowned. He knew his first time refining something had failed.

Apparently, he hadn't mastered his control over the fiery flame. When he wanted to use the flame to melt the impurities, he had pushed it a little too much and had accidentally evaporated the materials he had been refining.

He hadn't even combined the materials completely, no need to

mention embedding the Spirit Gathering Array in it. If he couldn't carve the Spirit Gathering Array, he couldn't even form the initial shape of the treasure.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan didn't feel angry. He didn't hurry to start it all over again but tried to control the flame, using his soul and mind to control it. Gradually, he got used to the degree of the flame when he adjusted it, trying to feel it every time he increased the heat. This helped him have a more accurate heat control.

This process took him a lot of time. Waiting until he realized that he could control the fiery flame well enough to refine the impurities, he took out a new set of the three materials and continued to forge the Spirit Gathering Ring.

When the three materials were gradually being melted in the flame, he was able to control the flame well to increase or decrease the power in time.

He was extremely careful this time.

The fiery flame was increasing little by little. After it reached the right degree, the liquid from the material's melting didn't evaporate while the impurities had been turning into smoke, burning down inside the flame.

He felt joy. However, when he continued to increase the heat, the three materials continued to be melted. He immediately knew that the temperature was over the three materials yielding limit.

He tried doing it again.

The cultivating materials in this vault were really rich, enough for him to waste. In this vault, he didn't care about his meals or sleep, and wholly focused on his first treasure refining.

The Spirit Gathering Ring was one of the simplest secret treasures, as it required only three kinds of materials. He had tried eight times before he could finally have it done.

Eventually, he could eliminate the impurities. After he had fused

the three materials, he used the cold air from the Ice Cold Flame.

As the cold ice was released, the three materials which had been combined in one chunk suddenly condensed.

Crack!

Due to the intense cold air, the three materials cracked down into pieces of brown stone.

He failed again.

Shi Yan took a deep breath, rubbed his temples and beamed a forced smile.

The simplest procedure of refining treasure had wasted much of his energy. Not only did he need to precisely control the heat of the Earth Flame, but also needed to be patient when he condensed the material, as it required to be carried out in an orderly way, and couldn't be finished in a rush.

The more impatient he was, the faster he would fail. This was like the cultivation process of a warrior. Calming down his mind, he proceeded to a new round of refining process.

Time flew.

After nine times of failure, inside the vault, he had an absolutely new realization in using cold air to condense the melted materials. Finally, he had successfully refined the three materials into the initial shape of the ring. The jade-like transparent ring had undergone so many failures to have this primary shape of a ring.

Inscribing the Spirit Gathering Array!

His intention changed. He concentrated attentively on refining the Profound Qi in his body, turning it into a beam of light pouring into the Spirit Gathering Ring.

Guiding the strange energy of the materials inside the Spirit Gathering Ring, he started to work like he was painting. Under the guidance of the Soul Consciousness, he engraved the Spirit

Gathering Array on the Spirit Gathering Ring.

Beams of Soul Consciousness attached to the Spirit Gathering Ring. His Soul Consciousness was moving at extremely fast speed. Each time he had urged this strange energy, his own energy was consumed much. Only a small mistake would chaotically disrupt the path creating by the strange energies.

Strange energies in the Spirit Gathering Ring suddenly ran disorderly like a group of mad horses. A crack echoed from the Spirit Gathering Ring, and it exploded.

Shi Yan had a headache, shaking his head while looking at the broken ring. He mused for a while before starting all over again.

He had failed twelve times already.

When carving the Spirit Gathering Array, the energy to be spent would be enormous, which would cause some minor mistake midway. After each mistake, the Spirit Gathering Array would change accordingly, leading to the explosion of the ring.

To portray the array, he had to do it coherently without any interruption in the middle of the process. Also, he must not distract himself to lead to any mistakes, even the tiny ones.

Only when he had done everything accurately in carving the complete Spirit Gathering Array on the ring could he retrieve his Soul Consciousness.

It was simple to say, but really tough to do.

He had done the trials continuously, and his failures also came successively. This attack almost had him collapsed, giving him a dispirited feeling as if he could never see the hope of success.

The simplest refining had unexpectedly wasted a lot of his energy and will. But, he still hadn't succeeded. He now realized that the blacksmith stuff was even more strenuous than warriors' cultivating process! In the past, he had progressed quickly from the Nascent Realm, and none of the difficulties he had met were as

tough and complicated as this refining.

Sitting neatly in the vault, he frowned while looking at the materials he had trashed. Shi Yan then held his breath to concentrate and restore his mind.

After adjusting his breath for a while, he felt his mind and Qi had been recovered to the peak, and attempted one more time.

This time, the embryonic form of the Spirit Gathering Ring had been created several times faster than his previous trials. Practice made a man perfect, that was surely true. After many times of refining, he didn't fail to make the embryonic form of the ring.

Afterward, the Spirit Gathering Ring was finished. He then used his Soul Consciousness to urge the strange energies of the three materials themselves and guide them to draft the Spirit Gathering Array.

He was completely concentrating this time. He didn't even blink, just kept gazing at the Spirit Gathering Ring.

The thoughts from his Soul Consciousness turned into light beams, guiding the strange energies running inside the Spirit Gathering Ring. He was using his Soul Consciousness to carve the simple array. Moreover, he was receiving constant feedback from the mystical essence of this array.

Due to his extreme focus, sweat had covered his entire body not long after he had started. Beads of sweat were rolling down his face from his forehead.

He didn't dare get distracted. As if he were entering the bedevilment phase, his mind was wandering in some mysterious realm while his Soul Consciousness was traveling through the ring. He carefully controlled the strange energies and drew the simple Spirit Gathering Array. This step was to complete the ring.

Drawing it at one go!

Tinkle!

A tinkling sound echoed from the Spirit Gathering Ring as the ring was radiating an immense silver halo. Inside the ring was a weak suction force that ordinary people couldn't sense.

Shi Yan was drenched in sweat, smilingly looking at the silvery Spirit Gathering Ring.

He then took out a medium quality Profound Qi crystal and put it in the ring. The Spirit Gathering Array on the ring was invisible at first, but after the Profound Qi started to pour into the ring, it gradually appeared, as the small ring had activated its magical suction force to draw the energy.

The Spirit Gathering Spell on the ring had been activated.

The ring started to absorb beams of energy inside the Profound Qi crystal as the Spirit Gathering Array guided them into the ring.

Roughly one hour later, a medium quality Profound Qi crystal had turned into stone. The energy inside had been absorbed completely.

After the ring had absorbed energy from a medium quality Profound Qi crystal, it became translucent. Moreover, the silver halo was getting brighter, and could light up the area ten meters around it.

Shi Yan took out a high-quality Profound Qi crystal and put it in the Spirit Gathering Ring. He then observed the process where the ring was taking in the energy.

Soon, that crystal was drained. Shi Yan smiled, as he felt he had achieved something really good. He put another high-quality Profound Qi crystal inside the ring.

One day had passed, and the Spirit Gathering Ring had absorbed five Profound Qi crystals

The ring became dazzling. Inside the ring, vehement surging energy was rippling. If he released the energy at once, it would be equal to a full force strike of a Disaster Realm warrior.



Shi Yan felt content.

At his first time in refining treasures, after so many failures, he  
aced it in the end.

## Chapter 455: Top Dog

---

As he had successfully fabricated the Spirit Gathering Ring, Shi Yan finally gained his first experience in refining. He took some materials for his later refining process and then left the vault.

It was hard for the Yang Family to restore the peace in the house.

Yang Zhuo and the others saw him walking towards them, and couldn't help but ask what he had done during the two months he had spent in the vault. He answered them that he had stayed there to perceive his realm, but he didn't mention anything related to refining.

It'd been two months. The stubborn warriors in Barren City had behaved well, as they had paid the fees on time and didn't dare conduct impudent provocations. As Ming Hai's group had been killed, human warriors in Barren City realized that even though Yang Tian Emperor had been confined somewhere, the Yang Family still had the power to make them wish to die rather than being tortured alive. Under Shi Yan's brutal deeds, those people didn't dare to remain obstinate, as they were getting back to their normal manners toward the Yangs.

The Black Flood Dragon Clan hadn't sent any messenger to show their friendliness. This strongest tribe in the seabed seemed not to have any reaction to the great event created by the Yang Family in Barren City. Seemed like they weren't about to give their opinions either.

The three great chiefs of the Silver Shark Clan, the Naga Tribe, and the Water Scorpion Tribe had shown their attitudes, which calmed the Yang Family. So, even if they hadn't received any reactions from the Black Flood Dragon Clan, they still felt fine.

"Big Uncle, any move up there on the sea?"

In the great hall of the Yang Family, Shi Yan furrowed his brows,

asking for the events that happened during the two months. "According to you, you had sent someone to the Xia Family in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area. Have they given us an answer?"

"The Xia Family has responded. They said that we can leave Barren City and stay in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area." Yang Zhuo smiled, "Xia Qing Hou has kept our old friendship in mind. He said that if the Yang family moves to the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, he will give us three islands so we can stay and cultivate there."

"Seems like Xia Qing Huo's a good person." Shi Yan nodded. "So, what did you answer him?"

"If you hadn't come to Barren City, perhaps we would have left here and stayed in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area as Xia Qing Hou had offered us." Yang Zhuo's face became serious. "Anyway, if we want to move to the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, I'm not sure if the other fellows of the Endless Sea would track us down and trouble us. We haven't had the good relationship with the Penglai Holy Land and the Martial Spirit Palace. As we're living in Barren City, we're out of their reach, and they can't do anything to us. But if we come to their territory, it's unknown if they would want to deal with us. I replied him that we've solved the problem in Barren City. So, we don't have the intention to go up to the sea for now."

"Sounds fine," Shi Yan mused for a while, then spoke up again. "Big Uncle, I want to visit the Black Flood Dragon Clan. I can't ease my mind as long as that Nu Lang keeps silent. Only when we can deal with the Black Flood Dragon Clan and made Nu Lang approve our position in Barren City can we stay at ease."

"Nu Lang's a conservative man. He's hard to deal with." Yang Zhuo's complexion slightly changed. "Recently, although the Black Flood Dragon Clan hasn't gone against the Yang Family, their attitude towards us isn't friendly either. If the Yang Family hadn't done many good things for the tribes undersea, I think Nu Lang wouldn't be content with his own lot. As we've been in the disadvantageous position, together with the troubles given by the

Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace, I don't know what calculation Nu Lang has."

"Because we don't know his attitude towards this, I want to visit the Black Flood Dragon Clan once to solve this problem."

"Are you sure?" Yang Mu wore a solemn face and said seriously, "Little Yan, I can't think about how you have the confidence to persuade Nu Lang." Yang Zhou, Yang Xue, and the others also had their suspicions.

During the two months Shi Yan was staying in the vault, Yang Mu 's group had considered it, but they couldn't know why Shi Yan could be so sure about it.

They were worried that if Shi Yan went to the Black Flood Dragon Clan and had any dispute with them, the members of that clan would trouble him a lot.

Although Shi Yan had shown that he was strong enough to deal with the Spirit Realm warriors two months ago, members of the Yang Family were still worried about him. No matter what, Nu Lang was the strongest warrior of the Sea Tribes, with a cultivation base at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. Even if he were in the Endless Sea, with his realm and cultivation base, everyone would have to fear him.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian could have outstanding competences thanks to the fortuitous encounter. In fact, their actual realm wasn't as high as Nu Lang's. This was the reason why warriors from Endless Sea didn't dare to come and mess up with people undersea. Nu Lang's Third Sky of Spirit Realm had subdued human warriors, making the ones who had wild schemes towards the seabed content with their lot.

Without Nu Lang, perhaps Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Ti Tian, and the others would have soon extended their tentacles to the undersea.

Nu Lang wasn't a friendly person, with an ill temper and cruel

personality. In these recent years, he had never shown mercy to humans who dared to swagger in the seabed.

Once there were humans who provoked the dignity of the Sea Tribes, Nu Lang would definitely take action to make those wanton humans recognize the fierceness of the Sea Tribes.

"Little Yan, if you want to meet Nu Lang, you have to make sure everything's prepared." Yang Zhuo contemplated, and then said solemnly, "If you can't be 100% sure, you'd better wait for a while until your Great Grandfather comes back from the Demon Area. It would be much better if you visit Nu Lang at that time."

"No need to wait," Shi Yan smiled. "I'm sure. Because I have the thing Nu Lang has wanted the most."

Yang Zhuo's group was surprised.

"Heaven Flame!"

Shi Yan grinned. A fiery flame burst out from his palm with a scorching heat. In just a blink of an eye, Yang Zhuo and other people had sweat on their bodies.

The eyes of Yang Zhuo's group all brightened.

"Heaven Flame!" Yang Zhuo was dumbfounded as he was shaking. "It isn't the Yin cold class Ice Cold Flame, right? What kind of heaven flame is that? Little Yan, is this flame of yours the real heaven flame?" He knew about the Ice Cold Flame in Shi Yan's body. However, the Ice Cold Flame had the Yin cold features, that weren't suitable for refining treasures. Thus, although he knew that Nu Lang was frustrated to find a blazing fiery flame, he didn't think about Shi Yan's Ice Cold Flame.

As Yang Zhuo saw the Earth Flame with its really high temperature when Shi Yan had just released it, his eyes brightened up immediately. Now, he knew that besides the Ice Cold Flame, Shi Yan had such an amazing fiery flame that was absolutely suitable for refining treasures.

"Little Yan, you... How could you have this thing?" Yang Mu was wearing an excited face as he was extremely joyfully. "Why do you fella always have the treasures that everybody desperately yearns for? The legend about the Heaven Flames has been spread out in the Endless Sea for so many years, but we've rarely seen one. Why you always have those strange living beings?"

"Good karma," Shi Yan smiled.

Yang Xue and Li Feng had astonished light flash across their pretty eyes as they were looking at Shi Yan with joy.

"This is excellent!"

Yang Zhuo laughed, patting on his shoulder, and then said happily, "With the Heaven Flame, no matter how stubborn Nu Lang is, he should know well to consider it. Haha... No wonder you're afraid of nothing. Turns out, beside the Ice Cold Flame, you have this kind of a Heaven Flame."

"Don't worry," smiled Shi Yan.

Everybody nodded with a bright complexion.

"Where's the Black Flood Dragon Clan?"

"Yeah, Li Feng has visited there once. She knows the Black Flood Dragon Clan. Just let her take you there." Yang Zhuo rolled his eyes and suddenly gave his suggestion.

Traces of being astonished crossed Li Feng's beautiful eyes. It was like her elegant face was glowing as she agreed with pleasure. "I've been to the Black Flood Dragon Clan. If you want to go there, I will guide you. Haha... I'm not sure what attitude those Black Flood Dragon Clan fellows would wear if they know you have what Nu Lang needs."

"That's good."

"When will you set off?" Yang Zhuo smiled.

"Well, I'm free anyway, so we can go now. For the time being, I

think there would be nothing big happening in Barren City. What do you think?"

"Alright."

Yang Zhuo nodded, shifted his line of sight to Li Feng, and then spoke up again with an odd face. "Little Feng, I give Shi Yan to you. Don't bully him along the way."

"How can I dare?" Li Feng giggled, her pupils sparking with her high spirit. "It's the best if he doesn't bully me. He's much more dangerous than I am. Even if I want to bully him, I'm not able to do so."

"Yeah, in short, you have to behave," Yang Zhuo arched his eyebrows, laughing.

"We should go." Shi Yan didn't linger, reminded Yang Zhuo something then left with Li Feng. After they had left the Yang Family, he didn't hurry to leave the Barren City but visited a tavern in the city.

"Boy, are you coming for a drink again? Last time you said that you're a member of the Yang Family. Did you lie to us?" The storekeeper remembered him, greeting him with a smile. "I heard that the Yangs have a top dog who killed Ming Hai, Yan Feng and the other two. If you are one of the Yangs, you have to know him, eh? Haha, if he comes to our shop, I will give him free wine."

"What?" Shi Yan was surprised, smiled, "Why you will give him free wine?"

"Barren City has restored its order," laughed the waiter. "If Ming Hai and his men didn't die, we don't know how the Barren City would have looked like in the future. Lucky us that they died. We can live in peace now. Yeah, it's best if the Yang Family still controls Barren City. Ming Hai, this bastard only wanted to seek the temporary benefits. They couldn't manage the City."

"Bring me ten bottles of good wine."

"Here you go." The waiter replied to him cheerily.

"Shi Yan, you drank here last time?" Li Feng chuckled, as her shining eyes scanned through the tavern.

"Yes."

After a while, the waiter brought him ten bottles of wine. Shi Yan put them in his Storage Ring, but he didn't pay. Instead, he smiled and said, "I'm not going to pay this time. Later on, you don't need to pay revenue tax fee in Barren City. If someone comes to collect the fee, told them I said that."

"AH!"

The shopkeeper and the waiter shouted in awe.

Swaying his hand, Shi Yan turned into a beam of light and flew out of Barren City. "I'm that top dog you said."

The shopkeeper and the waiter were shaken as their eyes were lit up.



# Chapter 456: The strongest warrior!

---

Deep inside the seabed of the Dark Water Territory stood the black extinct volcano ranges. Each extinct volcano colossally towered the seabed, just like rows of sharp swords jutted up to the sea surface.

It was where the Black Flood Dragon Clan dwelled.

It was unknown why the extinct volcano ranges had sunk deep into the ground. Each volcano was thousands of meters high.

Situated on the mountainsides and the summits of those volcanoes were buildings constructed from some kind of ink-black stone. At first glance, it looked like those buildings were made from black iron, very sharp with distinguishing features.

"Rumors said that the ancestor of the Black Flood Dragon Clan was a level ten black flood dragon, whose supernatural power could penetrate the sky and destroy the earth. Very terrifying! That level ten demonic beast black flood dragon had mated with human females and bred many human-beast hybrids. They are the Black Flood Dragon Clan's members. The Black Flood Dragon Clan has the black flood dragon and human bloodline. They have dark, sharp horns on their heads, and have the ability to transform into the half-monster shape."

In the seawater, Li Feng pointed at the place in front of them and explained to Shi Yan.

"Since the Black Flood Dragon Clan members aren't the real black flood dragons, they don't have the sturdy physique of the dragon, but they have the intellect that the black flood dragons lack. Members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan get along well with the real Black Flood Dragons and consider them their best allies. See, we can find the Black Flood Dragon beasts inside those extinct volcanoes."

"What?"

"Yeah, the Black Flood Dragon Clan and the Black Flood Dragons can live in harmony because they share the same bloodlines. Usually, the average level of the Black Flood Dragons is level six. Although they're small in number, they're the overlords of the beasts undersea. They aren't afraid of anything. In the middle of the extinct volcanoes, I think there are even level eight Black Flood Dragons. A level eight Black Flood Dragon's as strong as a Spirit Realm warrior. Nu Lang's a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior. So, who's stronger, the level eight Black Flood Dragon or him?"

"Nu Lang. That level eight Black Flood Dragon is Nu Lang's associated beast. Since Nu Lang was born, he has had his blood interlinked with it." Li Feng frowned and explained to him with a soft tone. "A part of the Black Flood Dragon Clan's population would interlink their blood with the Black Flood Dragons. Once they could form the soul and blood connection with the beast, they can become its master. Then, they can thrive together, humans and beasts. In this association, they have been living together from birth, and their lives are connected by a subtly mysterious connection that we can't explain."

"So, what makes it different from the beasts we have tamed?"

"Of course, it's different. This association is formed with lives. If the Black Flood Dragon dies, the clansman who's its master will die, too. Correspondingly, if the Black Flood Dragon Clan's member, who is the beast's master, dies, the beast interlinked with him will die together." Li Feng held a serious face. "This association's really magical. I heard that it could fuse the master and the beast into one to promote their best combined power. There aren't many members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan can connect with the Black Flood Dragons. However, they are all the key members of the clan. Among the Sea Tribes, the Black Flood Dragon Clan's small. In Endless Sea, I heard that there are just some members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan living there."

However, each clansman of the Black Flood Dragon Clan's more excellent than the other Sea Tribes members at the same realm. With the aid of the Black Flood Dragon beasts, they become even more intimidating!"

Shi Yan was dumbstruck for a while before he could speak up again. "So, the Black Flood Dragon Clan's members with the Black Flood Dragon beasts can have the superior power over the other warriors?"

"It's true," Li Feng nodded solemnly. "So, you have to think it over again. Nu Lang has the cultivation base at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, and he also has a level eight Black Flood Dragon beast. Can you imagine how formidable his real competence is?" Shi Yan was shocked. "So, Nu Lang's even more dangerous than Chi Yan and Bo Xun?"

"It's hard to tell before engaging in a fight with him." Li Feng still wore a serious complexion, mused, then spoke again. "I think, if Nu Lang fights with Chi Yan and Bo Xun, his chance to win will be a little bit higher. The reason why Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian didn't want to provoke the Sea Tribes even when they were at their peak state was because of Nu Lang."

"According to you, Nu Lang's the strongest warrior both undersea and on the sea of the Endless Sea, isn't he?"

"People living on the seabed think so. No matter it be the Sea Tribes dwelling on the seabed or humans living in Barren City, they all think that Nu Lang's the best warrior with real fame and competence, and Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian aren't his matches. Fortunately, the Sea Tribes don't have good secret treasures. Otherwise, I think even people on the sea would consider him the strongest warrior of the entire Endless Sea," said Li Feng.

Shi Yan's face slightly changed.

"My Great Grandfather was really brave that year." He talked again after a long while of silence. "As he dared to provoke a man

like that, I think my Great Grandfather has the biggest guts in the Endless Sea. Haha, can't believe his real competence is at the True God Realm. Nu Lang's really intimidating. No wonder why the unruly Yin Hui has to bow to him."

"Of course! If Nu Lang voices his opinions, the members of the Silver Shark Clan, the Naga Tribe, and the Water Scorpion Tribe have to obey his words. All members of the Sea Tribes acknowledge Nu Lang's existence as what guarantees the peace for the Sea Tribes. As long as Nu Lang stays well, the Endless Sea's warriors won't have the courage to plan anything on the Sea Tribes."

Li Feng giggled while looking at him. "Now you know how imposing Nu Lang is? Later on, when you meet Nu Lang, you should behave. He isn't Bao Wen or Bao Ke. Even if you can use the external force to reach the Spirit Realm cultivation base, you're no match for him."

"Okay, I will be more careful," Shi Yan caressed his nose and nodded reluctantly.

Before they had got here, he actually didn't overestimate Nu Lang, as he thought that he would have the power as strong as Chi Yan or Bo Xun at most. However, from Li Feng's explanation, he knew that Nu Lang perhaps was more dangerous than the other two. This made him more cautious.

Since his debut, the strongest warrior he had ever encountered was the Demon King Chi Yan.

In Yuan Lou Sea Area, when Chi Yan had struck out, he had revealed his imposing power, which made Shi Yan remember him for a long time.

Even now, when he recalled the heaven-shaking deeds of Chi Yan, he still felt cold inside, as he knew that even if he could borrow all the energies, he couldn't gain the upper hand against Chi Yan.

Due to his clear recognition of this, after he had entered his Sky Realm, and when the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Holy Spirit God had all recovered, he still didn't dare to go to Huan Luo Sea Area to find Chi Yan and take revenge.

He wasn't an impulsive person.

If he weren't sure about something, he wouldn't do it recklessly. Compared to the peak warriors, he still lacked something, but he also had some advantages.

His mysterious martial spirit!

The martial spirit he got when he had first entered this strange world had an immense ability, which could greatly boost his speed to break the bottleneck while entering a new realm. He knew what he lacked now was time and practice.

If he had more time, he could enter a brand new realm in just a short while.

One day, he would be stronger than Chi Yan, and he could finish that grudge.

He had this confidence.

"Well, Nu Lang's really dangerous. If you help him refine rare treasures this time, he will become the overlord of the entire world." Li Feng held a wry smile. "No one knows if Nu Lang would stay still undersea. Currently, the situation of the Endless Sea is too complicated. If he wants to stir up the Endless Sea, not many people can stop him."

Shi Yan arched his brow.

This was also a problem.

Not only the Black Flood Dragon Clan could live undersea, if there was a suitable place on the sea, they could also live there as well.

Nu Lang had the absolute ruling position in the Sea Tribes. If he

had dark ambitions towards the Endless Sea, he could directly lead the hotshots of the Sea Tribes to enter the sea area, taking the chance while the Endless Sea was currently in chaos. This would be an immense advantage to the Sea Tribes.

It'd happened before.

Legend said that the Sea Tribes had united and had a great war with the warriors of the Endless Sea in an attempt to take a sea area in the Endless Sea thousands of years ago. Although they lost that war under the union of the human warriors, they had caused a great loss to the elite force of the warriors in the Endless Sea.

After that war, the Sea Tribes had got back to the seabed and stayed there for several thousands of years without provoking people on the sea anymore.

But now, the Sea Tribes had an earth-shaking character like Nu Lang, who could make all of the tribes undersea believe in him. If he rose his hand and planned something to make use of the chaotic situation in the Endless Sea for the benefit of all Sea Tribes, Yin Hui, Li Sha, and Bao Ke would be willing to go and fight together with him.

"Forget it. The Endless Sea's messed up enough. Moreover, it's not sure that the Sea Tribes would be our misery." Contemplating for a while, Shi Yan comforted himself. "Up there, we have Chi Yan, Bo Xun, Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian. Perhaps my Great Grandfather would return soon. We have so many strong warriors up there. Even if Nu Lang goes up to the sea, it's difficult for him to control the situation. At most, he could only make the Endless Sea more disorderly." Having heard that, Li Feng could only agree with him.

They were talking along the way. Not long after that, they showed themselves in front of the extinct volcanoes.

"Members of the Yang Family from Barren City would like to meet patriarch Nu Lang." Li Feng slightly bowed then pitched her

voice. A thirty-meter-tall Black Flood Dragon came out of an extinct volcano. Its whole body was covered in black iron scales. The dragon had big horns on its head, with the eyes as big as a fist, flaring up with a horrendous light.

That Black Flood Dragon was a level seven beast. After it came out from the extinct volcano, its giant red pupils gazed at Shi Yan and Li Feng cruelly.

There seated a Sky Realm member of the Black Flood Dragon Clan on the head of that Black Flood Dragon.

He had humanoid form accompanied with a half –a-meter black horn on his head. This dark skinned man looked at Shi Yan's group coldly and then mocked, "Juniors from the Yangs, what kind of qualification you have to ask for meeting up with our patriarch? Even if Yang Tian Emperor came here himself, I'm not sure our patriarch would like to meet him. What do you depend on for your request?"

"Depends on my Heaven Flame." Shi Yan grinned then extended his arm. The Earth Flame burst out. Its flame was flickering mystically in the water. The seawater had constantly been evaporated but the flame was still increasing in ferocity, not even affected a bit by the water.

# Chapter 457: Famous reputation spreads far and wide

---

The eyes of the man from the Black Flood Dragon Clan brightened.

Even Yin Hui and Li Sha knew that Nu Lang wanted to refine something; as a member of the tribe, of course, he knew it.

The seabed didn't have a fiery Mount of Flames. As Nu Lang had been worrying about the fiery flame, he was really hot-tempered recently. Since he had failed in refining many times, many clansmen of the Black Flood Dragon Clan had received lessons from him.

Seeing the fiery flame on Shi Yan's palm, this man was moved. He then changed his attitude.

"Is that a real heaven flame?"

He looked at the Earth Flame on Shi Yan's palm and opened his mind to sense, and was scared as a result. The Heaven Flames were the most mysterious fiery flames in the world. They had their own consciousness and lives. As their heat was much hotter than the earth flame's, they were the best flames to refine treasures. A warrior who had the firmament flame, if he wanted, could become an excellent blacksmith, and earn respect from all other warriors.

The high-temperature fiery flame that Shi Yan was showing off couldn't be hidden. Although he was hundreds of meters away from Shi Yan, he could still feel dry and hot.

"I think you have the answer whether or not it's the heaven flame."

Shi Yan calmly retrieved the Earth Flame and grinned. "Your patriarch needs guys like me the most at this moment. If I help him, it will be no problem for him to refine rare treasures. Yeah, I think you can go and report now, right?" Many members of the



Black Flood Dragon Clan were poking out from the sharp buildings one after another, looking at Shi Yan with a surprised face.

Although Shi Yan's countenance was indifferent, he was shocked inside.

There were around seventy or eighty members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan revealing themselves from the extinct volcanoes; each of them had the massive aura. The worst of them were at the Earth Realm or the Nirvana Realm, while Sky Realm warriors were everywhere.

Everybody said that the Black Flood Dragon Clan was the strongest tribe among the tribes living on the seabed. Each member of this clan had a remarkable power with exquisite cultivation base. Their reputation was true indeed.

"Sure, I'm going to report now." That man didn't dare to hesitate more, patting his Black Flood Dragon and then turned into a black light, flying away. From the extinct volcanoes, the people of the Black Flood Dragon Clan were gazing at Shi Yan and Li Feng with cold eyes, silently assessing them.

"You are Shi Yan?"

A thin Black Flood Dragon Clan man with pockmarked face eyed him for a while then raised his voice to ask.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded.

The members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan looked shaken as the light in their eyes got more intense. During this time, among the tribes living in the sea, Shi Yan's reputation was spread far and wide. He had used his Sky Realm cultivation base to hurt Bao Wen and make Bao Ke approve his identity in Barren City. Even Yin Hui and Li Sha agreed not to interfere with the business in Barren City anymore. As he got the approval from the leaders of the three clans, his name was pushed to an outstanding position. All the Sea Tribes members knew that besides Yang Tian Emperor, the Yangs

had another new prominent young man, who was even more arrogant than Yang Tian Emperor, with an even better natural endowment.

The name of Shi Yan had spread everywhere on the seabed. They didn't expect that the visitor would be this kid. The Black Flood Dragon Clan's members were shaken as they were assessing him in silence to see which dangerous features he had.

Li Feng felt quite uncomfortable under the eyes of the Black Flood Dragon Clan's members. "Shi Yan, you should be careful. Although Nu Lang's reputation isn't bad, you still have to pay attention. If Nu Lang wants to attack you after you have helped him refine treasures, I think it's hard for you to escape."

"Yes. I'll be careful." As Nu Lang was the patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan, the number one warrior of the Sea Tribes, he held the highest position in the eyes of the Sea Tribes' members. People had appraised Nu Lang to be good and sincere, and that he wasn't deceitful or a sinister person. Usually, his conduct was straightforward and upright. He wouldn't do anything unacceptable. But still, he was a member of the Sea Tribes.

The Sea Tribes members had always been guarding against the warriors on the sea. If Nu Lang considered him a future harm to the Sea Tribes, he would kill Shi Yan first. It wasn't impossible strangling Shi Yan when he was still in his cradle to solve the big trouble for the Sea Tribes.

Also, if Nu Lang really did that, the members of the Sea Tribes would never spread any bad things about him.

"Well, in short, everything should be done with care. I'm afraid Nu Lang would do that." Li Feng was worried. "That year, our House Master had come here and created an intense situation with Nu Lang. I'm afraid Nu Lang still holds that grudge. Don't provoke him. Just get things done and leave."

"I know how to do it. Nothing ventured, nothing gained. Still, I

need to take a little risk here."

The Black Flood Dragon Clan's man who had just left returned quickly. He gestured Shi Yan to follow him.

"Don't enter the Black Flood Dragon Clan, just stay out there." Shi Yan told Li Feng and stepped in the territory of the Black Flood Dragon Clan. Under the guidance of the Black Flood Dragon Clan's man, he flew to the mountain pass of the extinct volcano where Nu Lang dwelled.

Extinct volcanoes glided one by one under his body. Each of them was an imposing existence that frightened people. Although he couldn't use Soul Consciousness to sense, Shi Yan knew that there would be dormant Black Flood Dragon beasts inside those volcanoes.

Only the giant demonic beasts like the Black Flood Dragons could emit such a tremendous aura.

There were at least ten Black Flood Dragons standing on the extinct volcano beneath him. The worst of them was the level six Black Flood Dragon. Most of them were at level seven.

The level seven Black Flood Dragons were much stronger than human Sky Realm warriors. Especially when they were in the water, they had the ability to control the water currents. Sharp mouths with brute force, they were the most formidable beasts in the seabed.

Having sensed for a while, Shi Yan was frightened as he had a deeper knowledge about the Black Flood Dragon Clan. The power of this clan was more intimidating than that of the Cao Family or the Martial Spirit Palace in Endless Sea. Moreover, there were the other tribes undersea like the Silver Shark Clan, the Water Scorpion Tribe, and the Naga Tribe. Once they got out of the water and launched their attack on the human warriors, the result of this war could be seen even before it started.

All of a sudden, he was worrying whether or not his decision to help Nu Lang refine treasures was a correct move.

"Here we are. The patriarch asked you to go there alone." The man of the Black Flood Dragon Clan took Shi Yan to the cone of an extinct volcano, pointed down to gesture that Shi Yan should descend and meet Nu Lang alone.

"Thank you."

Putting aside the worries in his mind, Shi Yan held his breath and concentrated his mind, discretely alert while slowly lowering down the mountain pass.

Around fifteen minutes later, he landed at the foot of the extinct volcano. Unexpectedly, this area was lit up brightly. Countless shining crystals were inlaid on the mountain flank to illuminate the area. Those crystals could even light up the darkest areas of this mountain.

Lying in the middle of the area was a massive scorching magma pond. However, there was no magma, but piles of scarlet flame crystals inside it. The scarlet flame crystal was the most scorching ore. With the urge from energy, it could burst out a blazing flame. Each piece of the scarlet flame crystal could provide an enormous amount of energy from flame.

Numerous scarlet flame crystals filled the magma pond. While there was no urge from any energy, those crystals just radiated a red, hot light.

Next to the magma pond were all kinds of materials to refine treasures. There were some diamonds, cold iron, Flowing Gold Sand and Star Jades.

Shi Yan was startled at first glance.

There were many materials for refining treasures, and each of them was precious. They were piled around the magma pond. Some of them were so scarce that even the Yang Family couldn't

collect them. The other Sky Realm warriors could go crazy seeing those materials.

Even on the Endless Sea, there were many materials that they could only see by chance once in hundreds of years.

Those materials filled the pond, and under the shining light of the bright crystals, were reflecting charming halo.

"Precursor Nu Lang does have a lot of raw materials. You've been storing a lot of materials like these; I wonder what kind of rare, earth-shaking treasures you want to refine."

Shi Yan took a deep breath while observing here and there, smiled and said.

Nu Lang hadn't shown himself yet.

However, Shi Yan knew that Nu Lang was right here, but he had hidden his aura to seclude his whereabouts. This made Shi Yan unable to find him.

Since he had arrived the mountain foot, even if he didn't see Nu Lang, he could sense someone watching him.

While he was eyeing the refining materials, Nu Lang should be staying somewhere secretly, watching each move of his to guess his realm and characteristics. "Kid, you have big guts. As you dare to come here alone, aren't you afraid that I will kill you?"

A boorish voice came from the mountain foot then reverberated unceasingly between the rocky walls, shattering some pieces of rock.

Shi Yan could only feel the rumbling sound in his ears. It had even entered his brain and affected his Sea of Consciousness, as it was shaken all of a sudden.

His mind shivered. He immediately retrieved his Soul Consciousness to ensure that it wouldn't get affected. The five dormant Devils in the Sea of Consciousness seemed to tremble due

to this noise before they could gradually calm down.

In the swamp area of that exotic land, the Five Devils had devoured many hollow spirits. Since then, they had started to evolve. This process had been started for a long time. However, it seemed not to be finished yet.

Shi Yan was a little bit disappointed as he found the Five Devils didn't wake up.

"What should I fear?" Shi Yan smiled, looking at the scarlet flame crystals in the magma pond. "With precursor Nu Lang's moral standing, you'll not take action against a junior like me. Furthermore, I came with good will this time. I think precursor Nu Lang should be treating me well."

"Kid, do you really have the heaven flame?" Nu Lang's voice arose again.

"If I didn't have the heaven flame, I'd definitely not dare to come here." He extended his arms, and the Earth Flame burst out. As the fiery flame came out, the scarlet flame crystals in the magma pond were ignited, releasing the furious flame up to the sky. The flame immediately covered the whole mountain foot.

When the scarlet flame crystals met the fiery flame energy, they could blaze up better. As a type of heaven flame, the Earth Flame could incite the potential of the scarlet flame crystals.

The temperature at the mountain foot had rocketed to an extreme level in just a flash.

"It's really the heaven flame."

Nu Lang shouted, showed himself and arrived in front of Shi Yan.

## Chapter 458: See clearly

---

He was a middle-aged man, around two meters tall. The man had a dark skin and chiseled face, accompanied by a divine light shooting out of his eyes. He wasn't angry but still looked full of prestige.

He came to Shi Yan, threw him a look and asked, "Are you Shi Yan?"

"Yes!"

"Not bad," Nu Lang nodded then snorted, "You could defeat the brothers Bao Wen and Bao Ke with your Sky Realm cultivation base. Seems the Yang Family has another dangerous warrior. Yang Tian Emperor has a good destiny that he has a brat like you to fill his slot when he is being confined in the Demon Area."

Shi Yan smiled and didn't say anything.

"You came here to help me refine treasures, which will make me approve the overlord position of the Yang Family in Barren City, right?"

"Yes."

"It's not a big deal. As long as you can please me, I can promise you that."

"Thank you."

"I don't like people watching me when I'm refining treasures. You tell your heaven flame, and then I'll imprison you for the time being." His visage slightly changed, but eventually, Shi Yan agreed, "Alright."

Then, he contacted the Earth Flame, asking it to pay attention to Nu Lang and help him to refine treasures.

The Earth Flame answered that it understood the matter.

As Nu Lang saw the heaven flame floating above the scarlet flame

crystals, releasing the burning fiery flame, he suddenly snatched it.

Dark halo rippled out from above and covered Shi Yan in a flash. Inside the dark light shell, Shi Yan couldn't see anything out there, and his Soul Conscious couldn't see through that dark light. It was like he was being restrained in a pitch-black prison.

His sight, sense of hearing and touch, and his Soul Consciousness were all covered.

Just with his first move, the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior could frighten Shi Yan. Now he knew that he couldn't deal with a character at such level at the moment.

Anyway, he had thought that Nu Lang would have confined him before he had come here, so he wasn't surprised.

Staying inside this black halo, he sat down cross-legged, concentrated his mind and let his thoughts sink into the halo of memories.

It was the entire life experience of a Spirit level blacksmith.

During this time, whenever he had free time, he would sink his mind into it, trying his best to comprehend the refining methods. Flows of thought moved in there, projecting some scenes of the precious refining process. He was making progress quietly, as he had a deeper knowledge about refining treasures method and techniques day by day.

Time flew.

It was unknown how long he had been in there. All of a sudden, he realized that the dark halo covering him had disappeared.

Light shone again.

Shi Yan opened his eyes looking forward. He found that all the scarlet flame crystals inside the magma pond had been burnt into ashes.



The heaven flame bobbing above the magma pond sent him a message. "He has refined a trident by melting precious metals and ores. Although he didn't use any formations or spells, it's cumbersome. Such a weapon is very extraordinary."

Shi Yan nodded slightly.

The Earth Flame turned into a bunch of flames and disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring. He nosed out some signs then shifted his gaze at Nu Lang, who was sitting above the magma pond. He smiled, "Congratulations!"

Nu Lang pouted his lips, then waved his hand and said, "Go. The Black Flood Dragon Clan won't interfere the business in Barren City. All stays the same."

"Precursor Nu Lang," Shi Yan took a deep breath, didn't leave but smiled and asked, "At present, the Endless Sea's a big mess. The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers are swaggering across the Yuan Luo and Kyara Sea Areas, fighting against human warriors of the Endless Sea. The current situation's nothing but a deadlock. What do you think about it?"

"What does it matter to me?" Nu Lang gave him a supercilious look and answered him impatiently.

"Who do you think will win at the end? The Dark Dwellers, the Demon Dwellers or the warriors of the Endless Sea?" Shi Yan was patient. "Your cultivation base's exquisite, and your vision's wide. I guess you would have a thorough analysis of this case. Would you mind sharing it with me?"

"I don't care who will win. As long as they are not going to stir up my seabed, I don't care."

Nu Lang snorted. As if he wasn't interested in the activities above the sea, he coldly looked at Shi Yan. "Kid, you've been probing. What do you want?"

"Do you have the intention to go up there?" Shi Yan darkened his

face and asked him coldly.

Light sparked and vanished in Nu Lang's eyes. He sneered, shook his head but didn't say anything.

"If I were you, the moment when the Endless's in chaos, I wouldn't be content with my lot on the seabed." Shi Yan said, "I would keep close track of the situation up there, and wait for the best chance to come. When the two tigers are biting each other, I could launch my attack, or I could always join one side and destroy the other to take the upper hand."

Cruel light flared up from Nu Lang's eyes. "You little brat, do you think I would do that?"

Shaking his head, Shi Yan said, "I don't know. But if I were you, I couldn't rest my mind with the current situation. Anyway, the Endless Sea's still a big mess, while the seabed is steadily peaceful. As the once in a blue moon chance is right in front of you, If I were you, my mind couldn't help but be moved."

Nu Lang stayed calm, didn't say anything.

"Goodbye," Shi Yan clasped his fist, greeted him, "If you want to join any side, I hope you will consider the Yang Family. Currently, although we are still weak, I think you'll soon see our Yang Family's real competence." Then, he left following the way he had come without waiting for Nu Lang's answer.

Nu Lang's eyes sparked an ominous light, coldly looking at Shi Yan who was fading away. All of a sudden, he burst out laughing. "This kid has big guts and great ambition. Unfortunately, his power's still small. If Yang Tian Emperor came himself, I would still consider, but you, you aren't eligible, kid."

Of course, Shi Yan couldn't hear his words.

Three Spirit Realm warriors of the Black Flood Dragon Clan came out from the dark. They were looking at Shi Yan disappearing with astounded faces.

"Patriarch, this kid does have big guts. He dared to come here alone and even probe us to ask for joining us. Later on, he would become a character in the Endless Sea. Perhaps he could be like Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor, who could rule his own territory with force." A fat man from the Black Flood Dragon Clan mused and said.

Nu Lang nodded. "He has wild schemes, and he seems not to care about the others. He doesn't respect the rules or care about races. This kid isn't afraid of receiving insults from others when he proposed to join with the Sea Tribes. In the eyes of people on the sea, the ones who join with other races are the ones who dare to do any cruel things. I didn't expect that he has this thought and came here himself. I'm surprised."

"When Yang Tian Emperor went to meet you that year, you wanted to join up with the Yang Family and plan something toward the Endless Sea. Yang Tian Emperor had denied your proposal. He said that the two races couldn't get along well and that they couldn't exist in the same sea area. Yang Tian Emperor is racist. He believes that besides humanity, the other races are all aliens, and they're not eligible to live with humans."

The short, fat man of the Black Flood Dragon Clan had his eyebrows slammed together as he snorted. "Yang Tian Emperor was so stubborn when he said that 'as long as he's still in the Endless Sea, the Sea Tribes won't have a chance to leave the seabed and earn a living on the sea.' Now that he's confined in the Demon Area, he can't even protect himself. And, the Yangs suddenly have a brat that doesn't care about common sense. It's strange. But it's a pity that he isn't the head of the Yang Family. His cultivation base's also weak. Otherwise, our patriarch could consider this business."

"Right," said another Spirit Realm warrior of the Black Flood Dragon Clan. "Human race doesn't want us. They think that we should live in the seabed. Anyway, they don't know that the Sea

Tribes have many tribes. In fact, we also aim at the rich lands on the sea and we do want to reside there. No matter it's Cao Qiudao, Yang Yi Tian or the leaders of other forces, they are all affected by this preconception. They all consider our Sea Tribes aliens, so it's hard for them to befriend with us."

"This kid is somehow special, indeed." Nu Lang mused then talked, "Too bad his realm isn't high enough. Meanwhile, the Yang Family is not as strong as it used to be. We will just ignore him then."

"Patriarch, he said that the Yang Family would come back to the Endless Sea. I think there's some information we haven't gotten to know yet."

"Yes, this brat is that arrogant, so maybe he has some backup. Has Yang Tian Emperor escaped his restraint in Demon Area?" Nu Lang's pupils shrank. He frowned. "Why do we have to care about them that much? Just stay here, and we aren't going to interfere their business. Wait until they all engage in war and then we will see what we can do. This is once in a blue moon chance. Although our ancestors couldn't achieve big in their lives, perhaps we can!"

The other three strong warriors also got incited, as their eyes brightened.

"The Sea Tribes will not be content with their lots. Seems like we have to make our decision soon."

After Shi Yan got out of the Black Flood Dragon Clan, he looked at Li Feng with a stiff face and said, "Nu Lang has big ambition. He will definitely not want to stay on the seabed and watch the fun. He's waiting for the chance to take the strong warriors of the Sea Tribes to attack the Endless Sea."

"Maybe he's waiting for both sides to engage in war," said Li Feng.

"Possibly," Shi Yan wore a solemn face, looking at the territory of

the Black Flood Dragon Clan, then sighed. "The Black Flood Dragon Clan is really intimidating. Added with the Water Scorpion Tribe, the Silver Shark Clan, and the Naga Tribe, this force isn't weaker than the Dark Dwellers or the Demon Dwellers. They even have more advantages than the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers. They can attack or withdraw at ease. If the situation is not going on the desired track, they can always hide in the seabed. It's tough for us to deal with them undersea."

"Seems like the situation of the Endless Sea is getting more complicated." Li Feng beamed a wry smile. "We can't stay on the seabed for long. Intelligence sent to Barren City is too slow. We're almost isolated, and we can't get a good grasp of the Endless Sea's situation as fast as we want." Shi Yan contemplated for a while then spoke up again with serious visage. "We have to go back to the Endless Sea earlier. Just let some stay at Barren City to control the place. Only if we go to the Endless Sea can we have chances to talk to the members of the Demon Area."

"I'm not able to make this decision," Li Feng shook her head.

"I'm going to talk to Big Uncle."

Three days later, Shi Yan came back to Barren City. When he saw Yang Zhuo, he said immediately, "We can't always stay in Barren City. We need to go out."

"Why?"

"Nu Lang has the wild schemes to invade the Endless Sea. He's waiting for a good chance. If we can't join Nu Lang, we can only spread this news as soon as possible. Some people will pay attention to him then."

# Chapter 459: Entourage of Eight

---

"The most fearful thing... is still to happen."

Yang Zhuo's face darkened and stiffened. He breathed out cold air and then shook his head. "The Sea Tribes always had their dark ambitions towards the Endless Sea. However, the warriors above the Endless Sea always stood guarding against them. Moreover, thanks to Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian, and your Great Grandfather, the Sea Tribes haven't done anything just yet. But at present, since the Endless Sea's in chaos, Nu Lang has seen the opportunity once in a lifetime. Of course, he would try to stir everything up."

"Big Uncle, you've already known that the Sea Tribes wouldn't be content with their lot, right?"

"Of course, they won't be content with their lots." Yang Zhuo's face was solemn. "Thousands of years ago, the Sea Tribes had taken actions, but stopped after that big loss. That was a big and painful lesson to them. It made them know the big price to be paid to get to the land above the sea. After that battle, more than half of the elite force of the Sea Tribes was lost. Some small tribes even got extinguished. Afterward, they decided to withdraw completely. Thousands of years have gone, but they hadn't rebelled even once."

"But it's different now."

"Yes, it's different now. The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers have come to the Endless Sea, and your Great Grandfather's imprisoned in the Demon Area. At this moment, if the Sea Tribes have ambitions, they would try to fulfill the goal their ancestors had set thousands of years ago." Yang Zhuo sighed grudgingly. "It's a general trend. Seems like no force can stop the Sea Tribes. Thus, if we continue staying in Barren City, it's not good at all."

"Eh?"

"I'll arrange it like this. In the coming time, the Yangs will revive. We will leave a part here on the seabed, and the others will come up to the sea in groups. Xia Qing Hou soon sent some messenger here. He said that if the Yang Family comes to the sea, we can ask for help from the Xia Family. Currently, Xia Qing Hou is the overlord of a part of the Endless Sea. If we have a good relationship with them, even if we have to deal with the Martial Spirit Palace or the Penglai Holy Land, we still have time to solve the dispute."

Yang Zhuo thought for a while then spoke to him, "Don't overthink. You should rest for some days. I'll arrange this. Then, we're going back to Endless Sea."

"Great!"

...

Shi Yan went to the vault.

Looking at that radiant piles of materials in front of him, he felt grudging and tired all of a sudden. Although he had progressed fast in cultivating, he was still far behind the strong warriors like Cao Qiu Dao or Yang Yi Tian. Chi Yan, Bo Xun, and the Yama Kings were all earth-shaking warriors. Currently, he couldn't fight with them. And now came Nu Lang, an ambitious and tyrannically strong warrior.

In front of them, he could see his power was much weaker.

'I have to reach a higher level as soon as possible.' Taking a deep breath, he sat down neatly in the vault and started to think about how to increase his power faster.

However, it was tough for any warrior in Sky Realm to thrive more. Each time the cultivation base leaped up, it required abundant Profound Qi and a flash of realization of the realm.

He didn't need to worry about the Profound Qi. With the mysterious martial spirit, it was simple to have more Profound Qi.

Killing more people, and absorbing the negative energies from

the fiercest battlefield, it was easy to get more Profound Qi. However, gaining realization regarding the realm had no way to be found. He had to experience and observe the powers of earth and firmament to have a chance for a good grasp of the mystical features of the most inner essence in there.

No one could help him with this requirement.

If he couldn't comprehend his realm, no matter how much Profound Qi he could accumulate, it was useless, and couldn't help him to increase his strength.

Shi Yan frowned, looking at the cultivating materials on the ground and the two rings on his fingers. Light sparkled from his eyes as his mind flickered fast.

He eyed the Blood Vein Ring.

Suddenly, his eyes brightened.

It'd been long since he had last attacked the wall of force inside the Blood Vein Ring. The ways to use the two most evil, eccentric powers were the Rampage and the Life and Death Seal. He got them from the Blood Vein Ring when he had broken through new realms. When his power had reached a certain level, if he used all of his power to attack the wall inside the Blood Vein Ring, it could work. At present, he had actually entered the Sky Realm, which meant his cultivation base wasn't bad. It was time to attack the Blood Vein Ring again.

Making up his mind, he didn't hesitate. He quieted down his mind and then started to gather the power of the entire body.

Profound Qi in the Qi ancient tree at his lower abdomen was urged, moving rapidly in his veins and tendons. Wherever the Profound Qi traveled through under his urge, it brought together the energy of that organ to mix with it and help him increase his power.

Gradually, the Profound Qi was like a torrential stream running



in his body. He felt a pain in his meridians, as he could feel his Profound Qi accelerating to a terrifying level.

Complete focus.

His Qi condensed into a bunch of light beams, guiding the enormous energy in his body to turn into a column of fierce light, banging hard on the energy wall inside the Blood Vein Ring.

Thump!

An odd echo resounded from the energy barrier inside the Blood Vein Ring. It seemed a layer or membrane had been poked through.

A strange memory electric current stormed out, flooding his brain.

The red halo of the Blood Vein Ring covered the entire vault. Bizarre, vague scenes were projected inside the red halo.

It was some area on the seabed, covered with bones of beasts. Five-colored seawater was rumbling. The beast skeletons there were all dozens of meters tall, even taller than the main building of the Yang Family. This was the first time he had ever seen such giant beast skeletons.

Even the Black Flood Dragon he saw in the Black Flood Dragon Clan was one grade smaller than the beasts in this scene.

There was a three-hundred-meter dragon skeleton. The bones were numerous, and dense like a small mountain. This was really dreadful to watch for ordinary people.

A strange halo was twinkling inside that massive skeleton. In the vague halo, he could see a coffin.

Lao Luo's Dark Body, one of the Bloodthirsty's Entourage of Eight... A stirring thought shot out, flooding his brain.

From the Blood Vein Ring, a current of strange memory electric had ambushed him, unceasingly sending him thoughts along with

the scenes appearing in the Blood Vein Ring. That bizarre memory electric current seemed to have a close relationship with the scene projected in the Blood Vein Ring. As the Blood Vein Ring was continually blinking, that electric current was gradually releasing the miraculous description of these scenes.

Lao Luo's Dark Body.

Shi Yan discolored, watching the scene with a dumbfounded face. His heart was filled with surprise, not knowing what was going on as he was gazing at the three-hundred-meter dragon skeleton and the coffin lying within it.

"The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard, one of Bloodthirsty's Entourage of Eight – the Dark Body of Lao Luo!"

The thought in his head described the scene one more time. The immense light from the Blood Vein Ring started to cease, and the scenes inside its red halo were fading away.

Everything restored to the normal states.

The strange light sparkled on the Blood Vein Ring for a short while and then stopped. The Blood Vein Ring became normal.

"The shocking energy waves are really strong." The Ice Cold Flame sent him a message from the Blood Vein Ring. "It looks like the skeleton of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon in the scene. What happened? The Antiquity Lofty Dragons had been vanished for a long time ago, hadn't they? What kind of ring is your ring?"

"Antiquity Lofty Dragons?" Shi Yan was startled, and couldn't help but probe, "Do you know the Antiquity Lofty Dragons?"

"Yeah, the Antiquity Lofty Dragon was the royal family of the Dragon Tribe in the ancient time. As the Black Flood Dragons were a kind of dragon beasts, according to the legends, they were the descendants of the Antiquity Lofty Dragons. In the ancient times, the size of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon was extraordinarily enormous, like hundreds of meters. They were terrifyingly strong,

the royals of the Dragon Tribe. Each Lofty Dragon was astoundingly mighty, as they had the cultivation base of a Spirit Realm warrior. Extreme Lofty Dragon could have the competence of a True God Realm warrior.

"I heard that the Lofty Dragons in the ancient time were the overlords of the Grace Mainland's sea areas. They even occupied many caves or big rivers on the land over the sea. In their prosperous time, their overall competence could be compared with other strong alien tribes. Later on, in the great war between tribes, the Lofty Dragon Tribe was sealed in some area. All of them withered, and no one has seen them ever since."

"Anything else you know about the Lofty Dragons?"

"I'm not a human. During the antiquity time, I was still dormant deep inside the glacier. I don't know much of the events during that period. However, at that time, the Lofty Dragons were truly a tyrannical tribe. They were the royals of the Dragon Tribe. I also heard that they had ruled most of the beasts. Super strong for sure."

Shi Yan's countenance changed slightly, as the pictures he had just seen popped up in his mind. The Dark Body of Lao Luo, what is it?

Lao Lou was one of Bloodthirsty's Entourage of Eight. What is Bloodthirsty? Apparently, Entourage of Eight is the group of eight servants. As Lao Luo was one of them, were there seven more?

Is that Bloodthirsty-something the previous master of the Blood Vein Ring?

If so, what were the cultivation realms of these eight servants?

Dark Body? Is it just a clone of Lao Luo, just like the White Bones clone of Demon King Bo Xun? If Lao Luo were a Dark Body hidden inside a coffin under the skeleton of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon, would his still be useful in that coffin?

Suspiciousness arose continuously in his head, making Shi Yan confused. Since he had had the Blood Vein Ring, he always paid attention to it. Yet, apparently, he couldn't know the subtle features of the ring.

Since the Blood Vein Ring could store creatures with mysterious lives like the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, the Earth Flame, the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm, it was much more mysterious than any kinds of Storage Ring. The giant mystical sword was related to the Blood Vein Ring, too. That sword could destroy the hardest defense with its tremendous fluctuating evil energy. Seemed like it was a Sacred Level treasure.

All sorts of signs proved that this Blood Vein Ring was obviously something extremely mysterious. Perhaps, it had some connection with the Bloodthirsty indeed. There was a clone of a servant of the Bloodthirsty hidden under the skeleton of the Lofty Dragon, and the Lofty Dragons of the Dragon Tribe lived in the antiquity time. Was it true that Bloodthirsty came from the antiquity time?

It took him half a day for figuring out nothing about the reasons. He only felt that every detail related to it was doubtful.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan was utterly confused. He didn't want to think about it more, came out from the vault and found Yang Zhuo. "Big Uncle, do you know the graveyard of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon on the seabed?"

Yang Zhuo discolored, trembling. He asked Shi Yan with fear, "How do you know about the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard? Did Nu Lang tell you that?"

# Chapter 460: Silver Stone Fort

---

"Not Nu Lang, I got it from the Ice Cold Flame. There's something I need in the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. I want to go and see."

"You can't!"

All of a sudden, Yang Zhuo paled while shaking his head constantly. "Absolutely shouldn't do that! The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard's the restricted area on the seabed. Throughout thousands of years, no warrior of the Sea Tribes has ever come out alive from there. In the legends, there're treasures that the lofty dragons had collected in that forbidden area. It has attracted numerous hotshots from the Sea Tribes, but I have never heard of anyone who could actually find them. As far as I've known, all had buried their bodies altogether in the dragon's tomb."

"Is that a strange place?"

"I think that Nu Lang wanted to harm you when he told you about the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard." Yang Zhuo wore a serious face and said with a low tone. "In short, you should never go there. Let alone your Sky Realm cultivation base, even the God Realm warriors couldn't escape alive. Nu Lang has the cultivation base at Third Sky of Spirit Realm, but he doesn't dare to peep in the place."

Shi Yan's complexion changed.

"Why do you want to go there?"

"There's something essential to me. I want to go there."

"Don't go, and don't you ever mention this again." Yang Zhuo continuously shook his head to refuse. Seemed like he was absolutely terrified of that Lofty Dragon's forbidden area.

As Shi Yan saw his determination, he didn't repeat the matter, but shifted the topic and asked whether he had arranged

everything or not. Yang Zhuo hid something in this matter too. He told Shi Yan that several days after he had arranged things in Barren City, he would leave the City together with Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded, and didn't say anything further. Then, he left the Yang Family's house alone.

Afterward, he came to the tavern in the City. The shopkeeper and the waiter greeted him with friendly faces. They served him food and good wine even before he could have time to order. "You're really awesome!" The waiter said with admiration. "After you left, the Yang Family sent someone to collect the fee. I told them what you said to us. Indeed, they didn't argue with us, and said that they would no longer come here for collecting the tax."

The waiter had his eyes brightened as he said with low tone. "Are you really Shi Yan, the one who killed Ming Hai and got the approval from the Water Scorpion Tribe, Bao Wen, and Bao Ke?"

"Yeah."

The young waiter's eyes got brighter. His face was getting more excited. "From now on, when you want to drink, come to us. Haha. I think the shopkeeper won't take your money. Right, sir?"

"Little brother. We didn't recognize Mt. Taishan (not to recognize a famous person – TL). We didn't know that you are Shi Yan. If we offended you, please forgive us," smiled the shopkeeper.

"You are being too polite," Shi Yan smiled, shook his head then said, "Shopkeeper, you're doing business in Barren City, I guess you're familiar with the situation here, right? I have something I want to ask you. May I?"

"Little brother, you shouldn't be too polite." The smile on the shopkeeper's face widened. He slightly bent his body and said, "You can ask for sure. As long as we know it, we will tell you altogether. We won't hide any small details, either."

"Have you ever heard about the Antiquity Lofty Dragon

Graveyard?"

"Ah!"

The shopkeeper changed his visage to a more surprised one. He raked his eyes to his side. After he could confirm that no one was there, he asked hurriedly, "Why do you ask this?"

As Shi Yan saw the other change his attitude, he felt this could work, immediately, and said, "I'm interested in some rumors on the seabed. I've just come here, and I want to know more about the seabed's situations and gain more knowledge. That's why I asked you. If you know and you aren't afraid, please do tell."

The shopkeeper relaxed his complexion when he knew the other was just curious. "The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard is the mysterious forbidden place in the seabed. Thousands of years have passed, and so many strong warriors undersea want the Lofty Dragon's treasure. They went and probed over the years. Unfortunately, as far as I've known, no one came back alive. Seems there's something really intimidating, which killed everyone who dared to go in."

The information he provided wasn't much different from Yang Zhuo's, as they had just mentioned how terrifying that Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard was and how many famous warriors of the Sea Tribes had died there. They all said that the place wasn't a place that warriors should visit. Since that area was protected by God, anyone who entered would be punished by God.

"Do you know where it is exactly?" Shi Yan went around the bush then came back to his main purpose.

"People said that it's under the Vault of Heaven Sea Area. But I'm not sure about the exact location. Only someone who has gone there could know. But they are all dead." The shopkeeper shook his head and sighed. "The Lofty Dragons were the overlord of all kinds of beasts undersea. Of course, their graveyard won't be ordinary. It should have unimaginable dangers. No visitors can escape death."

"Oh!"

Shi Yan nodded and mused for a while, then said, "After I leave, in two more days, please come to the Yang Family and tell them I'm going to the Vault of Heaven to find some stuff. Tell the Master of the Yangs in Barren City, Yang Zhuo."

"Are you going to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard?" The shopkeeper and the young waiter were flurried all of a sudden.

"Haha. Help me deliver the message. Don't ask too much." Shi Yan smiled, left a crystal and then turned into a beam of light shooting towards the Vault of Heaven Sea Area.

"Boss!" The young waiter was worried, and said hurriedly, "If he goes to the Lofty Dragon's forbidden area, he can't come back alive! I think we shouldn't wait longer. We should tell the master of the Yangs now."

"Yes. I'm going to the Yang Family's!" The shopkeeper was in a hurry, too. He answered the young waiter then left.

Fifteen minutes later.

Yang Zhuo's face darkened. He continuously shook his head and muttered, "Why did he not listen to my advice? Why is he so stubborn? Young men who don't listen to old men would suffer a huge loss. Shi Yan, you kiddo, do you think that you can be lucky forever?"

Seven days later. Shi Yan arrived at a sea area under the Vault of Heaven Sea Area. The seawater there was crystal clear blue. Fish were moving in schools, and beasts could be seen here and there. At first, he had just met low-level beasts at level three or four. The closer he got to the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, the higher the level of the beasts was. Searching this sea area for a while, he still hadn't found the Lofty Dragon Graveyard. But he ended up having some conflicts with some daring beasts.

Beasts at level six and seven weren't his match now. Facing Shi



Yan, their only consequences were to be skinned, and their demon crystals be taken.

After spending several days under the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, he still had nothing. Without the exact direction, it seemed not easy at all to find the Antiquity Lofty Dragon's Graveyard. Today, he saw a giant fort built with silver stone. Many members of the Sea Tribes were working and living in there.

His eyes brightened. He wanted to enter the city. Walking around the fort for a while, he found out that the Sea Tribes members inside the fort were mostly from the Silver Shark Clan.

Shi Yan stopped a member of the Jade Clam Tribe outside the fort.

Among the tribes of the Sea Tribes, the Jade Clam Tribe was one of the weakest. Members of the Jade Clam Tribe had a giant shell on their back, just like the turtles. Their fleshy body was in between the shells. People said that their cultivating process was arduous. None of the Jade Clam Tribe's member had ever reached the Spirit Realm.

This Jade Clam's member was a young female. She looked pretty with red lips and white teeth.

After she was blocked by Shi Yan, she didn't fluster, just frowned at him coldly and said, "Human, why do you come to the Silver Stone Fort? Don't you know that the Silver Stone Fort's the Silver Shark Clan's territory? You damn human, bet you're planning to mess up with our Sea Tribes. I'm telling you, Yin Hui, the patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan, is in the Silver Stone Fort now. Death is a certain consequence if you dare to provoke us here."

"Silver Stone Fort," frowned Shi Yan.

He had heard from Li Feng that the Silver Shark Clan's territory had been divided into some parts. The Silver Stone Fort was just one of them. It was the place where an elder of the Silver Shark

Clan cultivated.

Many weak tribes were living around the Silver Stone Fort, and the Jade Clam Tribe was one of them.

Those tribes didn't have warriors strong enough to protect the tribes. Their life was a little bit difficult, so they had to depend on stronger tribes like the Silver Shark Clan. Every year, they had to offer the Silver Shark Clan massive wealth to receive the protection from the stronger tribe. That was how they could survive on the seabed.

"Yin Hui's staying in the Silver Shark Fort?"

"Scared now?" The female member of the Jade Clam Tribe sneered then said arrogantly, "You'd better get out of here as soon as possible. The seabed isn't a place where human warriors could poke your nose in. Harrumph, Silver Stone Fort is Cru's cultivating place. He's the elder of the Silver Shark Clan, and he has just entered the Spirit Realm. Patriarch Yin Hui came here to congratulate him. Many strong warriors of the Sea Tribes are gathering in the Silver Stone Fort, too. If you dare to provoke us, I'm sure you'll see enough." This member of the Jade Clam Tribe had a shallow cultivation base, but her tone was cold and arrogant. She was using the connection with the Silver Shark Clan to intimidate Shi Yan, so she didn't fear.

Shi Yan burst out laughing, but he didn't quarrel with her. He contemplated then said, "Me too, I'm going to cheer for elder Cru. Shall we go together?"

"I don't walk the same road as humans." The female member of the Jade Clam Tribe rolled her eyes, threw him a malicious look, put on the serious face and crossed him, swimming towards the Silver Stone Fort.

Shi Yan shook his head and smilingly followed her.

"Human, stop!"

He hadn't even approached the Silver Stone Fort gate when a member of the Silver Shark Clan shouted, pointing his weapon at him. He seemed to ready fight Shi Yan at any minute if the other didn't follow his words. "I've told you. Humans like you can't enter the Silver Stone Fort." The Jade Clam Tribe's member mocked him then chinned up, entering the Silver Stone Fort.

# Chapter 461: The Sea Races' Banquet

---

"Human, get back to where you came from. We, people of the Silver Stone Fort, do not welcome mankind." A member of the Silver Shark Clan snorted coldly with a displeased face at the gate of the Silver Stone Fort. People of the Silver Shark Clan had a shark fin on their back. This was the signature of the Silver Shark Clan. Besides this fin, they didn't look much different from humans. People said that the Silver Shark Clan had been evolved from sharks. That's how they had the fin, the signature of their kind. Among the other clans in the ocean, the Silver Shark Clan was almost as strong as the Black Flood Dragon Race, one of the strongest races in the sea.

Silver Shark's people were born with a sense of superiority. Unless they were facing the Black Flood Dragon Clan, they were always haughty in front of the members from other Sea Tribes. This little guard wasn't an exception when he was talking arrogantly to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan came here this time to find Yin Hui to ask for something related to the ancient lofty dragon's graveyard. As the Silver Shark Clan was situated in this area, being the Patriarch of the race, Yin Hui must know the exact location of that ancient lofty dragon's graveyard. Compared to searching alone with no clues, it'd better ask someone who might know.

"I come from Barren City, a member of the Yang Family. I heard that precursor Cru has entered the Spirit Realm, so I came here to congratulate him. Please report. Oh yeah, your patriarch Yin Hui and I have met once. I hope that you guys would give me a chance to praise precursor Cru."

Shi Yan held a smile on his face, handing out a small purse, which kept ten pieces of good profound Qi crystal.

A female member of the Jade Clam Race couldn't hold her

despising look seeing him bribe the guard. "It's true that humans are all cunning indeed."

The guard of the Silver Shark Clan estimated the value of the purse and then changed his manner to be friendlier. However, he still had to keep his face. "Human, are you lying to me? Even if you're a member of the Yang Family, you're not eligible to meet my patriarch. However, as you know the situation, I'll let you in."

Then, he stepped aside to give way for Shi Yan to enter the city.

It seemed that profound Qi crystals could be the pass to anywhere. This guy from the Silver Shark Clan received Shi Yan's bribe, couldn't help but fall into the same track and open the convenient door for him.

"Villain!"

As Shi Yan just passed through the gate, the female member of the Jade Clam Race cursed, "Humans are all cunning. You didn't embarrass your kind. You're truly a villain!"

Shi Yan ignored her, raised his eyebrows and passed her over to get into the Silver Stone Fort.

Members of the rare Sea Tribes like the Whelks, the Merpeople, the Saber Teeth, all were living inside the Silver Stone Fort. Many members of the Sea Tribes had low cultivation bases, such as Nascent, Human and Disaster realm. They were gathering freely at a corner in the Silver Stone Fort to talk about the significant issues in the ocean or the secrets of their own races.

Shi Yan suddenly burst out laughing.

After listening attentively for a while, he found out that the focus of their talks was him. These Sea Tribes members were gathering and talking about the event of Barren City and mentioning his name. When people of the Sea Tribes talked about him, their faces were stiff, as they knew there was a new ferocious slaughterer born among mankind. He was a brutal guy who liked to kill the Sea

Tribes members, and that he had stirred up the human race and killed many members of the Sea Tribes.

Those Sea Tribes members talked about him like a wicked-beyond-redemption, utterly unbearable villain.

After a while, Shi Yan forced a smile, shook his head and sighed. Members of the Sea Tribes didn't have a good impression of the human race naturally, just like the way they treated the Yang Family. They would favor their members, and it was totally natural.

Although the reputation of the Water Scorpion Tribe wasn't good, it was a member of the Sea Tribes. As Shi Yan had hurt Bao Wen and subdued Bao Ke, in their eyes, Shi Yan was already their enemy. No matter what the truth was, they considered the Water Scorpion Tribe the victim.

He couldn't change the attitude of the Sea Tribes toward him. Discrimination would never be changed, even if it were in the Endless Sea, the Underworld or the Demon Area. Even if they wanted to change, it wouldn't happen.

No warrior could utilize only his strength alone to convert the awareness of other races.

Uniting all the races to one and living in peace in the same place was impossible.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan didn't think about it furthermore. After walking one round in the Silver Stone Fort, he knew where Cru was...In the south of the Silver Stone Fort.

Inside a spacious place around one hundred acres in area were situated many oval silver stone buildings. Those buildings had strange shapes, which had been decorated with drawings of the sea monsters.

When Shi Yan came to that place, he took in the scene and suddenly shook his body, changing his appearance as a fin jutted

out from his back. When he had entered the Silver Stone Fort, if he still used the human appearance, it would be hard for him to get in Cru's place. Only if he had the appearance of the Silver Shark Clan's members could he mingle with the others and get the chance to visit Cru.

After his Petrification Martial Spirit had reached the peak, his control over his body had also entered a subtle, mysterious realm. He only needed a flicker of a thought, and he could conveniently change his body, turning into another person's shape.

Growing only a fin on the back wasn't a tough job to him. After he had transformed into the appearance of the Silver Shark Clan's members, there was no strange look gazing on him along the way.

Members of the weaker races like the Jade Clams, the Whelks, and the Merpeople also showed respect to him. When he approached Cru's house, the Silver Shark guard only threw him a look, and when he found that Shi Yan had the Sky Realm cultivation base, he didn't say anything and just let him go.

Shi Yan walked to the roomy court where Cru was holding his party.

It was a lively scene of celebrating peace with songs and dance.

Female members of the Jade Clams and the Whelk Tribe were shaking their bodies, dancing on the stage made of coral.

The Jade Clams and the Whelk Tribes had average powers among the Sea Tribes, but their women were really good at dancing, as their moves were charming enough to shake people's mind. On that luxurious stage, ten women from the Jade Clams and the Whelks were smiling, dancing like silk. Scattered around the stage were crystal tables. Those crystal tables had all the colors one could name. They were translucent and shimmering with a dreamy light.

The best warriors from the Sea Tribes were sitting at the crystal

tables, drinking good wine and enjoying the fine cuisine of the ocean. They also amused themselves with the performance on the stage while chatting with the others. The atmosphere was boisterous.

Right at the middle, in front of all of them stood a giant crystal table, with an old Silver Shark man seated. His face was reddened because of the wine he took. He was talking and laughing with emotion as he was continually poured wine to a middle-aged Silver Shark man sitting next to him. That middle-aged man also had a shark fin on his back. Although he was sitting in his seat, an oppressing aura like a big mountain was spreading.

The patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan, Yin Hui!

At first glance, Shi Yan knew right away that man was Yin Hui.

The old Silver Shark man with a long beard was the host of the party today – Cru. A young maiden was sitting next to him; perhaps she was his daughter. She was also smiling and offering fine wine to Yin Hui.

Yin Hui didn't deny her, just smiled and drank. Sometimes, he gave the girl compliment as she was a beauty that would become the dazzling pearl of the Silver Shark Clan.

There were ten crystal tables behind the table of Cru and Yin Hui. Seated there were the hotshots of the Sea Tribes.

There were members of the Black Flood Dragon Clan, the Naga Tribe, and the Water Scorpion Tribe. The lowest cultivation base those people had was the Nirvana Realm. Most of them were at the Sky Realm. All were drinking too much, and delivering their compliments to Cru and Yin Hui. The atmosphere was warm and harmonious.

Shi Yan stood behind the stage, far away from the center of the feast. He frowned, looking at Yin Hui as he was considering what kind of excuse he could use to approach Yin Hui and ask for the



ancient lofty dragon graveyard. All of a sudden, a familiar aura got to him from behind Yin Hui and Cru, making his pupils shrink.

Looking more attentively, he found six people wearing veils and covering all their bodies standing behind Yin Hui and Cru. Apparently, the aura from two among them was really familiar to him.

Cao Zhi Lan! Pan Zhe!

Shi Yan was terrified.

When he was in the Demonic Sound Clan, he had planted a soul seed inside Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe's souls. Although he had soon lifted the barrier, he was still familiar with their souls. In a certain range, he would be able to detect their existence and recognize them.

The man and the woman wearing the veil there were absolutely Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe.

The most outstanding young leader of the Cao Family and the Penglai Holy Land's future successor, the two prominent youths of the Endless Sea appeared at the territory of the Silver Shark Clan and in Cru's house.

What was going on?

Shi Yan's face darkened as suspicions filled his heart. While he was coldly looking at Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe, he changed his appearance in silence.

After a while, his cheeks were much thinner as his sockets became deeper, that made him look more ferocious and malicious.

Both Cao Zhi Land and Pan Zhe had known him. If those two saw him, they could know his identity right away.

For the moment, he didn't want to expose himself. He wanted to hide and observe what Pan Zhe and Cao Zhi Lan were up to.

"Hey!"

As Yin Hui was talking with Cru, he suddenly shouted, shifting his look towards him as sharp as lightning. Yin Hui's look suddenly became colder, looking at him from a distance. He was wearing a cold smile but still waving at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan discolored.

"I didn't expect that we will have a friend from far away. Haha, you're considerate indeed." Yin Hui smiled as his eyes were as bright as a torch, crossing through the hotshots of the Sea Tribes to gaze at him. Yin Hui had seen through his disguise.

# Chapter 462: Shi Yan from the Yang Family!

---

Shi Yan suddenly felt embarrassed.

He and Yin Hui had just met once. Moreover, the distance between them was too far away. He thought that even when they had a chance to meet up again, Yin Hui wouldn't recognize him. Thus, he decided to visit Cru's banquet deliberately.

Unexpectedly, Yin Hui was excellent as he was able to recognize him with just a glance from such a distance.

As Yin Hui voiced up, warriors of the Sea Tribes had their eyes gaze Shi Yan with great surprise.

Even the hotshots from human race Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhi were looking at him after Yin Hui's recognition. However, Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe didn't have a strong cultivation base like Yin Hui, and Shi Yan had disguised himself, so those two people couldn't recognize Shi Yan's real identity.

Cru was surprised for a while before he said with a low tone. "Patriarch, is this young man a great warrior of our Silver Shark Clan? Why doesn't he look familiar at all?"

"He's not one of us," Yin Hui smiled coldly then said, "I do hope that our Silver Shark Clan could have an outstanding young warrior like him. Too bad, the Silver Shark Clan doesn't have that luck."

Having heard Yin Hui say so, the hotshots from the Sea Tribes were more shocked. They eyed Shi Yan with strange faces.

"Come sit here," Yin Hui ignored the others' suspicions. He didn't reveal Shi Yan's identity right away as he beamed a smile while looking at the group of Cao Zhi Lan standing behind him. As if he thought this case was interesting, he couldn't help but wave at Shi Yan.

As he got exposed, Shi Yan didn't continue to hide. Besides, he

wasn't afraid of Yin Hui. Thus, he deliberately walked over, entering the center of the stage and clasped his fist, talking to Cru. "Congratulations for entering the Spirit Realm. You're one step closer to the Great Way."

Cru didn't understand the situation, so he just furrowed, nodded and said, "Thank you."

"We met half a month ago at Barren City. We were far away at that time, so I didn't have the chance to chat with you." Yin Hui curled his lips to form a smile, nodded to Cru then continued, "He's our guest from far away. Make a seat for him. This little brother is so outstanding that he could make the Bao Wen brothers bow to him. He deserves our respect."

Yin Hui succinctly pointed out his real identity.

The warriors from the Sea Tribes couldn't help but exclaim out loud.

"Shi Yan from the Yang Family!"

The Silver Shark mild-mannered maiden sitting next to Cru cheered softly as her beautiful eyes brightened up.

Standing behind Yin Hui, Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhi, who were wearing the bamboo hat with a long veil, were shaking in shock.

"It's him!"

Cao Zhi Lan gritted her teeth. At this moment, she felt the five flavors were all flooding her heart. (Sour, sweet, spicy, salty, bitter; means her feeling was mixed up – TL)

The last time they met was at the Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect in the Yuan Luo Sea. After she knew that the pagans Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan had turned to the Demon Dwellers and cut off the relation with Shi Yan, she determinedly gave Shi Yan up. Now, when she looked back, she thought her decision at that time was so wrong.

Not long after Shi Yan had left the island, he had raised waves in the Endless Sea, fought against Mo Qi Ta, Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven and the Emperor of Earth. He also caused a significant trauma for the Corpse God Sect, as he had made the King Corpse revive his consciousness. This series of his deeds had shaken all the strong warriors of the Endless Sea.

She thought that Shi Yan would barely be able to struggle, but in fact, he had used his deeds to make all the warriors of the Endless Sea remember his name.

Shi Yan had disappeared for one year. Anyway, whenever the leaders of the forces in Endless Sea mentioned his name, they all wore a serious face as if his name were a taboo matter.

Cao Zhi Lan knew that she had made a wrong assumption that underestimated Shi Yan's profound potential. Too bad, it was too late. Under her suggestion, the Cao Family had joined the game to chase and kill Shi Yan, which meant they had cut off the relationship with him.

Due to this one mistake, she had lost the close relationship with Shi Yan forever. At the moment, as they saw Shi Yan, who had gone missing for a year, Cao Zhi Lan suddenly felt her heart was constantly moved, as the image in her mind had flooded her heart once again.

The face under the bamboo hat was filled with remorse. Cao Zhi Lan bowed and sighed begrudgingly.

The Endless Sea was vast, but she had only met one man who could touch her heart. This man had used his domineering power and mysteriously left a bold brush stroke in her soul. However, due to the complexity of the situation, she had chosen to be on the opposite side of his.

This was hard to recover.

Cao Zhi Lan shook her head as her eyes revealed her sorrow. She

beamed a self-ridiculing smile.

Under Yin Hui's reminder, all the warriors of the Sea Tribes present at the banquet held an amazed countenance. They all gazed at Shi Yan, who was standing unyieldingly.

During this period, the name Shi Yan was the most resounding name in the ocean. He was the one who used a Sky Realm cultivation base to defeat Bao Ke and Bao Wen, who received both Yin Hui's and Li Sha's praises. He was such a legend!

Even if they were living undersea, members of the Sea Tribes were also interested in strong warriors. From the misfortune at Barren City to Shi Yan stopping the furious wave, all kinds of rumors had been spread out on the ocean floor. All warriors of the Sea Tribes knew that the Yang Family had a tough character. That kid's potential was even more dangerous than Yang Tian Emperor's that year.

As of now, they could see the hotshot in the rumor, and strong warriors from the Sea Tribes were all showing their interests. Cru's eyes brightened up as he suddenly laughed and pitched his voice. "Come, bring up a table with fine wine and food."

Some guards of the Silver Shark Clan immediately received the order. Not long after that, they presented a table with good wine and good food.

Shi Yan clasped his fist to thank him, then sat down at his table. He was wearing a cold face without any sign of anxiety. He picked up his glass, took some sips and said heroically, "Good wine."

The beautiful maiden of the Silver Shark Clan sitting next to Cru had her eyes sparkling. As she seemed to be interested in the man, she giggled. "Rumors say that you look extraordinarily ferocious, as if you want to swallow up our Sea Tribes members. But, I think you look normal."

Shi Yan beamed a wry smile. Under the watchful eyes, he started

to transform. Within just three seconds, the fin on his back disappeared, and his face had recovered to its original form.

The beautiful eyes of the maiden brightened up as she chuckled. "Is that your real appearance?"

Shi Yan nodded.

"A lot better now," The young girl smiled, holding her glass. "My name's Hai Luo. Thanks for coming to celebrate with my father."

Shi Yan drank up his glass, smiled and said, "Hai Luo, the beautiful pearl of the sea. Truly worthy of the name."

Hai Luo smiled, and it made her eyes as narrow as a line. She wiped off the wine on her lips and said, "You know how to say sweet words."

Cao Zhi Lan standing behind suddenly felt irritated. She couldn't help but hum quietly.

"Jealous?" Pan Zhe said with a low tone. "Previously, you had a close relationship with Shi Yan. I used to think that with your charm, you could subdue him under your dress. How could it turn to this? So, now you feel regret when you see him flirting with others?"

"Even if I made a wrong decision, I will not regret it!" Cao Zhi Lan clenched her teeth and snorted coldly. "You shouldn't be wordy. Think about how to deal with this sudden situation."

"There's no solution. Even if Shi Yan didn't come here, the Silver Shark Clan wouldn't still cooperate with us." Pan Zhe shook his head. "People from the Sea Tribes are discreetly watching the situation up there, waiting for us to engage in the war. I don't think they will form a relationship with us."

"As long as the benefit's big enough, nothing's impossible." Another young man smiled behind the veil of his bamboo hat. "What a pity that Nu Lang didn't come here. If not, we just need to talk to him. As long as Nu Lang nods his head, the Water Scorpion

Tribe, the Naga Tribe and the Silver Shark Clan will agree with his opinions."

"Nu Lang has never talked to humans. In the recent years, there's only Yang Tian Emperor who has come to the Black Flood Dragon Clan to talk to him once. We shouldn't lay hopes on this person. Unless our seniors come here directly, he won't meet any guests."

Cao Zhi Lan couldn't help but sigh.

As they were whispering to each other on this side, on the other side, Shi Yan was drinking with the hotshots of the Sea Tribes. He drank one glass with each of them, including Cru and Yin Hui. It looked like he didn't know that this was a celebration of the Silver Shark Clan, and he was rather a guest that somewhat overwhelmed the host.

He was feasting with other people, drinking happily with the members of the Sea Tribes. Cao Zhi Lan was a guest, but she could only stand aside and watch, as she wasn't eligible to join the banquet.

Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe felt really annoyed seeing Shi Yan seem to have a good relationship with the Silver Shark Clan.

"Oh, right!" Yin Hui took a glass of wine then acted as if he suddenly remembered his guests. He patted his head then turned around, smiled and said, "Seems we still have some guests here."

Cru also looked around.

"Perhaps you guys have known each other." Yin Hui's smile hid something behind as he suddenly said, "Bring up another table. Friends, please come forward. Ah, please take off your bamboo hats. Don't worry, although our Sea Tribes don't get along well with your human race, as you come here with good will, of course, we will treat you well." Cao Zhi Lan's group was like they are riding a tiger and it was now hard to get off.

"Let's go. It's only Shi Yan, we don't need to be afraid of him."



The young man standing next to Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe had taken off his bamboo hat, revealing a handsome face. He was Zhong Li Dun of the Martial Spirit Palace.

The number one warrior of the combat list, Zhong Li Dun was walking forward from the spot of Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe with a natural expression. Pan Zhe and Cao Zhi Lan were hesitant for a while before following him.

Yin Hui's smile became more radiant. He extended his arm to introduce them. "These are the young hotshot of the Cao Family, the Martial Spirit Palace, and the Penglai Holy Land. Yeah, the three behind them are the consecrator Zuo Yue Feng of the Cao Family, Situ Jie from the Martial Spirit Palace and Cang Lan from Penglai Holy Land. They are all famous in the Endless Sea. I guess you guys know each other well."

Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie from the Martial Spirit Palace were the kind of people with deep thoughts and wild schemes. They were standing behind Cao Zhi Lan and Zhong Li Dun, frowning at Shi Yan. Shi Yan couldn't help but shrink his pupils.

Those were the two First Sky of Spirit Realm warriors!

## Chapter 463: Safely Free

---

After the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had merged with his host soul, he was able to detect the real realm of the others on seeing them. God Realm warriors were no exception, as even they couldn't avoid his sensing.

Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie were covered in the bamboo hat with a veil. This made the others focus on Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe. Anyway, no one was too attentive. Currently, those two had taken off their hats and revealed their appearance. When they came in Shi Yan's line of sight, he knew their real realms at once.

Zuo Yue Feng and Situ Jie looked quite thin with dark faces, which gave people the impression that their schemes were really heavy.

Especially Situ Jie, and Shi Yan didn't know when he saw this man, yet he felt familiar as if he had met him before. But then, he recognized that he had never contacted this person before, and had no impression of his face.

Cang Lan from Penglai Holy Land had the cultivation base of Third Sky of Sky Realm. Shi Yan didn't even consider this person.

From this point, the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace were one level stronger than Penglai Holy Land. This time, the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace had sent Spirit Realm warriors, but the Penglai Holy Land had just a Sky Realm warrior. Obviously, they were lower than the Cao Family and the Martial Spirit Palace.

Shi Yan also knew that the three strongest forces of the Endless Sea were the Caos, the Yangs, and the Martial Spirit Palace, and they didn't have only one Spirit Realm warrior. The Yang Family was the same. He had heard from Yang Zhuo that besides Yang Tian Emperor, the Yangs had two other Spirit Realm warriors. However, only Yang Qingdi knew where they were.

Yang Zhuo guessed that the two Spirit Realm warriors of the Yang Family were still in the Fourth Demon Area.

Situ Jie looked at him with a cold, dark face, then gave him a fiendish grin.

Shi Yan's eyebrows slammed together, as he felt this guy was somehow familiar, and he had sensed his aura from somewhere before.

But at this moment, he couldn't figure it out. "As you are all the warriors from the Endless Sea, I suppose you've known each other, right? Do you want me to introduce a little bit here?" Yin Hui smiled, shifted his look between them and continued coldly, "People that come here from the other places are our guests. If you guys have any resentment, you shouldn't resolve it within the Silver Stone Fort. I don't care if you deal with each other outside the Silver Stone Fort. You should solve your human race's matters somewhere else."

Hotshots from the Sea Tribes burst out laughing as they heard that.

Yin Hui knew the situation that happened above the water surface. He seemed to know that the other forces from everywhere didn't get along well with the Yang Family. Now, he had called for Cao Zhi Lan's group, and Shi Yan understood his purpose.

Yin Hui regretted that he couldn't make the two sides battle against each other. It'd be better if one of them lost.

"Hope you are well."

Shi Yan sneered inside, but his face was still calm. He nodded to Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe. "Long time no see."

Cao Zhi Lan curled her lips with a cold face. "Yeah, long time no see. You're undersea... No wonder why people up there have to search for you with great efforts."

"It's my bad I've made you guys worried," Shi Yan said,

"Unfortunately, you've put forth many things, but I've survived well. As long as I'm alive, we will have chances to solve this grudge in the future."

Something flared up in Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes as she nodded deliberately.

Pan Zhe also felt embarrassed. He forced a smile to Shi Yan and clasped his hands. "We've met again. Seeing you are still alive, I think many people feel worried. Sigh. Honestly, I don't want to be your enemy. Too bad it's the situation, and I have no choice."

Shi Yan was dazed, and didn't understand his attitude.

"No matter what happened, you saved me in the Chasm Battlefield. Although your deeds were despicable when you confined our souls, we got out of there alive." Pan Zhe sighed. "I can't control the situation of the Endless Sea. Here's my advice for you. Leave. Otherwise, you won't have a day living in peace."

Shi Yan frowned, but he didn't say anything.

The Sea Tribes' warriors, Yin Hui and Cru kept a smiling face, watching them without saying anything. It was just like they were watching a play, waiting for the two sides to start the war.

Zhong Li Dun of the Martial Spirit Palace wore an arrogant face. "You are that Shi Yan? With the difficult situation of your Yang Family, do you still think that you can borrow the force from the Sea Tribes to do something up there? Do you think it's possible?"

Zhong Li Dun always looked down on Shi Yan.

Before Shi Yan had arrived the Endless Sea, he had been the top warrior on the combat list, and everybody from every force admired him.

However, after Shi Yan got back from the Chasm Battlefield, he had subdued Man Gu, showing his tremendous cultivation base and that he had also hurt Mo Qi Ta severely.

So many rumors about Shi Yan were spread out. Anyone who knew Shi Yan's stories considered him a new generation hero that no one could deny. He would oppress all the young ages of the Endless Sea, including the one who had topped the combat list, Zhong Li Dun.

Shi Yan appeared across the sky and had covered his presence, as the other had become the peerless young warrior that many people from the Endless Sea had to recognize. This man even had the competence to provoke the previous generations. This was a hard hit to Zhong Li Dun.

At this moment, as he was meeting Shi Yan undersea, Zhong Li Dun's attitude couldn't be better.

"Although the Yang Family doesn't appear in the Endless Sea, they do live well, and the competence of the family is well preserved." Of course, Shi Yan wouldn't give him face. He sneered. "Well, we aren't like some other forces. First, they would take the chance to collaborate with every force they could reach. Well, they thought they could satisfy their long-cherished wishes, but the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers had spanked their butts. Their power is draining, and the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers are torturing them every day."

A brutal look shot out from Zhong Li Dun's eyes. He coldly looked at Shi Yan and said, "Nonsense! The Demon Dwellers in the Demon Area had eradicated the Yang Family. You really think that people would believe in your lies?"

Shi Yan burst out laughing. He shook his head, wore a disdainful look on his face, but didn't regard the other.

"Forgive me for speaking frankly," Zhong Li Dun clasped his hands, looking at Yin Hui. "If you guys cooperate with the Yang Family, I think the human race will not approve it. It could be said that the Yang Family is the common enemy of the whole Endless Sea. They aren't on the same side with the Demon Dwellers and

the Dark Dwellers either. Once you choose to collaborate with the Yangs, you'll face a formidable pressure you have never had."

"Our Sea Tribes only love the beauty of the ocean; we don't like killing." Yin Hui laughed. "Today is the banquet of Cru. If you guys want to drink, we'll welcome you. But if you want to discuss things we aren't interested in, please cut it off. Come, come, come... Let's toast!"

Yin Hui didn't want to expose his real purpose.

No matter it was the Caos, the Martial Spirit Palace or the Yangs, he pretended that he wasn't interested in anyone. Having heard Yin Hui say that, Zhong Li Dun and Cao Zhi Lan were disappointed. However, they didn't continue the talk, as they wanted to wait until the party finished. They would find Yin Hui to talk him into this.

As Shi Yan didn't come here to create the relationship with the Silver Shark Clan, he didn't bother with Yin Hui's words, just relaxed and drank. He looked breezily, as if he didn't want to discuss any important matter.

"This man's free and easy." Hai Luo chuckled, then picked up her jade glass, walking over to Shi Yan like a beautiful siren. "I can see you don't really want to work with the Silver Shark Clan. I also heard that the Yang Family doesn't live well on land. What do you want?"

"I don't want anything. I'm okay with my life now." Shi Yan smiled, not intending to discuss any business with Hai Luo, as he was drinking and chatting about some interesting rumors in the Endless Sea.

Hai Luo had heard a lot about Shi Yan. With her curiosity about his personality, she stayed close to him and asked him many questions.

Shi Yan then talked about the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, the

powers of the earth and firmament, the beasts, the exotic land of the place and the floating island and mountain.

Hai Luo was amazed. She asked more questions as her curiosity was growing. The two were talking with low tone. Shi Yan did it on purpose so the other Sea Tribes member surrounding them couldn't hear the content of his story.

Cao Zhi Lan pouted her lips while wearing a bitter face. As she was watching Hai Luo and Shi Yan, her beautiful eyes flared up with jealousy. She felt annoyed seeing Shi Yan and Hai Luo close to each other.

Yin Hui's look was faint. Sometimes, he shifted to Shi Yan just like he was watching over something silently.

This was a big feast, and most of the Sea Tribes members had grown their interest in Shi Yan. Sometimes, some hotshots of the Sea Tribes would come over and have a toast with him. In the recent years, the Yang Family had helped the Sea Tribes. If the strong warriors from the Sea Tribes had any good feeling towards the humans, it would be only for the members of the Yang Family. Previously, Shi Yan had performed his invincible power in the barren city, which raised the curiosity among the Sea Tribes members. Moreover, he was one of the Yangs; that's why, the Sea Tribes members would proactively come and offer him drinks.

No one cared about Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, and Zhong Li Dun. Although these three people represented the influential forces in the Endless Sea, the Sea Tribes members didn't give them any face by drinking with them.

Cao Zhi Lan's group was as if they were sitting on pins and needles. They suddenly felt that they somehow were inharmonious with the rest of the people enjoying the banquet. Many members of the Sea Tribes acted like they didn't see this group of people.

Quite on the contrary, Shi Yan's table was bustling with noise and excitement. Not only the beauties, but also the hotshots from

the Sea Tribes came there. The party was finally coming to an end, but no member of the Sea Tribes visited Cao Zhi Lan's table.

The banquet ended.

Six people of Cao Zhi Lan's group stood up, looking at Yin Hui with expectation. They seemed to want to say something but still hesitated.

Yin Hui smiled, waving his hand. "Come here."

The faces of Cao Zhi Lan's group brightened. They hurried to go with Yin Hui to a secret chamber behind the stage to discuss something important.

"Shi Yan, hang in there. We'll talk later." Yin Hui regarded him, smiled then led the group of six to another place. The six people of Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe's group followed Yin Hui. However, after half an hour, they all came out of the place.

They were frowning, not looking happy at all. It seemed they didn't have a good discussion with Yin Hui. After the six of them had gotten out of the place, they regarded Shi Yan coldly and left Cru's house. They seemed to leave the Silver Stone Castle, too.

Yin Hui called out for Shi Yan, who then finally got up. A guard of the Silver Shark Clan led him to another secret chamber.

Only Yin Hui was in the room.

"Do you know what they asked us?" Yin Hui smiled, but it didn't look like a smile.

"No, I don't." Shi Yan shook his head and gave the other a cold answer. "I don't care, either."

"It's related to your Yang Family a bit." Yin Hui proactively explained. "They are willing to give up the Kyara Sea. As long as our Sea Tribes agree to deal with the Dark Dwellers, the Kyara Sea will belong to us. Ha ha... Seems like the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers have subdued people of the Endless Sea quite



badly. It's been many years, and the human race hasn't had a good relationship with our Sea Tribes. They don't even want us to come up to the surface. This time will become a precedence. They are even prepared to give us the Kyara Sea. Don't you think it's interesting?"

Shi Yan's face was stiff.

The Kyara Sea used to belong to the Yang Family. After the Yangs had left that sea area, the Demon Dwellers had taken over the area and then handed over to the Dark Dwellers. It could be said that the area had undergone strenuous events with bleeding wounds. Unexpectedly, the Chaos, the Martial Spirit Palace, and the Penglai Holy Land came here this time to offer the Yang Family's territory to the Sea Tribes. Basically, they didn't care about the Yang Family.

"Seems like their situation is not really optimistic." Shi Yan frowned, snorted and said, "Nevertheless, Kyara Sea belongs to the Yangs, even if it's controlled by the Dark Dwellers now. In the future, we, the Yang Family will take it back. Whoever claims the Kyara Sea will become the Yang Family's enemy!"

"As I heard from the Black Flood Dragon Clan, you wanted the Yangs to cooperate with the Sea Tribes?" Yin Hui said with a solemn face.

"I had that thought, but it would be impossible with precursor Nu Lang's attitude." Shi Yan didn't want to conceal. "What your Sea Tribes want is not to join the battle. You're waiting for the war to come to the most brutal point, in which, both sides have to be wounded. And then, you will take over the Endless Sea, the Demon Area, and the Underworld at once. This is your true great plan."

Yin Hui's eyes suddenly brightened.

"Since you just want to sit there and watch the fight, no matter how much that group of six tries to persuade you, it's useless. I don't have to worry at all." Shi Yan smiled. "Precursor Nu Lang's a

man who embraces ambitions. As the opportunity that happens once in a thousand years is in front of your eyes, nobody will believe that you won't take the chance."

"So why did you come here?" Yin Hui contemplated for a while before frowning and asking him. "Seems like you are not here to persuade me, right?"

"Of course not," Shi Yan shook his head. "I want to ask for the location of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. You're the patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan, so you should know where it is, right?"

"You want the treasure of the lofty dragon?" Yin Hui sneered all of a sudden. "Over thousands of years, countless strong warriors from amongst us have intruded that place, but no one could get out alive. Even Nu Lang doesn't dare to get in because he couldn't be sure. You brat really think that using external forces to defeat Bao Wen is enough for you to enter the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard?"

"If you know the place, just tell me. You don't need to care about the other stuff." Shi Yan didn't put his ridicule in mind. "Even if there's no one to show me the way, it's just a matter of time before I find out that dragon graveyard. Don't you agree?"

"If you want to die, I don't care." Yin Hui mused for a while then threw him a crystal. "This crystal can show you the way to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. Just follow the crystal's guidance, and you can get to that forbidden area at the bottom of the sea. Anyway, I don't think you can get out of here alive."

"Oh?"

"Those six people are waiting for you outside the Silver Stone Fort perhaps. I don't know if you can escape their hands. Even if you can leave this place safely, it's your dead end entering the forbidden area of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon. As an appreciation to the Yang Family's attitude toward our Sea Tribes throughout

many years, I'll give you a piece of advice. Stay away from that graveyard. It's not the place you human can dig for benefits."

"Thanks in advance."

Shi Yan ignored Yin Hui's advice, clasped his hands to greet, then left Cru's house.

"Patriarch."

Cru regarded his leader after Shi Yan had left.

"I denied the offer from those six people," said Yin Hui coldly.

Cru nodded. "I know patriarch will not appreciate the small benefit. I heard that Shi Yan had visited the Black Flood Dragon Clan. Then, precursor Nu Lang declared that the Black Flood Dragon Clan would not interfere with the Yang's business in the barren city. Everything stays the same. So, does Shi Yan have... with precursor Nu Lang?"

"Do you think it's possible?" laughed Yin Hui.

Cru was dazed, but then he also smiled. "Impossible."

"I also feel confused. Why does this brat want to visit the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard? It's the forbidden area of the seabed. Thousands of years have passed by, but no one ever came out of there alive. Even I just dare to stay outside. I have never actually entered the center of the tomb."

Yin Hui frowned. "That kid isn't stupid. It's obvious that he knows how dangerous that place is, but he still wants to get in there. Why? Is he confident that he can get out of there alive?"

"How could it be!"

Cru let out a light sigh and shook his head continuously. "Even precursor Nu Lang, who has already entered the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, doesn't dare to enter the place. He's just a junior at the Sky Realm. What skills does he have?"

"I overheard from his talk to Hai Luo that he has visited the Dark

Magnetic Noxious Mist. It's also a mystery, and we can't measure it. He has survived that place. Does it mean he has something special?"

"Did he just boast it?"

"I doubt that," Yin Hui shook his head. "He confirmed that he did visit the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. We have no doubt about this point. The Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist is really mysterious, and we don't know what it's like if we haven't been there. He's able to get out from there, which means he should have something great. This kid isn't an ordinary young man. He has the power of a warrior at the Spirit Realm when he's just at the Sky Realm. We can't consider him with common sense."

"So, what do you mean?"

"I will go to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard to see if he does enter that place. I do want to know whether or not this brat was just boasting about himself."

"Well, we don't know if he could survive the other six people waiting for him out there."

"They can't challenge him. Anyway, even Bao Ke and Bao Wen have to be afraid of him. I think if this kid put forth all of his abilities, he could escape from that group of six. Yeah, I think it shouldn't be a problem. This man is more excellent than Yang Tian Emperor that year. We should treat him with care. It would be better."

"Such good ideas from our patriarch!"

# Chapter 464: Look, you are not strong enough!

---

Outside the Silver Stone Fort. The group of six, including Cao Zhi Lan, Zou Yue Feng, Zhong Li Dun and Situ Jie were waiting in silence.

Two Spirit Realm hotshots, two Sky Realm warriors, plus the outstanding talents whose cultivation base was a little bit lower, Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe, this powerful group could silence many warriors in the Endless Sea and make them not dare to go against their wishes.

Although they were waiting for Shi Yan, this group of six didn't look relaxed at all, wearing a serious face like they were going to encounter their archenemy.

The name Shi Yan had soon been spread through the Endless Sea. His brutal fight against Mo Qi Ta, Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven and the Emperor of Earth, and all the other types of experience made those people recognize that even if Shi Yan's realm weren't high, he was really dangerous. Without the assistance of Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie, they wouldn't have the guts to stay there.

"We should be careful later on." Cao Zhi Lan said with a low voice and a serious face. "Seems like his realm's been increasing every day very fast. Last time when he was in the Endless Sea, he was at the Nirvana Realm. But now, he's gone straight up to the Sky Realm. At that time, he had caused a lot of trouble to Qing Ming and the other two. As he's at the Sky Realm now, it should be really tough to deal with him."

"Don't worry, Miss," Zou Yue Feng arched his eyebrows and smiled coldly. "The Queen of Heaven and the Emperor of Earth are also in the Spirit Realm, but they only have the power of the Spirit Realm warriors when they fight together. Situ-ge here and I have our powers from ascetic cultivation. We're different from the

Queen of Heaven and the Emperor of Earth. If we join our force to attack him, even if that kid has some secret method to increase his ability, we still can make him die in this seabed."

Situ Jie smiled. "When we were on the Sun Island, I had tried. Although that kid can borrow external force, it's hard to change his real realm. The soul in his Sea of Consciousness is estimated to be one level lower than ours. If we launch attacks in that aspect, we'll surely trouble him and not let him escape."

"Right," Zhong Li Dun nodded. "It's hard to change the Sea of Consciousness. If we use soul attacks and intrude his Sea of Consciousness instantly, he absolutely won't be able to bear it. If we can attack fast enough, I think he wouldn't have time to borrow external force. We can then break his Sea of Consciousness, and that will destroy his soul."

"His skills in using soul power aren't typical. We still need to be very careful."

Pan Zhe shook his head and forced a smile. "That year when we were in the Chasm Battlefield, he had learned many secret soul techniques from the Demonic Sound Clan. His understanding towards the soul aspect is much more profound than that of normal people. Sigh, I was a victim. His knowledge in soul power is really mysterious. You shouldn't be careless."

"The six of us are waiting for him here. I think he doesn't dare to get out of the Silver Stone Fort." Zhong Li Dun sneered, "If he isn't an idiot, he'll stay inside the Silver Stone Fort. As we have to give the Silver Shark Clan face, we won't touch him. I believe he won't go out."

"Not sure."

Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes twinkled as she let out a light sigh. "This man has more guts than anyone else. I guess he will go out for sure."

"You guys have overestimated him," disdained Zhong Li Dun.

"Here he comes!"

Situ Jie's eyes flared up with cold intent. He couldn't help but shout. "He even comes from the main gate! This brat's extremely arrogant! Seems like he doesn't put us in his eyes. He knows we would wait for him here, but he still dares to come. Well, this person doesn't care about death or life."

"He isn't scared. Perhaps..." Pan Zhe's face also looked odd.

From the main gate of the Silver Stone Fort came a young man strolling through the empty area. It looked like he didn't know that some persons were waiting for him.

Behind him, some strong warriors of the Sea Tribes were watching the situation there. Everyone knew there would be a great fight. Even the two Spirit Realm of the Silver Shark Clan Yin Hui and Cru were standing on a high building in the fort, watching in that general direction.

Hai Luo was standing next to Cru, listening to her precursors' discussion. Her beautiful eyes were twinkling like shiny pearls, and her succulent lips were moving emotionally.

Members of the Sea Tribes were observing them both publicly and privately from a distance.

"This kid's haughty." Cru shook his head and frowned. "This is the first time I've met such an extremely arrogant fellow. We will have a good show to watch for sure."

"If he can breezily go out, I think he'll have his part in the future of the Endless Sea." Yin Hui appraised with a serious face. "The future of this young fellow can't be foreseen. If he has enough time, he will be like Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Tian Emperor or Yang Yi Tian. Perhaps, he will be even more excellent than those people."

"Patriarch. I didn't think that you've estimated him that highly." Cru was surprised.

"According to the information I have, when Yang Tian Emperor was at his age, he had only the cultivation base at Earth Realm. Even when Yang Tian Emperor was at his Sky Realm, I don't think he could be that arrogant under the attentive watch of two Spirit Realm warriors." Yin Hui face was solemn. "Wait and see. If he can get out of here safely, the future era will belong to him!"

Cru's and Hai Luo's eyes suddenly brightened.

"It's my bad I let you wait for so long." Outside the Silver Stone Fort, Shi Yan smiled then sighed. "Unfortunately, you just wasted your time. If you want to deal with me, I think you should let Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian do it themselves. Zou Yen Feng and Situ Jie aren't enough."

"This boy talks big!"

Zou Yue Feng snorted and gave a cold smile. "What kind of calculation you've done? You're just a Sky Realm warrior. Do you think that's enough to ask our masters to play with you? Today, I'll show you that the real situation of the Endless Sea isn't what you've seen. Even if you have infinite potential, you can't do much."

"Eh?"

Shi Yan wore a mocking face, shook his head and said coldly, "I'm waiting to see what you can do to me."

The three strange energies of the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame had mixed together in the Profound Qi vortex, creating a torrential power, as strong as a river. A chain of bloodthirsty thoughts couldn't help rising up in his heart.

Milky fog emitted from the pores in his entire body, forming something like a thick cocoon covering his body completely.

A brutal and evil aura, as cold as ice, silently permeated the area. The sea water around him was like it was forced to stay away from him by an invisible force.



"Come out!"

He called out to the Blood Vein Ring, and a mysterious giant sword flew out. At the same time, the King of Demon Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm also turned into two different beams of light and parked on his shoulders separately. They opened their small eyes wider to watch the group of Zou Yue Feng.

As the people of the Sea Tribes sensed the evil power that burst out from Shi Yan, they had their faces changed in awe. In front of the main gate of the Silver Stone Fort, a young girl from the Jade Clam Clan covered her mouth in shock, as her eyes were panic-stricken.

Previously, she had taunted Shi Yan. She wasn't eligible to join Cru's banquet, so after the party was over, she found someone she knew at the gate on the way home.

However, she didn't have time to think much as she suddenly found an earth-shaking energy burst out from Shi Yan.

Under that formidable fluctuating energy, she found herself so small, feeling frustrated even with a single glance at Shi Yan. The difference between their realms was too vast.

At this moment, she knew how subtle Shi Yan was. Such a dangerous hotshot, he just needed to use a finger to savage her. She recalled the time she had disrespected him and felt scared, silently retreating into the city, as she worried that Shi Yan would find her.

"His name isn't in vain!"

Inside the Silver Stone Fort, Cru's pupils shrank. He suddenly nodded with a surprised face.

"So, you know why I've appreciated him, right?" Yin Hui smiled.

Cru nodded. "If this young man keeps growing up this way, he will be a peerless warrior in the Endless Sea! Sigh, I finally know why the patriarch has valued him that much. Yang Tian Emperor

has good fortune as the Yang Family can have such an outstanding fellow."

"Never underestimate the Yangs."

Yin Hui face became somber. "Nu Lang used to say that in the Endless Sea, Yang Tian Emperor's the toughest. If you haven't seen him die with your own eyes, he will live forever. Our Sea Tribes are staying calm because we're afraid that Yang Tian Emperor will come back at some point."

"The Yangs are really extreme," exclaimed Cru. "Don't give him the chance to prepare!" Zhong Li Duns suddenly shouted.

Numerous Soul Consciousness strands spread out from Situ Jie's head like tentacles, directly aiming for Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Zou Yue Feng didn't dare to hesitate and also condensed his Soul Consciousness into a silver beam that naked eye could observe, slashing down at Shi Yan from the sky.

They could vaguely see a tiny electric current inside the silver beam.

Soul Consciousness substantializing!

Moreover, there was the lightning power inside his Soul Consciousness. This was clearly a sophisticated soul technique.

Zou Yue Feng's eyes were as bright as stars when his vitality, Qi, and spirit became one. He had gathered and condensed numerous beams of Soul Consciousness, controlled an Executing God Electric Spear that had the lightning power to destroy Shi Yan's soul within this attack.

The Nine Firmament Lightning was the nemesis of all souls. Once the lightning power struck the Sea of Consciousness, touching the soul, even Spirit Realm warriors wouldn't be able to bear it.

This Executing God Lightning Spear was Zou Yue Feng's strongest killing skill. With this skill, he had been swaggering in the Endless Sea for many years. Even Cao Qiu Dao had once said to have gotten hurt by the Executing God Lightning Spear.

When the strike was struck out, strong warriors from the Sea Tribes in the Silver Stone Fort, who could use their Soul Consciousness to sense, had their faces discolored.

Shi Yan was the target. All of a sudden, under the attentive eyes, he closed his eyes.

Inside his Sea of Consciousness, the host soul opened its third eye. The Nine Serenities Devouring Soul Flame released bizarre flames, spreading out in his Sea of Consciousness while Situ Jie's and Zou Yue Feng's soul strikes were attacking his Sea of Consciousness vehemently.

Bunches of flame stormed over just like they could sense the smell of blood, burning off the soul energy that had just intruded Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Sssss!

Under the burning flame of the Nine Serenities Devouring Soul Flame, the soul tentacles from Situ Jie and the Executing God Lightning Spear of Zou Yue Feng had turned into nothingness.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng paled as blood gushed out from their mouth because their Soul Consciousness had been hurt severely.

"I told you. You're not strong enough."

Shi Yan grinned then said, "Situ Jie, I know who you are. Your soul had intruded our place in the Sun Island. I remembered it when you just released your Soul Consciousness. Haha. Good, good enough. It's time to take revenge."

# Chapter 465: Vicious Qi overflows

## firmament

---

Shi Yan's real realm was at the Sky Realm, so certain flaws existed in his Soul Consciousness and Soul. Without the assistance of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame in his host soul, facing the soul intrusion of a real Spirit Realm warrior, his Sea of Consciousness would explode, and his soul would collapse.

However, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had made up for this inferiority.

This eccentric firmament flame could devour any kind of soul energy. Soul energies which dared to enter his Sea of Consciousness, had no chance to escape danger as long as they had touched the fire of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, all getting burned down.

As he was sure about that, he dared to risk his life against Spirit Realm warriors, and he wasn't afraid of being soul attacked.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng had underestimated him. They didn't know that the dormant Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was staying in his host soul. Thus, they had rushed to contact him and hurt their Soul Consciousness. The damage in the Soul Consciousness was severe to a warrior, as he couldn't recover it with only gathering Qi from heaven and earth.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng sprayed out blood. They were looking at Shi Yan with pale faces, which were filled with fear and resentment.

Inside the Silver Stone Fort, Yin Hui and Cru from the Silver Stone Fort also changed their faces. They were looking at each other in a daze, as they could see the shock in the other's eyes. The soul attack that Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng had released and the soul surging that they could feel was all clear. They asked

themselves, and realized that if they were Shi Yan, it would be tough for them to deal with these great soul techniques, no need to mention counterattack.

But Shi Yan did that.

A Sky Realm warrior could dissolve the killing soul techniques of two Spirit Realm warriors and also hurt their Soul Consciousness severely. This event made Yin Hui and Cru confused if they had seen everything clear enough. When they looked at Shi Yan, their complexion became more serious. They didn't know what kind of heaven-shaking techniques he had.

"Go!"

When the two Spirit Realm warriors spat out blood, Shi Yan's face was still calm as he shouted.

The King of Demon Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm on his shoulders flew out, striking towards Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng.

When the King of Demon Insects took off, an incredibly evil surging energy started to ripple from it, rolling towards Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng just like waves. The Devouring Gold Silkworm was radiating gold beams. As a demonic beast of the metal class, it understood well how to use attacks to defend. After it had sucked the Immortal Blood, it seemed to have advanced in some aspect. It was now releasing the golden silk in the water, which were straight, small, and sharp as a needle, that could penetrate all kind of imprisonments. When the King of Demon Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm made their debut, Situ Jie's and Zou Yue Feng's countenances became more grimaced.

At this moment, they came to know that Shi Yan had a level 8 King of Demonic Corpse-eating Insects and a demonic beast of the metal class which could destroy even the hardest defenses, the Devouring Gold Silkworm.

The two of them suddenly recognized that besieging Shi Yan

outside the Silver Stone Fort wasn't a rational decision.

But it was impossible to stop halfway. Seeing the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm storm over, they could only gather their nerves to counter at all cost.

As Situ Jie was the consecrator of the Martial Spirit Palace, he had learned many bizarre soul techniques from Yang Yi Tian. The soul attack of the King of Demonic Insects hadn't approached yet, when his pupils shrunk and a green light shot out from his eyes.

Inside that green beam, people could vaguely see the illusion of green water and mountains, giving people a relaxed feeling. This was some sort of a soul technique that made people lose their fighting spirit, and just want to sink in the beautiful and poetic scenes.

The illusions inside the green light piled up in layers, showing many attractive sights. The soul aura from it made people feel like they were sunbathing, and only want to stay in this scene forever.

After the scene inside the green light spread out, the soul attack from the King of Demonic Insects halted, and then scattered like a rain shower, unable to intrude Situ Jie's and Zou Yue Feng's souls.

The Calm Soul Consciousness was still spreading out, crossing the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm to reach Shi Yan.

This time, Situ Jie had acted more carefully, as he didn't dare to let the soul technique be absorbed directly into Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. He just let this intent domain expand near Shi Yan. Although it couldn't maximize the power of the Calm Soul Consciousness soul technique to the peak, it could prevent his attack from being burned down by the Devouring Soul Flame.

This intent domain calmed people down to the point that they really wanted to sleep. Even though the attack's power was reduced, it still drained Shi Yan's fighting spirit.

The dreadful fighting spirit had been affected by this strange intent domain. Shi Yan suddenly calmed down, as if this battle wasn't exciting at all and he just wanted to quit.

He immediately realized that his Soul Consciousness had been affected by Situ Jie's intent domain. The Spirit Realm warrior had learned the subtle principle of the earth and firmament. If Shi Yan didn't counter with care, he would have himself perished.

"Mysterious Ice enthralls!" He shouted in his mind and withdrew the ice Qi of the Ice Cold Flame, guiding the biting cold Qi to his brain.

The relaxed mind of his got struck by this cold Qi. He couldn't help but shiver, which immediately helped him recover his sound mind. The dreadful fighting spirit once lost had been condensed again.

When his fighting spirit rose up again, the power he had condensed was directly poured into the mysterious giant sword. Blood-like red eyes opened one by one on the sword. Whenever a new eye opened, the brutal and ruthless murderous aura emitting from the sword was rising by another intense level.

When two-third of the eyes on the sword had opened, Shi Yan entered the Third Sky of Rampage. Previously, when he was in the mystical, exotic land, he had a fortunate chance to peek at the subtle features of the Third Sky of Rampage. Once the negative forces had been absorbed into his flesh, tendons, bones, and meridians of his entire body, it would merge with his own powers. When all kind of negative energies affected the energy in his body, he would fall into the wild, bloodthirsty state.

This realm and the bedevilment were the same. His eyes were red, and it seemed like he had lost his mind. A desire of destroying everything gradually churned up in his heart.

The Third Sky of Rampage... All kind of negative energies were urged, and as the negative tide rose immensely, a look shot out

from his eyes could bring up the negative spirit. Each acupoint could burst out all of a sudden during his fight.

In this peculiar realm, he only urged the simplest murderous desire. The power of his entire body would raise up massively under the urge of the desire at the bottom of his heart, and he wouldn't experience pain and tiredness. In just a short time, his power would soar up abruptly.

A surging energy that could destroy both the earth and firmament burst out from Shi Yan as its center. The sea water around him was rolling like huge tsunami, forming a massive vortex.

"Such a formidable energy!"

Yin Hui had a shocked face, and couldn't help but exclaim, as his eyes were dazzling with light.

Cru was also astounded. He constantly shook his head. "This kid does have the extreme qualification! This powerful aura can be compared with that of a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior!"

Hai Luo's charming eyes brightened. She balled her small hands into fists and threw them excitedly in the air. "He's so cool!"

All the members of the Sea Tribes surrounding them paled. They instinctively retreated into the Silver Stone Fort, keeping themselves as far from Shi Yan as possible.

Cao Zhi Lan wore a cold face. She wanted to take action, but a feeling of being helpless rose up from the bottom of her heart.

That year, when they were in the Chasm Battlefield, although Shi Yan was dangerous, he had been far behind from who he was now. At that time, Cao Zhi Lan had had her guts to fight with him.

But now...

Looking at Shi Yan releasing the intimidating aura, she couldn't endure it. She only wanted to hide away, and didn't dare to



protest.

In the Third Sky of Rampage, the earth-shaking surging energy was flowing out from his body. He stretched his arm, pointing at the mysterious giant sword. The sword then slashed down, turning into a red ribbon and bringing with it the destructive aura, directly attacking Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng.

A deadly destructive intent domain was released from the giant sword.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng were affected by that intent domain, as an unexpected thought rose up in their mind. "I'm dead." When this thought arose, Situ Jie's and Zou Yue Feng's aura were suppressed.

When their imposing aura was subdued, they couldn't urge the power in their body. Under the attack of the mysterious giant sword and the attentive gaze of the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm, they had to struggle even more.

"GO!"

Zou Yue Feng wore a cold face as he shouted. His body constantly generating illusions, as his true body directly came to Cao Zhi Lan, grabbed her then turned into a light, escaping to a distant place.

Situ Jie didn't dare to linger. In just a blink of an eye, he came to Zhong Li Dun, lifted the guy who was petrified, and fled away.

Cang Lan of the Penglai Holy Land saw the two Spirit Realm warriors run away, so how could he dare to stay? Despite his wounded body, he urged the forbidden technique to flee away, bringing Pan Zhe with him. They disappeared within a short period.

As the giant sword was slashing down and its targets were thousands of li away, it could only halt and withdraw the brutal energy with the blood scent permeating the area.

Shi Yan was surprised, used his Soul Consciousness to sense and

then reluctantly shook his head.

As Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie were the Spirit Realm warriors, if they fled away, it would be hard to chase after them. He released his Soul Consciousness, but he couldn't sense their current locations. This proved that the direction they had gone was extremely far from him.

He wasn't interested in chasing after them. If he maintained this current state, he had to consume the energies of the Holy Spirit God, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame constantly.

Anyway, Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie were Spirit Realm warriors. If he pursued them, he would only waste the powers of the three living beings. This wasn't what he wanted to see.

As they didn't stay to fight, Shi Yan couldn't do anything. Now he could only leave them there and do the accounting later.

"Awesome boy!"

Yin Hui laughed, then flew out from the Silver Stone Fort. "I've made up my mind. I'll guide you to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard myself."

# Chapter 466: Second Sky of Sky Realm

---

Inside a coral reef, thousands of li away from the Silver Stone Fort...

The six people of Situ Jie's group were hiding in between the five-colored corallite. Their faces were illuminated with colorful lights, looking quite odd.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng had joined the battle together, and that damaged their Soul Consciousness significantly. They didn't take any advantage from Shi Yan but got hurt themselves, and finally, had to run away distressingly.

This was a deeply depressing attack.

Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng had a grimaced countenance as a light was flickering in their eyes. Their moods were down, and they kept sighing.

Cao Zhi Lan had no color on her face. Her complexion darkened, and her sparkling eyes had lost their shiny shade. She looked quite dreary and helpless, just like the state of her mind now.

She recognized that she couldn't understand Shi Yan completely.

How many years had passed?

Shi Yan, who was chased after and threatened in the Chasm Battlefield, had become such an intimidating character. This took just a short time that she didn't dare to accept.

In the Endless Sea, she was also a genius. Under the nourishment of the Cao Family, her cultivation speed was fast, as she had entered the Third Sky of Earth Realm even when she wasn't thirty years old yet. She would soon reach the Nirvana Realm.

Without Shi Yan as a reference, she would be happy and proud of her natural endowments.

But today, when compared with Shi Yan, she found out that her

progress wasn't even worth mentioning. When they had first met, she didn't put Shi Yan in her eyes. But now, it'd just been a few years, and she had to look up to him.

This sudden attack made her, the one who had boasted about herself as a talent, feel really small.

"Regret?"

Pan Zhe beamed a forced smile and reluctantly shook his head. "Previously, I knew this man wasn't someone we should look down on. But I still disdained him. How long it has been? I find that I don't know him at all. Within this one year, I don't really know how he has cultivated. No one could have expected that he has tamed a level eight demonic beast, and he also has such tremendous surging power."

Pan Zhe let out a deep sigh.

"I've regretted it. But what is it for? As things have come to this, as we've done it wrong, we should follow the wrong way to the end." Cao Zhi Lan couldn't deny her failure. Her pretty eyes had lost their spirit as she was speaking the bitter words. "He won't spare us. Even though he won't take revenge now, he will come for us sooner or later. Soon, we will meet him in the Endless Sea. Sigh, the Endless Sea's chaotic enough. If he comes back, no one knows what it will look like in the future."

"We're not afraid of him if he doesn't have the demonic beasts. But that beast can subdue us, and it has some method to break our Soul Consciousness. Sigh, it's hard to deal with him."

Zou Yue Feng also sighed. "Why can this boy from the Yang Family reach such imposing strength? Who can tell me what's happened?"

"Only he knows." Situ Jie's face darkened. "It seems we have to strengthen our forces if we want to deal with him. I think he's still somewhere undersea. We should call someone from the land to

join us and kill him. We can try Wu Xin, Gu Xiao, and Dongfang Jue..."

"I think we can only choose that way," said Zou Yue Feng begrudgingly.

"Yeah, I will send the message and call for them." Situ Jie mused, then spoke up in a low tone. "Certainly, Shi Yan would wander around this area. Wait until our assistance comes. We can then find him right away. With more people, we can absolutely kill him. If this kid is not eradicated, the Endless Sea will have no future. Even if it has a future, that future will belong to him!"

After he had said that, the group of Cao Zhi Lan and Zhong Li Dun discolored.

"Don't think that I'm merely talking about a dangerous sensation." Situ Jie snorted coldly. "I've seen him grow up with my own eyes. That year when he was on the Sun Island, he needed the guard from the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Clan to run away under my Soul Consciousness suppression. How long it has been? Now, my Soul Consciousness couldn't attack him, and it even bit me back! If we give him more time, he can become the peerless character of the Endless Sea. At that time, it will be impossible to kill him."

"Yeah. We should absolutely not give him more time!" Zhong Li Dun shouted with a cold face. "Summon the hotshots, and put this man to death!"

...

In front of the Silver Stone Fort...

The patriarch of the Silver Shark Clan Yin Hui laughed and flew towards Shi Yan from the Silver Stone Fort. Under the attentive looks of the warriors from the Sea Tribes, Shi Yan deliberately withdrew his mysterious giant sword.

His sense flickered, as he suddenly found a strange fluctuation

sent to him from the mysterious giant sword.

The mysterious giant sword had just guided him to make him release the deadly intent domain. As they were sinking into it, the intent domain of death covered them, which helped the mysterious giant sword affect Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng. Unexpectedly, these two Spirit Realm warriors had a disheartened psyche.

Under the effects of the deadly intent domain, the two Spirit Realm warriors had to run away distressingly, and didn't dare to parry the mystical giant sword.

Currently, when Shi Yan wanted to retrieve the giant sword, he realized that the destructive, deadly intent domain released by the sword was still there. It didn't fade away together with the two Spirit Realm warriors.

But what surprised him was the vehement life intent domain after the deadly intent domain had risen. Only he could sense this bustling life intent domain behind the destructive, deadly intent domain he had released.

The existence of this life intent domain seemed to enhance some sort of ability of the deadly intent domain. But he hadn't released the life intent domain. Did the giant sword do that? What was going on?

Being dazed for a while, he couldn't help but open his mind and sink into the mystical giant sword, as he wanted to see the mysteries more clearly. After his Soul Consciousness jumped in, he found a shape that surprised him even more.

Behind the life intent domain, there was the deadly aura; and behind this level, there existed another layer of life intent domain! The intent domains of death and life were blended inside the mysterious giant sword, just like a stair that had one step followed by another alternately. This uninterrupted sequence had created the strange reincarnation.

Death, life, and reincarnation. Death or destruction appeared to prepare for the new life being born, the appearance of the new living being. Death and life couldn't be separated. A living being would have the fate of dying, and dying had the meaning of being reborn.

As if it was to enlighten him with the wisdom, the truth that was related to death, life and reincarnation appeared in his mind like lightning all of a sudden.

His body was shaken, as he was stunned, and lightning was flashing in his eyes. Thoughts were interweaving at the speed of light in this mind, as he was acquiring the knowledge of the death and life intent domains.

All of a sudden, the aura of life and death took turns and emitted from his body. This phenomenon looked oddly incomparable.

Yin Hui arrived, but as he was about to say something, he was stunned.

The King of Demon Insects, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, and even the mystical giant sword were aiming for him. They seemed to warn him against something.

Looking at Shi Yan, Yin Hui frowned as he was sensing. Then, Yin Hui's face was brightened. He understood something.

This is the flash of realization! Good kid!

Yin Hui complimented the young man in his heart. But when he looked at the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm staring at him like tigers watching their prey, he couldn't help but take some steps back.

Cru also came out at this moment, standing behind him. He was also surprised, looking at Shi Yan. "Patriarch, is he..."

"Yes, he's comprehending some kind of intent domain. Just a fight and he could perceive the truth of some power... This is really inconceivable." Yin Hui confirmed his assumption and reminded

him, "Don't come close to him. That King of Demonic Insects is not easy to play with. That sword seems to have its own consciousness as well. Don't come close."

Cru's face changed, and nodded to indicate that he understood the matter.

"You should go, but don't leave the Silver Stone Fort." Yin Hui mused for a while, but he still couldn't ease his mind, shouting at the people of the Sea Tribes who were about to come there and check the situation.

Having heard Yin Hui's shout, they halted and observed from a far distance.

"How?" enquired Hai Luo with sweet and delicate voice.

"He's about to break through." The corner of Cru's mouth slightly moved, talking to her. "A mighty man among the men! I have never seen a young man with this natural endowment. Hai Luo, you shouldn't maintain close relationships with him. This boy has a great charisma. I'm afraid you would fall in love with him."

"Well, I think I like him already." Hai Luo smiled shyly. "He's much stronger than me and the other Sea Tribes members. Father, haven't you said that only a strong warrior could be my partner. I think he's able, isn't he?"

"No joking," Cru shook his head. "You should never involve with a man like that. Once you do, you will live in regret for the rest of your life. I think this kid will not be content with his lot. Our Silver Shark Clan can't mess up with such a fellow. His future enemies wouldn't be ordinary, either."

Yin Hui nodded. "If he survives the Endless Sea's event, I'm sure the future of the Endless Sea will belong to him."

Cru nodded in agreement.

After an unknown period of time, Shi Yan awoke from his comprehension of death and life realm.



Where water flowed, a canal would be formed. He didn't linger. After he had comprehended the truth, he had directly entered the Second Sky of Sky Realm!

The death and life intent domains were like a strange nutrient that were absorbed into his Sea of Consciousness and left a seal on his host soul. This made the host soul and the Sea of Consciousness sublimate together, which inspired his whole body.

The density and purity of his Profound Qi had soon reached the peak. With only one time of perceiving the truth, he could break through directly.

This fight helped him recognize that the life intent domain and the death intent domain couldn't be separated. It also made him realize that death and life had a coexistence relationship and that one could not live without the other.

With this new comprehension, he entered the new Realm, the Second Sky of Sky Realm.

After waking up, he sensed his body situation, and he found that the Profound Qi ancient tree had grown up even more. It now could continue to promote the Profound Qi and gather stronger power.

His mind flickered, and his body relaxed to detach the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame. He then retrieved the mysterious giant sword, the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm. Then, he looked at Yin Hui. "You've said that you wanted to take me to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard?"

"Yes," Yin Hui smiled, then praised him. "Congratulations! You've leaped up to another realm that fast. Kid, you're really out of the ordinary. I have to admit this."

"Haha," Shi Yan smiled. "Let's go. I really want to visit the Antiquity Lofty Dragon's Tomb. If you want to take me there, let's

go."

"No big deal."

## Chapter 467: Remaining might

---

After a fight, Shi Yan had entered the Second Sky of Sky Realm directly.

Through the fight with Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng, his confidence was boosted, as he knew that the two Spirit Realm warriors couldn't kill him. Thus, when he went with Yin Hui, he wasn't afraid of the other anymore. Yin Hui could be a decent match at Shi Yan's level, which could bring him to another height.

So, when he talked to Yin Hui, he didn't need to fret, and he could say anything he wanted without worrying that he would displease Yin Hui.

The reason why he chose to carry out the battle in front of the Silver Stone Fort was to show his competence to all the members of the Sea Tribes. This would make those people realize his real capacity that could help him counter any strong warriors from any races. He could even win.

The Yang Family was now different from the past, as their situation wasn't stable. He wanted to prove that he was strong enough to threaten the Sea Tribes. He wanted to make them realize that even if Yang Tian Emperor weren't there, as long as Shi Yan still stayed there, the Yang Family could always live in peace in the Barren City.

He wanted to make the people of the Sea Tribes who were disloyal be content with their lot. He believed that the details of this fight would be spread out through the whole seabed. At that time, Yang Zhuo in the Barren City would know that he was going to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard and that he could ease his mind.

"You don't need to take me there yourself."

Walking in the water, Shi Yan glared at Yin Hui walking next to

him. He frowned and said, "You are the patriarch of a clan; you must have many businesses to attend to. Why do you want to waste your time and come with me?"

"I also want to check the situation at the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard," said Yin Hui. "Our Silver Shark Clan is located in this sea area. I've been to that dragon's tomb, but I haven't had the guts to enter the area. Haha... It's hard to find someone who isn't afraid of death. Of course, I want to see what you can do there."

Shi Yan was surprised. "You've been there before? Didn't you say that no one could return alive?"

Yin Hui suddenly felt shamed. "I said I was watching from a distance. I didn't dare to go inside the tomb. Kid, are you ridiculing me intentionally?"

"No," Shi Yan smiled. "So, how is that place?"

"You're going there anyway, it's useless to answer that question. You'd better come and see yourself to have an accurate cognition." Yin Hui face became serious. He hesitated for a while before speaking up again, "Shi Yan, I think I should warn you. If possible, don't go there."

"Eh?"

"The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard is protected by some force of our Sea Tribes. Even our hotshots couldn't return alive on entering that area, let alone you kiddo." Yin Hui showed his sincere complexion. "Fella, your cultivation base is exquisite. Apparently, later on, you'll be the number one or two hotshot of the Endless Sea. Why should you risk your life this time?"

"If I didn't take risks, I wouldn't have broken through that fast." Shi Yan laughed. "As you can enter the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, I'm sure you've undergone deadly situations as well. If we don't have the guts to not be afraid of death, how can we break through continuously?"

"Forget it. It's alright if you don't want to take my advice." Yin Hui, of course, understood that his words weren't in vain. Every strong warrior would only perceive the realm comprehension through a deadly fight. Only if they were constantly near death would they recognize something they had never done in their typical life.

"Well, it's not sure that I would encounter dangers when I visit the ancient lofty dragon's tomb." Shi Yan laughed arrogantly.

"What?"

"Tell me. Do you think I look like an idiot?"

"No, you don't."

"Yeah, so you can be assured about that."

"You did go to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, right? I know you've been there. From your description, if a man has never been there, he can't give such clear and detailed description. What is inside the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist? As far as I've known, there are so many marvelous things in there... For instance, the Life Original Fluid?"

Shi Yan's face discolored as he was amazed. A strange light flashed in his eyes.

"Seems you know something about the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist?"

"Not me. Some precursors in my clan know something about the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist." Yin Hui contemplated, then spoke up again. "Our Silver Shark Clan lives under the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, and that Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist is in the East of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area. Yeah, among the Sea Tribes, our Silver Shark Clan is nearest to that place. Some precursors of our clan had been there. Most of them got lost. Some of them returned but couldn't tell the details inside the area. Only one precursor had met a human being in there, and hence, he knew something marvelous

related to that place, including the Life Original Fluid."

"You know the effects of the Life Original Fluid?" Shi Yan was stunned.

"It gives the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors a great chance to enter the True God Realm, reducing the possibility of failure and risks!" Yin Hui's eyes were brightened as he yelled, "I think any Spirit Realm warriors would never forget a special thing like the Life Original Fluid once they hear about it. If he got this thing, I think Nu Lang would directly seclude himself to cultivate and try to break through the True God Realm. Haha. Too bad this thing could be only directly seen, and not be wished for. Nu Lang knows that, but he doesn't dare to keep dreaming."

Shi Yan was moved.

"You've been in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist... Have you ever heard about this?" Yin Hui's eyes were as bright as the torch as he grinned, then said, "My precursor told us that the Life Original Fluid's somehow related to a level eight demonic beast. If I'm not wrong, that beast's a corpse-eating demonic insect, isn't it?"

Shi Yan's eyebrows slammed together. He finally knew the reason why Yin Hui wanted to take him to the ancient dragon's graveyard personally.

The Life Original Fluid!

To warriors at the Spirit Realm, if they knew about the Life Original Fluid, no one could press down their desire.

The Silver Shark Clan lived near the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. Many precursors of the Silver Shark Clan had come there, so they must know about the Life Original Fluid. Shi Yan had returned from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, and he even had the King of Demonic Insects.

When he connected the information, how could Yin Hui keep himself from overthinking?

"When I was in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, I had heard about the Life Original Fluid. However, the rumor I've known isn't related to the corpse-eating demonic insects." Shi Yan wore a calm face and said faintly. "As far as I am concerned, my demonic insect doesn't know about the Life Original Fluid. I think you are overthinking."

"Am I?" Yin Hui grinned. His eyes were as bright as a flame, gazing at Shi Yan. "Haha... Perhaps I'm overthinking. I thought you had the Life Original Fluid. Yeah. If you do have the Life Original Fluid, let alone me, even Nu Lang will be willing to do any kind of business with you. To Nu Lang, a drop of the Life Original Fluid is more precious than a sea area in the Endless Sea."

Shi Yan frowned, smiled, but didn't comment anything.

"If I can have a drop of the Life Original Fluid, I, Yin Hui can also ignore the principles."

"Unfortunately, I don't have it. You shouldn't think about it much."

"Oh, that's too bad."

...

Barren City.

From the Sea Tribes members, Yang Zhuo got to know about the big fight that happened at the Silver Stone Fort. Finally, he could confirm that Shi Yan wanted to visit the Antiquity Lofty Dragon's tomb.

"Father, did Shi Yan really hurt Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie? He even made them flee with difficulty? Did it really happen?" asked Yang Mu excitedly. The faces of some juniors in the Yang Family reddened as if they were the main character in that fight.

"Yeah. People from the Sea Tribes said so. Many members of the Sea Tribes at the Silver Stone Fort had witnessed that battle. Afterward, many Sea Tribes members here are staying content

with their lot. They even treat us with more respect."

"That kid Shi Yan did something incredible. Haha... I always knew that he wouldn't be law-abiding. You see, just a couple days and he had stirred up the Silver Stone Fort. Many sea clans have seen him," laughed Yang Mu.

"Don't be happy that early. He's really dumb this time as he wants to visit the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard."

"I think he would be alright." The beautiful eyes of Li Feng glistened. "Don't know why, but I can sense the infinite potential in him. If someone else goes to the dragon's tomb, I'm sure he will die. But if it's Shi Yan, I think the result will be different."

"I think so too," smiled Yang Xue.

The young generation of the Yang Family had an extreme blind trust on Shi Yan after they had known about the surprises Shi Yan had brought.

"You guys don't really know the immensity of earth and firmament," Yang Zhuo beamed a forced smile.

...

Under the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, inside the colorful coral reef...

Four silhouettes slowly descended next to Situ Jie, all wearing serious faces.

"Aunt Xiang," Cao Zhi Lan gracefully called out. "You've arrived."

After they received the news of the battle, Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven, the Emperor of Earth and Gu Xiao immediately left aside the dispute they had in the Endless Sea to work together, and came to the seabed.

"You have guys suffered the hardship due to him, haven't you?" asked Gu Xiao from the group of six with a cold and strict face.

"Is he that dangerous?" Gu Xiao looked at Situ Jie, then Qing



Ming, the Queen of Heaven, and the Emperor of Earth. He frowned, "Do you really need to mobilize our force?"

"If we don't exterminate him this time, we will not have any chance later." Situ Jie shook his head and sighed. "That brat isn't afraid of Soul Consciousness intrusions. At present, he's at the Sky Realm, but I don't know what kind of force he has borrowed, as he could exude the aura that wasn't less intimidating like a Second Sky of Spirit Realm warrior. Besides, he has a level eight demonic beast and a metal class beast. They're really savage."

"It's been just a year, and he's made such progress?" Queen of Heaven Fan Xiangyun gave a forced smile. "We couldn't withstand him in the battle that year. Now, he's even more dangerous. It's tough this time."

"If not, we wouldn't need to call you here," sighed Zou Yue Feng.

"However, it's different this time. With the four of you, we will have the absolute triumph." Situ Jie darkened his face and said maliciously, "This time, he must die."

## Chapter 468: Awaken

---

Shi Yan and Yin Hui went straight to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. Along the way, they met some high-level beasts, but they somehow had some intelligence as they proactively avoided Yin Hui. Even though Yin Hui had a cultivation base of the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, he didn't intend to release his strong aura that much. However, it was enough to scare the demonic beasts away.

The path they were taking was smooth and without any fear or danger.

Eventually, on the third day, the two of them reached a forbidden area which had a lot of skeletons of antiquity demonic beasts.

At first glance, they were all large-sized white skeletons. Each beast skeleton was as translucent as jade, sparkling with strange rays on the seabed. It gave people a feeling of full energy.

Since they had reached this area, Yin Hui became more careful. He watched here and there at each step they took. Along the way, he had tried to probe the stories related to the Life Original Fluid, but Shi Yan had dodged them all.

No matter it was Yin Hui or the other Spirit Realm warriors who knew about the Life Original Fluid, they would undoubtedly develop the greedy desire in their hearts.

Shi Yan wasn't an idiot.

If he told them that he did have the Life Original Fluid, Nu Lang would go crazy. Even if Nu Lang was well known for his moral conduct, he was still a member of the Sea Tribes.

Before he could have the ability to protect the Life Original Fluid, if he disclosed it, Nu Lang would use force to snatch it from him. Shi Yan wasn't confident in taking the upper hand against the peerless warrior of the Sea Tribes.

Thus, keeping it on the low was necessary at this time.

"The area ahead of us has chaotic energies; keep walking forward, it's the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard." Yin Hui ceased walking and frowned at him. "I can accompany you only to this area. I don't want to die in vain. At last, I want to advise you this thing. If you don't want to die, you'd better stop here."

"Goodbye."

Shi Yan smiled, but he didn't look worried at all. "If I can return alive, I will visit you at the Silver Shark Clan. At that time, perhaps we can do some real business."

"What business?" Yin Hui was surprised.

"The one you are interested in." Shi Yan contemplated, then swayed his hand. "I have to go. Thanks for guiding me here."

"Last question. You didn't get the Life Original Fluid in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, did you?" Yin Hui wore a solemn face. "Perhaps you will disappear from this world after this moment. Could you tell me the truth?"

He still stuck to this topic.

"When I come back safely, we will discuss it." Shi Yan smiled, then entered the area. Under the chaotic energies, he still walked calmly forward.

Yin Hui's eyes brightened.

He stood at his spot, looking at Shi Yan disappearing. His countenance was uncertain. Long afterward, he sighed and muttered, "If you can come back alive, perhaps we should really talk. I hope you fella have plenty of luck, and that you could turn danger into good luck. The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard has buried so many talents of the Sea Tribes. If you can survive, it means you can do something the precursors of the Sea Tribes couldn't. It's enough for all strong warriors of the Sea Tribes to look at you with respect."

Of course, Shi Yan couldn't hear what Yin Hui said.

After he had intruded the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard, the Blood Vein Ring started to sparkle, unceasingly releasing an immense, misty, blood halo.

The white skeletons of the beasts were so many that it was beyond people's imagination. At first glance, the whole area was covered with white bones. With a closer look, Shi Yan found out many smaller skeletons among the giant beast skeletons. Those skeletons had different shapes with the signature of the Sea Tribes.

Apparently, what Yin Hui and the other had told him was true. Thousands of years had gone by, and this ancient dragon graveyard had buried so many strong warriors of the Sea Tribes.

Phosphorescent dots flew out from inside the skeletons from time to time. They were floating in the water, gazing at people like the eyes of demons. This caused people anxiety, and it could even affect the Sea of Consciousness somehow.

The surging, cold and evil energies permeated the area. These kinds of energies were really massive. They created numerous vortexes that naked eyes couldn't see. If someone carelessly got in one of the vortexes, they would be devoured, leaving nothing behind.

The scary rumors about this place grew in his mind. He was a little bit anxious, as his moves become more careful.

Unexpectedly, these energies with intimidating attributes were moving chaotically around him, but they didn't storm over. When these scary energies came near him and contacted the halo from the Blood Vein Ring, they would scatter proactively.

The Blood Vein Ring was like a life-protecting amulet. As it was glittering, it could prevent all kinds of energy attacks which could even kill God Realm warriors. Along the way, he unexpectedly didn't encounter any danger.

The forbidden place that discolored people was so peaceful to him that he couldn't believe his eyes.

Was the Blood Vein Ring genuinely related to this forbidden place?

Shi Yan's eyes brightened, and his confidence boosted up.

Without the Blood Vein Ring, he couldn't know neither of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard nor the Bloodthirsty's Entourage of eight—Lao Luo's Dark Body. If the Blood Vein Ring had guided him here, evidently, he needed not be worried that he would fall into dangerous situations.

At this moment, he truly could appreciate the mystery of the Blood Vein Ring.

The Blood Vein Ring was releasing a blood-like halo that could prevent all intrusions of evil forces in the lofty dragon's tomb. Along the way, all kinds of energies in the forbidden place had to disperse around him and couldn't attach to his body.

He was gliding among all sorts of white skeletons. As he didn't encounter any risks, he directly entered the marvel he had never seen before.

The three-hundred-meter skeleton of the lofty dragon.

The skeleton was snow-white, with a twinkling brilliance. The white frame of the lofty dragon stayed inside the house made of demonic beasts' skeletons. Right under the Yellow Dragon skeleton lay a giant black crystal coffin. The coffin lid was covered with all kinds of peculiar patterns, which looked pretty similar to the patterns on the Blood Vein Ring. It seemed like they were moving slowly.

An old, desolate, rude, and unreasonable aura vehemently burst out from the black coffin that shook people. The blood halo emitting from the Blood Vein Ring suddenly became fiercer, releasing a scarlet light beaming over the black coffin.

The mysterious patterns on the coffin seemed like they were revived, moving faster on the coffin. A dark, evil energy shot out from there.

BANG!

The lid of the coffin exploded into pieces.

A black iron puppet that was around three meters tall sat up in the coffin. This puppet was covered in iron armor, which seemed to grow directly on its body, connected perfectly without any gaps or slits.

This puppet wore an ink-black ferocious mask that exposed only its swarthy, empty pupils. The color of its pupils was vague, and Shi Yan didn't know what could have happened to them.

Bang bang! Bang bang!

A strong heartbeat reverberated from the puppet. It seemed like it had an extremely exuberant heart that could transport the world-shaking dark energy for the puppet's body.

The puppet got up from the coffin, looking at the Blood Vein Ring.

A scarlet beam shot out from the Blood Vein Ring, shining directly onto the pupils of the puppet. The black pupils of the puppet gradually turned dark red, and it seemed like there was a drop of blood inside each of its pupils, which was really terrifying.

A strange soul fluctuation was generated from the scarlet light, pouring into the puppet. Deep inside the puppet's pupils, an illusion of the immense blood sea with countless skeletons of many clans could be seen.

Corpse laid everywhere, piling up like mountains. Blood gushing out from those corpses had generated all sorts of sinister patterns. It was like some soul ritual had been performed. Seemed like the red beams from the Blood Vein Ring had activated this antiquity Demogorgon.

The puppet in the coffin received the mysterious scarlet light from the Blood Vein Ring in silence. Seemed like it was about to be wakened up from some ancient, intimidating place, and brought back to this world.

A black light started to shoot out from the puppet. This dark light was filled with a terrorizing, destructive aura. The meaning of this puppet's existence somehow was to destroy everything in this world, bringing this world into the endless darkness.

Shi Yan felt suffocated standing in front of that puppet and sensing the dark, devastating aura from it. It felt like a ten-thousand meters tall castle suddenly pressed down on his heart, which made him feel out of breath.

He had never received this kind of a pressure from any strong warrior. Even when he was facing Devil Emperor Chi Yan, he hadn't experienced such strenuous pressure.

How terrifying this existence was!

Shi Yan's face changed. Looking at that puppet, he wondered if his decision of entering the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard this time was good or bad.

He came and used his Blood Vein Ring to wake up a black puppet which had the dark and destructive aura. The surging energy from this puppet was truly earth-shaking. This snatched his confidence away.

If this man weren't controlled, and he could swagger around the seabed and on land as he pleased, it would be unknown how many warriors undersea and on land would have to suffer, along with the innocent civilians.

This formidable existence had the power to destroy the entire Endless Sea!

Shi Yan wore a cold face, gazing attentively on that puppet. He didn't dare to distract his mind, as he was afraid that this puppet

would make any strange moves.

Bloodthirsty's Entourage of Eight - Lao Luo's Dark Body!

Was the puppet that guy?

Or was it just a clone?

Lao Luo was just one of the Bloodthirsty's Entourage of Eight. If so, how tremendous was the former owner of the Blood Vein Ring?

The God King?

Regret started to swell up in Shi Yan, as he thought that he had made a wrong decision this time.

Numerous beams of scarlet light radiated from the Blood Vein Ring, and all of them fell into the pupils of Lao Luo's Dark Body. The eyes of the puppet gradually become darker, just like the two dark suns that could absorb all light.

Eventually, the light from the Blood Vein Ring ceased.

A Soul Conscious Seal shot out from the Blood Vein Ring, darting to the host soul in his Sea of Consciousness.

The Imperial Soul Imprint.



# Chapter 469: The War Devil

---

That was an imprint that controlled spirits!

This imprint had reached an agreement with Lao Luo's body. When Shi Yan let his mind sink into the imprint, he found that he could control that black iron puppet.

It was a marvelous sense he couldn't describe. As soon as his thought sent a message to the Imperial Soul Imprint, this unidentified black iron puppet would do as he asked.

His mind flickered, and the black iron puppet walked toward him. A malicious aura exuded from the puppet that sent shivers down Shi Yan's spine.

Under this tremendous pressure, he had the tense feeling he had never had before. But his Blood Vein Ring had the power to control this Lao Luo's Dark Body.

Shi Yan relaxed his tense nerves and started to study the soul imprint in his host soul, letting his mind sink into it and send out messages.

As expected, the black iron puppet was changing its positions unceasingly according to his wishes. What he thought, the puppet would implement.

His eyes suddenly brightened.

As his messages were being sent along, the black iron puppet was swiftly gliding inside the skeleton of the lofty dragon.

"War Devil!"

The Ice Cold Flame sent him its thought from inside the Blood Vein Ring. It seemed to be frightened.

"Eh?"

Shi Yan was surprised, but he reacted immediately. "You know the origin of this fellow?"

"The fighting puppet was forged by warriors of the Antiquity Era. It has the pure fighting will and can break even the hardest defense!" The information the Ice Cold Flame gave him was exciting. "Where did you get him? This is absolutely the fighting puppet made by warriors in ancient times. He's called War Devil. Only warriors in that era knew how to refine War Devils. The aura on this War Devil is extraordinarily vicious. I think it has at least the power of Peak Spirit Realm."

"So, what are the War Devils?"

"War Devils are fighting puppets that were born for fighting. High-level War Devils can have the fighting imprint of their masters. That's how it could have its master's divine abilities. To refine a War Devil, it needs hundreds or even thousand years together with the consumption of endless resources of earth and firmament. It has to absorb the special energies from heaven and earth to be formed gradually."

Seemed like the Ice Cold Flame did know about this puppet, as it hurried to explain Shi Yan. "As far as I've known, in that era, each War Devil was very formidable. It could be used as a clone of its master with the master's Divine Soul Imprint, and its effects were huge."

"War Devils from the antiquity time." Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

Perhaps the previous owner of the Blood Vein Ring was a strong warrior in the ancient time? Or it was even older than the antiquity, the time the first warriors ever appeared?

Suddenly, he was dazed.

He had never thought that the origin of the Blood Vein Ring was beyond his imagination.

The Antiquity was the dawn of the warriors, which had the strongest warrior in the legends. They said that there were some peerless warriors, whose powers even surpassed the God King

limit. They had intimidating powers, and their bodies could leave the Grace Mainland to travel the vast celestial area.

If the Blood Vein Ring came from that era, its previous owner must be an earth-shaking warrior.

Why did he die? Why did the Blood Vein Ring appear in that worn out cave? Why had he appeared in that cave from another world by chance?

Did that antiquity warrior know how to switch time and space to bring people from another era to this world? As he could use the heaven and earth that much, what kind of fantastic level had he reached?

He was totally dumbstruck.

At this moment, he suddenly realized it wasn't coincidental that he had appeared in that cave. Perhaps, all the key factors stayed in the Blood Vein Ring.

"Warriors at that time could understand all kinds of power in the heaven and earth, and various other mysterious meanings. All the current martial techniques, soul techniques, or martial spirits are inherited from warriors of that era. It's the era of the origin of warriors, the root of warriors."

The Ice Cold Flame told Shi Yan all it knew.

Shi Yan became more frightened as he listened to the flame's description.

According to the Ice Cold Flame, the antiquity was the peak era of the warriors. Compared to them, the present warriors in this world were as small as ants that they could kill within a second.

"This War Devil fighting puppet was born in that time. It can penetrate all sorts of hardest defenses. If you can control it, there will be no one in the Endless Sea that can subdue you."

Shi Yan couldn't help but get stirred up.

The trip to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard was smoother than he had expected.

Since he had heard many terrible rumors about the lofty dragon's tomb, he was anxious when he entered the place, and he even thought that he had to risk his life to see the lofty dragon's skeleton. He wasn't so sure he could find that coffin.

It was unexpected that with the Blood Vein Ring's guidance, he hadn't experienced any terrifying adventure. It was like he was taking a stroll to the center of the Lofty Dragon Graveyard. Now, he had found the dragon's skeleton and this black iron puppet. Everything was so smooth that he couldn't believe his own eyes.

It hadn't even been a full day, and he had what he wanted. This harvest made him laugh with satisfaction.

All thanks to the Blood Vein Ring.

The mystical treasure he got when he had just come to the Grace Mainland did have such a strange power, and its profile was so amazing. Moreover, it could wake up the War Devil fabricated by Lao Luo.

War Devil.

Shi Yan curled his lips, looking at the puppet called War Devil, and couldn't help but feel lucky.

He was lucky that he got the Blood Vein Ring. After running around the Lofty Dragon Graveyard one round, he found that the chaotic energies here were silently transmitted into the War Devil puppet.

All sorts of energies existing in the dragon's tomb had been attracted by the War Devil, and they were storming over, disappearing into the puppet's body. War Devil took them in all. However, its aura wasn't increasing, but slowly retreating into its body.

From the imprint in his host soul, Shi Yan knew that the dark

energy in the War Devil's heart had been increasing fast. But the War Devil was as if it were a profound warrior who knew how to hide his intimidating aura. The imposing pressure was slowly gone.

Shi Yan wasn't hurried, waiting for the War Devil to absorb the energy right inside the lofty dragon's skeleton.

Outside the graveyard.

Yin Hui frowned waiting for him. All of a sudden, he recognized that the dense, chaotic energies had been diluted.

This phenomenon surprised Yin Hui a lot. Light flashed across his eyes as he was staring at that area.

"Why's that happening?" Yin Hui was dumbfounded for half of a day. He shook his head then muttered disbelievingly. "It's just been two days... Has that kid met something strange in there? Why did the chaotic energy start to change not long after he entered the place? Does he know the subtle mysteries of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard?" Yin Hui was frightened.

"Hey? Something's strange over there!" Gu Xiao's eyes flared up while searching for his target in the seawater.

He pointed to the Lofty Dragon Graveyard's general direction. He furrowed his eyebrows then asked the others. "Do you know what's the place over there? Is that the Silver Shark Clan's territory? Why does it have such a tremendous surging energy like that?"

Situ Jie shook his head, hesitated for a while and then his face discolored all of a sudden. "That's the Lofty Dragon Graveyard!"

"Lofty Dragon Graveyard?" Gu Xiao was surprised as he shook his head, asking puzzlingly. "What's that?"

"The most mysterious forbidden area undersea!" Situ Jie was the consecrator of the Martial Spirit Palace in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, and had visited the seabed before. He knew there was a mysterious place like that undersea, which all the Sea Tribes

members considered the forbidden area, and never dared to intrude.

Situ Jie simply described all kinds of rumors about the Lofty Dragon's forbidden place. The warriors of the Endless Sea had their faces discolored after they listened to him.

"The Sea Tribes' forbidden place."

Cao Zhi Lan mused for a while before speaking up. "Perhaps it isn't related to Shi Yan. He isn't stupid to enter that area. According to you, even the God Realm warriors of the Sea Tribes couldn't escape death if they came to that area. Would he dare to risk his life?"

"Who knows?" Situ Jie was hesitant for a moment before giving his suggestion. "Searching in vain isn't a good solution. If that lofty dragon's graveyard has something anomalous, perhaps it will be related to the moves of the Sea Tribes. We aren't afraid to go there and check it out."

"Alright."

Everybody nodded in agreement.

"Let's go."

Soon, the warriors from the Endless Sea had arrived at the edge of the Lofty Dragon's forbidden place, and met Yin Hui there.

"Silver Shark Clan's patriarch!"

Zou Yue Feng discolored, as he instinctively frowned when he thought they had come to the right place. It was certain that warriors of the Sea Tribes were doing something they didn't want the others to know here.

Yin Hui was also surprised. He shook his head then looked at the other with an odd face. "I didn't expect that you guys could come here. Yeah, good fortune. But it's useless even if you can come here. Shi Yan's in the lofty dragon's tomb. If you aren't afraid of

death, you can go there to find him."

"What!"

Cao Zhi Lan shouted. She was astonished that they had found Shi Yan's whereabouts.

"Is he really there?" Situ Jie was excited, grinning. "Seems like God does want that brat to die. Let's see if he can leave this place alive!"

"If he does come out, what's good for you if you're waiting for him here?" Yin Hui wanted to stir up the mess. "He's been there for almost three days. Although I don't know what's going on there, I'm sure the change in the area related to him. If you want to kill him, just get in there directly."

"Ha ha, we can wait outside."

Zhong Li Dun smiled. Of course, he wouldn't fall into the other's trap. Being the future leader of the Martial Spirit Palace, he knew how intimidating the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard was. Apparently, he wouldn't take risks.

"Well then, just take your time."

# Chapter 470: Come out!

---

Outside the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard, six Spirit Realm warriors, including Situ Jie, Qing Ming, and the four Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Cang Lan and Zhong Li Dun, were waiting for something in silence.

Yin Hui was standing ten meters away from those ten people. He was calm, and didn't show any trace of fear.

This place was undersea, the territory of the Silver Shark Clan; and Yin Hui had a cultivation base of the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, which was higher than the others. If he wanted to run away, even the six people of Situ Jie's group couldn't hold him back.

Since his realm was higher than theirs, Yin Hui was relaxed, watching over this group of warriors.

"That kid has entered the lofty dragon graveyard. Perhaps, we don't need..." Situ Jie coldly looked in the direction of the graveyard. "Thousands of years have passed by, and numerous hotshots of the Sea Tribes had intruded the place, but no one could come out alive. Although that kid has good fortune, I don't think he could break this record."

Zhong Li Dun nodded in agreement.

As the members of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, these two had heard about the intimidation of the lofty dragon's tomb. They knew many rumors about the area, so as they thought that Shi Yan couldn't come back alive.

"If it were someone else, we wouldn't need to wait," Cao Zhi Lan frowned, talking with a solemn tone. "But Shi Yan isn't a somebody. I've known him for several years, and he has brought me many strange feelings. He has many factors different from the others. If not, he couldn't progress that fast. I think he even has



the ability to deal with you guys."

"I also think that he can come back alive." Pan Zhe wore a bitter smile. "Don't know why, but I always feel Shi Yan is different from the others. Things they couldn't do, he may fulfill."

"You two are the strong young warriors of the Endless Sea. Have you been scared by Shi Yan that much? I think you two have a blind admiration for that brat!" Zhong Li Dun snorted and then said with morose face. "Even if he's strong, will he be more mighty than the precursor of the Sea Tribes? I don't actually know what kind of special power he could have to survive and come back from the Lofty Dragon's tomb."

"If he didn't have the confidence, he would not enter the place." Cao Zhi Lan threw him a glance and said with her stiff face and impolite tone. "Forgive me if I'm too frank, but Shi Yan has many dangerous skills that you can't even imagine. Yeah, you were the top warrior of the combat list, the most prominent young warrior of Endless Sea. But Shi Yan's existence has broken your title. No matter you accept the fact or not, he's stronger than you." Zhong Li Dun's grimaced. Light flashed in his eyes as he couldn't accept her saying.

"I admit that I have looked down on him," Cao Zhi Lan continued indifferently. "But I don't disdain you. I can say clearly that you, Zhong Li Dun, are too weak compared to Shi Yan! Zhong Li Dun, if you are able, why do you need many seniors accompanying you to catch Shi Yan? I think, if Shi Yan wants to kill you, he needs only one second."

Zhong Li Dun's eyes were cold, his face getting more and more malicious.

"Alright," Situ Jie furrowed his brows. "Shi Yan is really dangerous. Otherwise, we wouldn't need to gather many people here to catch him. Anyway, don't be dispirited. No matter how powerful he is, he has to die this time. It's been many years since

the Endless Sea has had some dazzling stars. But, many of the ones that appeared had been shut off before they could grow up. Shi Yan's about to fall into the same track."

"I hope so." Cao Zhi Lan shook her head then let out a slight sigh. Her heart was filled with resentment.

What made her regret the most was her narrow vision. If she had believed Shi Yan and tied the Cao Family and Shi Yan together, the current situation would have been different from now.

She was the proudest and most arrogant among the young generations of the Cao Family. She had pride, but that pride had been torn apart after she got to know Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's appearance reminded her that there was someone in the Endless Sea who could subdue her in many aspects. She had been dissatisfied, and perhaps she didn't want to admit it. So, after she had known about the pagans and the decline of the Yang Family, she put down her emotional approval and decided to give up on Shi Yan, turning her back on the Yangs.

It turned out that her decision was wrong.

Those people were still waiting in ambush outside the dragon's graveyard.

Five days passed by like a flash.

All kinds of chaotic energies inside the graveyard had disappeared completely. As they were Spirit Realm warriors, they all recognized that scary change and were discretely frightened.

Especially Yin Hui.

He had seen with his own eyes that two days after Shi Yan had entered the place, those kinds of evil and peculiar energies wandering for hundreds of years inside the lofty dragon's tomb had been changed. In just a short period, they were all gone.

This phenomenon had never happened before.

He had been living for so many years undersea, but he had never heard about this strange phenomenon in the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. Apparently, it was related to Shi Yan.

Anticipation gradually grew in him.

At first, he hadn't expected anything. But now, something strange had happened inside the graveyard, which was unprecedented for thousands of years. Perhaps, Shi Yan could really return alive.

Another day had gone by.

A dark air current pervaded in the water, drifting quickly while emitting blisters everywhere. There was some kind of a peculiar power inside those blisters.

In just a blink of an eye, several thousands of blisters appeared, then slowly gathered into a giant chunk of blister. However, that blister then disappeared into thin air as if some creature had devoured it.

A long while later, a silhouette emerged from the graveyard, calmly walking towards this direction. Behind him walked a three-meter-tall black iron puppet.

The hefty-built puppet was moving agilely, giving people a strange illusion of willow catkin.

One man and one black iron puppet were walking like that towards the other people standing in front of the tomb.

Yin Hui's eyes brightened up.

The six Spirit Realm warriors suddenly put on cold faces, as divine light shot out from their eyes, shining on Shi Yan.

"He has returned..." Yin Hui muttered with a complicated expression. He was dumbfounded for a while before shifting his look on Situ Jie's group of six, frowning as he was considering how to deal with the upcoming big fight.

"He's unexpectedly coming out from the Lofty Dragon Graveyard." Zhong Li Dun's face was grimaced. His eyes were as sharp as a saber, sneering all of a sudden. "But his end is still going to be death."

The young man strolled over, not intending to dodge the others. He came in front of them and then curled his lips. "Such a mighty formation."

"Well, it's not been even ten days, and you can already come back from the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard." Yin Hui beamed a forced smile. "I admit that I always looked down on you. But I can't imagine you could fulfill what the hotshots of the Sea Tribes couldn't do. Shi Yan, I have found that you have infinite potential."

Shi Yan smiled but didn't say anything.

"Yeah, I think you can be as stable as Mount Tai under the siege of those six Spirit Realm warriors." Yin Hui's face became solemn. All of a sudden, a white beam shot out from his eyes, entering Shi Yan's soul. At the same time, a message was transmitted to Shi Yan. "If you need help, you only need to nod, and I will bring you out of the siege of those six people."

Yin Hui's realm was much higher than Situ Jie and his men. This message sent by his Soul Consciousness directly contacted with Shi Yan's soul and the others couldn't hear it.

Under Yin Hui's bright eyes, Shi Yan smiled then shook his head, indicating he didn't need help. Yin Hui was both amazed and suspicious. He didn't know why Shi Yan had such pride to deny his offer.

This kid had some new method to flee away, perhaps?

The more he thought about it, the more curious Yin Hui was. He stayed aside to observe what miracle method Shi Yan had. He didn't dare to think that Shi Yan could kill those six Spirit Realm

warriors.

Although they were just at the First Sky of Spirit Realm, if the six of them joined hands, even Yin Hui would find it hard to encounter.

"Situ Jie, Zou Yue Feng, Gu Xiao, Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven, and the Emperor of Earth...", Shi Yan looked at them and called out their names. He nodded and smiled, "Good. Those who should have come, have come. Seems like you all are in a hurry to kill me. Yeah, not bad... Not bad at all. It saves me from more troubles."

"Shi Yan." The beautiful eyes of Cao Zhi Lan were sad, as she spoke up with a soft voice. "If you give up willingly and self-destroy your cultivation base, I... I can save your life."

"Miss Cao!"

Qing Ming, Situ Jie, Gu Xiao and Zhong Li Dun shouted before she could finish her talk. Their faces changed. "No doubt he has to die! Absolutely no chance for him to escape death! I think we've talked about this very clearly!"

Cao Zhi Lan frowned. "Do we really have to kill him? If he isn't a threat to us, we can spare his life."

"Do not raise your words again!" Situ Jie's voice was strong. "He has to die! No one can change this!"

The group of Qing Ming also nodded seriously.

Cao Zhi Lan sighed, frowned and shut her mouth.

"Haha... Seems like you really think that I have to die this time, eh?" Shi Yan's mouth cracked into a smile. He seemed to not be in a hurry at all. "With only four Spirit Realm warriors and you're so confident that you expect me to die even before we start our fight. Do you really have such confidence?"

"Do you think there would be some surprises? Zhong Li Dun

smiled and ridiculed.

"I think... yes," Shi Yan smiled. "A huge surprise... Perhaps, in the end, the ones who would have to run for their lives will be you guys, and not me."

His dark and cold eyes gazed at Zhong Li Dun, just like an ice sword taken out of its scabbard, diffusing thick murderous intent.

# Chapter 471: Rip in half!

---

After Lao Luo's Dark Body had absorbed the chaotic energies inside the lofty dragon's tomb, it could hide its aura, completely concealing its crazy, ominous and imposing aura.

Thus, even Situ Jie's group only saw a black iron puppet behind Shi Yan. They didn't pay attention to it because the black puppet didn't emit any unusual aura. They thought that this black puppet was just a regular one, so they didn't lay their eyes on it.

Only Yin Hui, who was at the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, plus had seen Shi Yan go there alone, could confirm that this black iron puppet was from the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard. He then kept an eye on this War Devil black iron puppet.

The Soul Consciousness of the Second Sky of Spirit Realm warrior was released invisibly to peep on the mysterious features of the War Devil.

However, as soon as his Soul Consciousness got there, it was as if it had fallen into the vast sea, echoing nothing at all. It was like his Soul Consciousness had been drawn into a black hole.

The connection between him and the Soul Consciousness was also cut off, and he couldn't track it back.

Yin Hui's countenance changed quietly, as his mind was struck and tense.

Even Nu Lang, who was at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, couldn't devour his Soul Consciousness while leaving no trace like that.

What was that fearful black iron puppet?

Yin Hui was scared. He vaguely got something when eyeing Shi Yan.

The anomalous event that happened in the lofty dragon's

graveyard was obviously related to this black iron puppet. Perhaps, what caused it was this puppet.

The more Yin Hui thought about the matter, the more frightened he became when he looked at Shi Yan and the black iron puppet. Light flickered in his eyes as his heart was dreading.

One should definitely not provoke this kid!

Yin Hui had made up his mind that no matter what happened, he would not do anything that irritated Shi Yan. At this moment, he knew his finding would change the future situation of the Endless Sea.

Shi Yan himself was scary enough. Now, from the lofty dragon's tomb, he got a black iron puppet, which was in defiance of the natural order. In the Endless Sea, who could go against him?

Yin Hui was frightened inside. He instinctively took several steps back, held up his hand and said, "No matter what you guys want to do, I'm not going to interfere your business. Anyway, I want to make it clear that I'm just an observer. If you guys engage in a fight, don't count me in."

Shi Yan wore a contemplating face before bursting out in laughter. He knew this cunning old folk had sensed something.

"Why do you need to waste more time?" Situ Jie's countenance was calm. He looked at Gu Xiao, Qing Ming and grinned. "You've been waiting for so long. Now, he's here in front of you guys. We will get it done once and for all, so would we still have to bear the threat from this brat?"

"When he dies, we can focus on dealing with the Dark Dwellers and Demon Dwellers," said Zhong Li Dun with a cold smile.

"You will die first. Don't know why I always feel irritated seeing you." Shi Yan shook his head and sneered. "Don't appreciate yourself too high. In the Endless Sea, you are not the new star. In the Grace Mainland, you're nothing. There are so many young



people of the Divine Great Land who have reached the Sky Realm. Also, there are some who are in defiance of the natural order as they have reached the peak of the Sky Realm. Compared to them, you, Zhong Li Dun, you are nothing."

His words had shaken everybody.

"You've been to the Divine Great Land?" Pan Zhe was astounded.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan explained patiently. "Not yet. Wait until the things in the Endless Sea's over, I'll go there to search for the ultimate mystery of martial arts. Anyway, I've been to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. I got to know many young fellows of the Divine Great Land. Every single one of them is much stronger than Zhong Li Dun. Haha, and, they aren't the shining stars of the Divine Great Land. I'm telling you, don't be the frog hiding under the coconut shell and think that the Endless Sea is the best place. In their eyes, the Endless Sea's just a place of barbarians. We don't even have a single True God Realm warrior. Always staying in such a place, how pathetic we are!"

All the warriors, including Yin Hui, discolored.

"Forget it. I'm not going to waste my time with you guys." He smiled, waved his hand while pointing at Zhong Li Dun. "Start with him. Kill anyone you can. Never mind if they run away. They'll die sooner or later. Who dares to linger, kill 'em all."

Zhong Li Dun was shaken, his face dumbfounded.

Situ Jie's group were bewildered, not knowing to whom Shi Yan was talking.

But right after that, they knew to whom Shi Yan had assigned these tasks.

The three-meter-tall black iron puppet War Devil deliberately walked out from behind him, strolling towards Zhong Li Dun. It was slow at first, but its pace was getting faster and faster after each step. Ultimately, the War Devil turned into a black

thunderbolt and shot toward Zhong Li Dun.

Its two eyes were like two dark suns that gazed at Zhong Li Dun. An evil, vicious energy that could drown people's minds into endless darkness was suddenly released.

When Zhong Li Dun met the War Devil's eyes, he was stunned, blankly standing at his spot.

Crack!

The War Devil flew over and stomped on the top of Zhong Li Dun's head. People then heard the sound of cracking bones.

Zhong Li Dun was turned into a pulp of flesh after just one strike.

Situ Jie could only watch the scene of Zhong Li Dun getting killed, and didn't have enough time to help. On the contrary, he had to urge all the strength of his Soul Consciousness to resist the intimidating soul energy intruding.

He suddenly found himself dragged into a world of endless darkness.

No beam of light could be seen. His Soul Consciousness sank as it met the death and destructive Intent Domain there, just like he was a dead man entering a strange, eccentric space.

An earth-shattering, dark aura expanded from the War Devil, which had just killed Zhong Li Dun. This malicious aura seemed to want to destroy the whole world, enveloping the entire seabed of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area.

At this moment, all Spirit Realm warriors were dumbfounded as fear filled their faces.

Even the two great warriors above the Vault of Heaven Sea Area noticed this torrential ominous source of evil. They hurriedly got out of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, plunging into the sea with their fastest pace.

At the same time, inside the extinct volcanoes of the Black Flood

Dragon Clan, Nu Lang was talking with the three Spirit Realm warriors. He suddenly got pale-faced as he shouted, "Such a strong, evil force."

"Patriarch, what's going on?"

"Since your realms are still low and your knowledge of souls is shallow, you can't sense it." Nu Lang got up suddenly. "That evil energy comes from the Silver Shark Clan. Seems like it's from the Lofty Dragon Graveyard. I have to go there to see."

Then, Nu Lang turned into a bunch of light, shooting straight to that area.

Yin Hui was utterly stunned.

Although he knew that War Devil should be extraordinary, he didn't expect that its terrifying aura could cover the whole territory of the Silver Shark Clan. Such a destroying-earth force could subdue all hotshots present here.

"Kill him."

Shi Yan pointed at Situ Jie.

The War Devil got it.

The pupils looked like two dark suns as they gazed at Situ Jie, destroying his mentality. His face was blank just like what Zhong Li Dun's.

"It's entered Situ Jie's soul!"

Gu Xiao woke up from fear and immediately shouted. "Join hands and deal with this black iron puppet. We can't let it kill each of us like that!"

His words woke up everyone.

The Queen of Heaven, the Emperor of Earth, Qing Ming and Zou Yue Feng took action together. They urged their secret treasures and their outstanding martial arts. Sacred swords, small cauldrons, jade, knife, and fork, etc., all utilized their special

energies and joined each other. Many kinds of beautiful holy lights radiated, shooting towards the War Devil.

Rumble Rumble!

Although it was receiving the attack from various kinds of secret treasures and energies, the War Devil stood still like a stone table. No scratch could be seen on its body.

The black iron armor on its body was the strongest wall in the world, unafraid of any kinds of power.

Under numerous attacks of secret treasures and energies, the War Devil sauntered toward Situ Jie. Its massive arm stretched out, grabbed Situ Jie by his legs and ripped him in half.

The body with the Spirit Realm cultivation of Situ Jie was like a piece of paper in the puppet hands. He was torn apart, and bloody intestines fell on the ground.

Even Situ Jie's soul, which hadn't got out of his body yet, perished under the gaze of the puppet's dark pupils.

Both the flesh body and the soul were destroyed!

In just a short moment, Situ Jie had been killed and even his soul was destroyed. Zhong Li Dun was smashed into a pulp of meat, with nothing left behind.

Shi Yan's complexion was a little shaken, but he burst out laughing. "Well done. Worth my expectations." The power of the War Devil was what he had imagined as it was capable of terminating warriors like Situ Jie. After the War Devil had taken action, Shi Yan felt at ease as he knew he would definitely win this time.

"What the heck is it?"

The Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun's voice was shaking. Deep fear flooded her charming face.

"No matter what it is, it should have some weakness!" Zou Yue

Feng shouted. "Kill Shi Yan first! If he dies, this fighting puppet will lose its effects!"

Everybody responded to his shout, looking at Shi Yan.

"The next one," Shi Yan curled his lips, pointing at Zou Yue Feng.

A blood light shot out from the War Devil's dark pupils, striking towards Zou Yue Feng.

A beam of dark, endless light flew out from its mouth, which seemed to be able to devour all kinds of lights. When it appeared, all the light undersea was absorbed. The whole place became pitch-dark, and one couldn't even see his own fingers.

In this complete darkness, Zou Yue Feng's pitiful scream rose.

Everyone heard it, but they couldn't see what had happened.

In the immense darkness, Zou Yue Feng's voice was so mournful, which didn't seem to belong to a human at all. The irritating sound of dismembering flesh and breaking bones echoed from time to time. This was absolutely terrifying.

Under the situation that they couldn't see anything but only hear the dreadful screams, it was much worse than seeing someone being buried or dismembered alive.

Although Qing Ming and the Queen of Heaven had the Spirit Realm cultivation base, they couldn't bear such pressure. They couldn't help but cry, then tried all means to get to the sea surface.

Gradually, Zou Yue Feng's heart-rending shrill ceased. The darkness on the seabed also lifted up.

Zou Yue Feng wasn't there, and was replaced a pile of smashed meat, just like it was grounded by a meat grinder. It was really terrible to look at him now.

## Chapter 472: Strong Crowd

---

It seemed only in a short moment, but the trio of Situ Jie, Zhong Li Dun, and Zou Yue Feng had been smashed, receiving a pathetic death on the spot.

Shi Yan didn't do anything. He just stood there and indifferently watched the War Devil demonstrate its terrifying power, killing two Spirit Realm warriors and Zhong Li Dun. It had happened too fast, and many of them couldn't react before they saw the pulp that used to be Situ Jie and Zou Yue Feng.

Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven, Gu Xiao and the Emperor of Earth felt shivers running down their spines on hearing the terrible shrill in the darkness. They couldn't bear it anymore, and all flew up towards the sea surface at top speed.

Shi Yan didn't hurry. He waited until Zou Yue Feng got killed, smiled and looked at the sea surface. He then shook his head, speaking up coldly, "The monks can run away, but the temple stays. The result's all set. Even if they don't die now, it's only death waiting for them in the future."

After Situ Jie, Zou Yue Feng and Zhong Li Dun died, their essence Qi left their bodies. As expected, it all flew towards Shi Yan.

Anyway, Situ Jie's essence Qi was beyond his imagination. The essence Qi of the Spirit Realm warrior made his seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points swollen. Shi Yan didn't wait until he could get all the essence Qi and instinctively got away from this bloody, messy place.

It wasn't that he didn't want it. It was just him knowing his limit.

Although the upper limit to absorb the energy of his Mysterious Martial Spirit had increased a lot after he had entered the Sky Realm, the essence Qi of a Spirit Realm warrior was actually too much. Situ Jie's alone was enough to fill his acupuncture points. If

he got more from Zou Yue Feng and Zhong Li Dun, he was afraid that his acupuncture points would be blown away.

That's why he had to stay away and wait until their essence Qi scattered in heaven and earth before approaching the area again.

Yin Hui stood petrified at his spot, his eyes gazing at Shi Yan without blinking, and his face filled with fear.

Finally, he could confirm the intimidation of the War Devil.

With the very first moves, he could brutally kill Situ Jie, Zou Yue Feng, and Zhong Li Dun. Such formidable power could be compared to Nu Lang, a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior. Yin Hui himself didn't dare to provoke this sharp spear, and he also didn't have the intention to poke his nose in this bloody business. He then started to consider the relationship between the Silver Shark Clan and the Yang family.

Although the power Shi Yan had used this time didn't belong to his body, it was enough to terrify Yin Hui.

The War Devil's performance made him recognize that in the Endless Sea, only Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian could survive safe and sound at the hands of the War Devil.

Besides them, none of the warriors in the Endless Sea could tower this dazzling halo.

"Shi Yan."

Yin Hui was a little bit hesitant, his voice dry. He beamed a forced smile and said, "Does this black iron puppet come from the Lofty Dragon Graveyard? How could you bring this terrifying thing out of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard? Yeah, I know it's personal, but the Antiquity Lofty Graveyard belongs to the Sea Tribes anyway. It's our forbidden area, and you're human. How could you do that?"

"Destiny," Shi Yan curled his lips. He lifted his head to watch the sea surface, then frowned.

Yin Hui was standing in front of him, also surprised. "Someone's coming."

The seawater surrounding was flowing rapidly. Waves undersea were surging like someone was surfing the wave to get here. His speed was so fast the seawater could barely bear his force. It started to rise, causing a great change.

A majestic figure suddenly appeared next to Yin Hui.

Nu Lang, the patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan.

He had utilized his Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base to get here with maximum speed. It took him only several minutes to arrive at the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard.

Nu Lang's visage was dark. He frowned while observing the situation, then shifted his eyes to the War Devil with a strange look.

Half a minute later, Nu Lang took a deep breath, then turned to Yin Hui. "Some Spirit Realm warriors got killed here, right?" He glared at the black iron puppet.

"You got it," Yin Hui answered with a serious countenance. He nodded, "It's because of that black iron puppet. He's brought it out from the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard."

Nu Lang's majestic body was shaken. Divine light shot out from his eyes as he was scrutinizing Shi Yan.

Shi Yan smiled, bent down to greet him, then said with manners. "Greeting, precursor Nu Lang. Haha, I didn't expect we would meet up again that fast."

"The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard has always been the forbidden place on the ocean floor. Thousands of years have been passed, and countless strong warriors had buried themselves in there. No one was lucky enough to come back alive." Nu Lang's eyes shone with radiant light. "Why could you survive that place and even brought out with you such an intimidating black iron



puppet?"

"Good fortune." Shi Yan's visage was serious. "The Antiquity Lofty Dragon and I had some relationship in the ancient times. It's destined that I could enter that dark place. This black iron puppet belongs to the antiquity. Why I can have it now is all about my fate."

Nu Lang was surprised. Yin Hui just shook his head while beaming a forced smile. He both admired and envied Shi Yan.

Nu Lang mused for a while, then sighed. "Is it real destiny? The Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard has buried many of my ancestors, but now its mystery's cracked by a human. Perhaps, you little fella have some connection with our Sea Tribes, eh?"

Shi Yan was amazed. He had never thought about this. He was hesitant, then shook his head. "I'm not sure. Anyway, this Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard does have a connection with the ancient existence. I can't tell the details. I can only say that my fortune isn't bad."

Nu Lang and Yin Hui frowned, seriously considering the hidden meaning in his words.

Later, Nu Lang faced up to check the sky as his eyes squinted to a line. "Seems like I am not the only one who recognized the strange event here. It's unexpected that the great two warriors of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area are coming, too."

The seawater was split apart as two figures descended one after another from above.

The Queen of Heaven, the Emperor of Earth, Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, Pan Zhe, and Cao Zhi Lan, who had fled away in fear, appeared behind them. However, they didn't dare to move forward, just staying behind the other two to observe the situation.

"Yang Yi Tian! Xia Qing Hou!"

Yin Hui took a look and got shocked, exclaiming.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he hurriedly looked up.

A naturally handsome, elegant, middle-aged man was plunging down quietly, wearing a purple gown accompanied with a feathered crest. His face held a tender smile.

Hall Master of the Martial Spirit Palace, Yang Yi Tian, an overlord of a part of the Endless Sea.

An old man wearing hemp garments and straw sandals followed him. That man was old and wrinkled, but he had a distant, deep-green, old aura. He was the former master of the Xia family, Xia Qing Hou.

The two most outstanding warriors of the Vault of Heaven Sea Area appeared from the sea surface. After they arrived, they all looked at Nu Lang with surprised eyes. Seemed like they'd assumed that Nu Lang was the one who had initiated all these things.

"It wasn't me." Nu Lang was calm as he snorted, then shifted his line of sight to Shi Yan.

Yang Yi Tian's and Xia Qing Hou's pupils shrank. They then eyed Shi Yan with surprised and disbelieving countenances.

Yang Yi Tian had gawked for a while, then ceased the smile on his face. He closed his eyes to sense something, then shouted all of a sudden. "Who killed Situ Jie and Zhong Li Dun!"

"Me," Shi Yan bent his body slightly, smiled and clasped his hands. "Shi Yan, a junior, greeting precursor Yang."

He paused for a while, then continued his smile, looking at Xia Qing Hou. His manner was more sincere, "We meet here, Great Grandfather Xia."

The senile face of Xia Qing Hou cracked a smile. His attitude was tender. He walked towards Shi Yan, his eyes shining. "You are Shi Yan?"

"Yes."

"Good boy! Good boy! Good!"

Xia Qing Hou said 'good' three times consecutively. Then, he appeared next to Shi Yan, standing opposite Yang Yi Tian.

The Xia family and the Yang family always had a good relation. Xia Qing Hou and Yang Tian Emperor were close friends for a hundred years. He also knew about Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan's relationship from the juniors of the Xia family.

After he had recovered, he always paid attention to Shi Yan, as he knew well what Shi Yan'd done during these years in the Endless Sea.

In his eyes, Shi Yan was a family member, Xia Xin Yan's fiancé. Even the reason why he could recover that fast was related to Shi Yan. Of course, he and Shi Yan stood in the same boat.

"Hall Master Yang," Xia Qing Hou smiled, his face contemplating. "Seems like you guys had sent someone to kill Shi Yan, but you didn't have good fortune. Yeah, first, I'd like to express my opinion. No matter what, I'm on the same side as Shi Yan. If you want to deal with him, I will definitely not just stand and stare."

"Precursor Yang," Shi Yan curled his lips. "Forgive my childish, arrogant words, but if you want to kill me, it should be a little bit difficult here."

Then, his thought flickered, sending his message to the War Devil.

The War Devil was still hiding its aura. After receiving Shi Yan's thought, it started to stroll towards Yang Yi Tian.

A murderous, earth-destroying aura like the immense water of the Endless Sea gushed out from the War Devil, instantly covering the whole territory of the Silver Shark Clan.

Yang Yi Tian's face changed dramatically.

Nu Lang frowned.

Xia Qing Hou's eyes brightened.

The three real heroes of the land and the undersea had different facial expressions.

"I still don't understand why you guys are still fighting against each other, even though we're all warriors of the Endless Sea." Shi Yan's face darkened. "When I was in Yuan Luo Sea Area, the Demon Dwellers had struggled to kill me, which I can understand. But why do you guys want to destroy me? It has repeated many times. Their attitude is like they can't live well if they can't eradicate me. Precursor Yang, could you elaborate the reasons?"

"The ones who want to kill you include Gu Xiao, Dongfang Jue, and Qing Ming." Yang Yi Tian snorted coldly. "I'm just watching. Although you seem to have unpredictable potential, I didn't put you in my eyes. But now, it's different. You'd killed Situ Jie and Zhong Li Dun. Even if I'm an easy person, I can't spare your life!"

Then, a divine light flashed in Yang Yi Tian's eyes. Electric currents were weaving inside that divine light as they rapidly shot toward Shi Yan.

"Seven-colored Nirvana Light!" Xia Qing Hou shouted, then said coldly. "Yang Yi Tian, you dare?"

# Chapter 473: Imposing

---

Rumors said that Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian and Yang Tian Emperor had fallen into a space crack when they were young.

There, they found the corpse of a God King. Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor had the essence blood of the God King, while Yang Yi Tian had a beam of the God King's divine soul.

The dead body of a God King had helped create the three peerless warriors of the Endless Sea.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian had had their competences thrived massively, as they had the ability to provoke opponents who had higher realms than them. Yang Yi Tian entered the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, and he also had fantastic advances in knowing several intimidating soul techniques.

The Seven-colored Nirvana Light was one of the scary soul techniques that he had learned.

This soul technique could perish someone's soul. Once it jumped into the other's Sea of Consciousness, it could easily find the host soul and use the Nirvana Light to destroy it.

Yang Yi Tian had depended on the Seven-colored Nirvana Light to swagger in Endless Sea. So many warriors had their souls scattered because of this Seven-colored Nirvana Light.

It was the signature skill of Yang Yi Tian

As Xia Qing Hou saw the light shoot out from the other's eye, he immediately got what the other wanted to do, projecting divine light from his eyes.

Marvelous light beams, one blue, and one purple, turned into two electric dragons tangling and wiggling with each other. They then spurted out two purple and blue light balls that vehemently shot towards the Seven-colored Nirvana Light.

In the seawater, the Seven-colored light and the blue-purple dragons attacked each other, but no impact was generated.

However, the faces of Yang Yi Tian and Xia Qing Hou changed frequently. Strange light flashed unceasingly in their pupils, just like meteors showering inside their eyes.

Xia Qing Hou used to enter the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. In the bog that Shi Yan found the King of Demonic Insects, he got the last crystal clear God Soul bead. After years of living in isolation to perceive the subtle mysteries in the bead, he had broken through the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, and also obtained some bizarre and unpredictable soul techniques.

It could be said that both Yang Yi Tian and Xia Qing Hou had a good grasp of soul techniques. They were both at the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, and both borrowed external force and fortuitous encounters.

Because of Shi Yan, the two of them, who were like water in the well and river which never met, started to join the competition on soul techniques.

Nu Lang and Yin Hui, the two patriarchs of the Sea Tribes, were watching the two peak warriors of the Endless Sea using soul technique to fight against each other. They showed their interest with an attentive look on their faces.

The two soul techniques were cast out but they didn't shake anything as expected. The seawater was still calm.

Even Yang Yi Tian and Xia Qing Hou kept a calm complexion. However, deep inside their pupils, a bursting light was blooming, which shook people's hearts, dragging their souls in it. It seemed even to attract people's host souls, making it want to get out of the Sea of Consciousness.

Only if they released their soul consciousness and attached it onto the fight could they know how miraculous this soul fight was.

Otherwise, they would never know the subtle details of it.

All of a sudden, light ceased in Yang Yi Tian's and Xia Qing Hou's eyes. The divine light was retrieved.

Xia Qing Hou let out a slight cough, and his face slightly changed. It seemed like he bore the disadvantage this time. He snorted, "Hall Master Yang, you're an overlord of an area. Even so, you used soul technique to attack Shi Yan without any prior warning. This deed doesn't seem good."

"An eye for an eye... It's right and unalterable." Yang Yi Tian's brows slammed together. "Situ Jie was the number one consecrator of our Martial Spirit Palace. He had contributed much to the Martial Spirit Palace. He got killed, so of course, I have to obtain justice for him. Zhong Li Dun was the one we were nurturing for our future, and Shi Yan killed him too. If you were me, would you let it go?"

"Well, although you guys want to kill him, do you think he would just hand over his neck like that?" Xia Qing Hou sneered, looking at the group of Qing Ming and Gu Xiao, speaking up with disdain. "What a pity! Six Spirit Realm warriors took action, but two of them got killed while the others had to run for their lives. Haven't you lost your face?"

Nu Lang and Yin Hui were watching the situation with joy.

"Precursor Yang, do you really think that you could kill me instantly using soul technique?" At this moment, Shi Yan suddenly curled his lips, shook his head and said coldly. "When I was in Barren City, Bao Wen did the same. Then, his soul consciousness was burned to ash. In front of the Silver Stone Fort, Situ Jie and Zou Yen Feng did the same. I think precursor Yin Hui knows their results. "

Yang Yi Tian's face darkened, and couldn't help but look at Yin Hui.

Nu Lang and Xia Qing Hou were surprised, also looking at him.

"I was staying in the dark to observe the battle in Barren City. And, I didn't miss any small details of the battle in front of the Silver Stone Fort." Under the attentive looks of the three great warriors, Yin Hui wore a solemn face and nodded affirmatively. "Forgive my frankness, but any soul technique or soul consciousness that jumps into Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness would disappear into thin air. Hall Master Yang, if you want to do that, haha, I think you will have to face the same consequence."

Yang Yi Tian's eyes flared up with cold light. "Were Bao Wen and Situ Jie's levels able to be compared with mine?"

It wasn't that he didn't believe, but he had his arrogance.

In such a vast sea like the Endless Sea, if one talked about the biggest achievement in understanding the souls, no doubt that it belonged to Yang Yi Tian. He was the best in Endless Sea, and everybody acknowledged him.

Bao Wen, Situ Jie, and Zou Yen Feng were far behind compared to him.

He believed in his cultivation base and his deep understanding of soul. Once he used his soul technique, whatever tricks Shi Yan had, he could hardly avoid death.

"If you don't believe me, just try." Shi Yan laughed, shaking his head. "Anyway, if precursor Yang's soul consciousness gets hurt, don't blame me that I didn't give you a warning beforehand."

"Arrogant!" Yang Yi Tian shouted.

"Don't!" Xia Qing Hou hurriedly stopped them.

"It's okay." Shi Yan smiled to comfort them. "Great Grandpa Xia, don't worry. I have my plan. Haha, I do want to see if his soul technique could destroy the power of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame or not."



"The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame!"

Yang Yi Tian, Nu Lang, Xia Qing Hou and Yin Hui discolored on hearing that. Their eyes shot out a panic-stricken light.

"Yeah, it's the heaven flame that can burn all kinds of soul, the Nine Serenities Devouring Soul Flame." Shi Yan curled his lips. "Precursor Yang, do you want to try?"

Yang Yi Tian discolored, standing dumbfounded without the intention to act recklessly.

It was the name of the heaven flame which had been famous for thousands of years in the entire Endless Sea, even though each heaven flame had their own unpredictable miracle effects.

The Ice Cold Flame was extremely cold. The Purgatory True Flame came from the purgatory, which was the best fiery flame to forge weapons. The Vanishing Corpse Flame could control corpses and could even turn living humans into corpse slaves. The Nine Serenities Devouring Soul Flame was the fiery flame that could destroy souls! It could burn down souls of all kinds of creatures, and even divine sense or thoughts.

Many legends about the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had soon been spread out all over the Endless Sea. This flame appeared in numerous rumors, but no one ever heard that it had a master.

Due to its particularity, no warrior dared to let it stay inside his host soul in the Sea of Consciousness.

The heaven flame that could burn down the soul consciousness of the host soul, how could someone get it integrated into his soul? But Shi Yan had claimed that he kept the Nine Serenities Devouring Soul Flame in his Sea of Consciousness. Was it true?

In legends, no one had ever broken the barrier. Did he really have such an eccentric change?

Yang Yi Tian didn't believe it, neither do Xia Qing Hou.

But Nu Lang and Yin Hui believed him. Thousands of years had passed, and everyone who entered the Lofty Dragon Graveyard had to die. But he came back alive. Moreover, he brought out with him a terrifying black iron puppet.

If he could break one legend, it wouldn't be a surprise if he could break another one.

Nu Lang and Yin Hui exchanged looks. Their faces were bizarre.

"Well, if you don't believe it, you can try." Shi Yan didn't exaggerate, just smiled. "Currently, the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers are raging in the Endless Sea. I just don't want precursor Yang get his soul hurt because of me. Honestly, I don't like precursor Yang, but I know that keeping you safe is better for the whole picture of the Endless Sea. So, I want to remind you, don't take risks."

Yang Yi Tian's face darkened, but people couldn't see anything from his complexion.

"You can't kill me directly using soul technique. And, with this black puppet here, you can't kill me physically. What is the use for to linger here?" Shi Yan pitched his voice, smiled and said calmly, "The Endless Sea's really busy, you know? Yeah, forgive me if I can't see you off. I think we will meet again soon. At that time, I hope that precursor Yang would be well prepared."

Lifting his head, Shi Yan screamed again. "Oh yeah, I killed Zou Yen Feng, too. He's the Chaos' man. Perhaps you would want to visit Cao Qiu Dao too."

Then, he squinted his eyes, looking at Cao Zhi Lan on the sea surface, talking to her with a cold voice. "Miss Cao, take care."

Cao Zhi Lan felt cold as if his cold voice had absorbed into her body and stiffened it. Shi Yan's performance had torn off all of her defenses. At this moment, she only felt helpless.

She thought that they could kill Shi Yan instantly, but he had

brought with him a terrifying black puppet from the Lofty Dragon Graveyard. And now, he didn't show fear even on facing the peak warriors of the Endless Sea.

Shi Yan's performance gave her an untrue feeling. She suddenly had a feeling that she had missed the chance which she would regret for the rest of her life.

"I hope that you could stay that complacent for a long time." Yang Yi Tian restored his original calm countenance. He nodded at Shi Yan, "It's true. You can see the Endless Sea's situation now. For the time being, I won't interfere in your business. I think your existence could be one of our advantages too."

Shi Yan frowned.

"The Kyara Sea is in the hands of the Dark Dwellers. I think it's time for the Yang family to think about how to take back your territory." Yang Yi Tian squinted his eyes. "I'm waiting for your good news."

Then, he glared at Shi Yan one last time before flying up to the sea surface, gathering with Gu Xiao's group.

Soon, those people disappeared from the seabed.

On the seabed, only Shi Yan, Yin Hui, Nu Lang and Xia Qing Hou were left outside the Lofty Dragon Graveyard.

# Chapter 474: Boldness

---

Nu Lang, Xia Qing Hou, and Yin Hui were dumbstruck, eyeing Shi Yan and the War Devil. All of a sudden, their minds were filled with strange emotions.

Shi Yan's growing speed was too amazing.

No warrior in the Endless Sea could be like him, thriving to his current powerful realm in such a short time. A young Sky Realm warrior with extraordinary backup went beyond their imagination.

At his Sky Realm, he could borrow external forces to compete against the Spirit Realm warriors.

And now, he had brought with him a War Devil from the Lofty Dragon Graveyard. The power of a War Devil could be compared to a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior. Besides, he had the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm.

Any of these on a typical warrior was enough to surprise people.

But he had them all.

"Shi Yan, where is Xin Yan?" Xia Qing Hou mused for a while, and couldn't help but admire Shi Yan in his heart. But still, he asked the matter he worried about the most.

Shi Yan's calm face changed when he heard the question.

"What happened?" Xia Qing Hou raised his eyebrow. "She didn't come with you? I heard that she had visited the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, too. Didn't you say that you've come back from there? Did you meet her?"

"People from the Pure Land took her to the Divine Great Land," Shi Yan calmly told them what Ye Chang Feng told him.

"Pure Land..."

Xia Qing Hou's face was cold as cold halo radiated from his eyes. "They want to revive Xin Yan's soul of the previous life. This means death to her. I'm not gonna allow it!"

"The Pure Land's much stronger than the Endless Sea," Shi Yan sighed. "As far as I've known, there're True God Realm warriors among the seven old factions in the Divine Great Land. I have to admit that the Endless Sea's forces are one level lower than the Divine Great Land's."

Although Yin Hui and Nu Lang were dwelling on the seabed under the Endless Sea, they knew something about the Divine Great Land. Hearing Shi Yan talking about the place, they all showed interest and listened to him seriously.

Shi Yan didn't conceal anything, frowned and said, "Great Grandpa Xia, don't worry too much about Xin Yan. We always have solutions. Xin Yan will be okay for the time being. After we're done with the stuff in Endless Sea, I'll go to the Divine Great Land and bring her back from the Pure Land."

"According to you, the Pure Land's one of the seven ancient factions of the Divine Great Land, and they have True God Realm warriors. Do you really have any solution?" Xia Qing Hou wore a worried face, shaking his head. "If we want her back, I have to go there. With only you, I'm afraid it would be difficult to make them nod their heads."

"I have my means."

"What?"

Shi Yan took a deep breath, looking at Xia Qing Hou then said, "Great Grandpa Xia, in the exotic land of the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, you got a crystal clear bead of God Soul. I wonder if you've ever heard about the Life Original Fluid?"

Xia Qing Hou was surprised.

Yin Hui and Nu Lang had their eyes brightened at the same time.

"I heard that the Life Original Fluid's there," Xia Qing Hou nodded, "Seems like it's because of the Life Original Fluid that the boy Ye Cheng Feng gave me the Vain Spirit Pellet. Anyway, when I was there, I didn't see such a miraculous thing. Why you mention it?"

"I have it."

Xia Qing Hou and the others were shaken. Their eyes brightened.

"I really have it here." Shi Yan smiled, looking at Yin Hui with guilt in his eyes. "I hid the truth from you because I wasn't sure I could keep the Life Original Fluid. Cough, don't say that I'm too cautious. You and Nu Lang are both peak warriors, and the Life Original Fluid appears to be a big deal. I'm afraid you guys...."

Yin Hui forced a smile and nodded, "I understand."

Nu Lang's eyes were shining, eyeing him without blinking. "You really have it?"

"Yes."

Nu Lang was so joyful he almost went crazy.

Among the others, only he had broken through to the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, just one step away from the True God Realm.

At this moment, the only thing he needed was a drop of the Life Original Fluid, which would enhance his guts entering the True God Realm.

It wasn't necessary to discuss the significance of the Life Original Fluid to him.

Once he entered the True God Realm, Nu Lang would become the legend of thousands of years on the seabed. His future wouldn't be limited in the seabed of the Endless Sea, and his world would change accordingly.

The True God Realm was the realm of the genuine Gods.

The Spirit Realm was just the false Gods' realm.

They were definitely different, and the gap between them was hard to cross. Once he could pass over it, he would become God. But if he couldn't, he would just be a false God.

Nu Lang's desire for the Life Original Fluid was much bigger than that of having an area in the Endless Sea.

"Why did you decide to disclose it now?" Yin Hui also had an excited face. "Shi Yan, tell us what you want to exchange for the Life Original Fluid?"

"Do you really have it?" Xia Qing Hou was also stirred up. He was at the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, and soon, he would reach Nu Lang's realm. With a drop of the Life Original Fluid, he would have a more substantial chance to enter the True God Realm. Thinking about this temptation, he couldn't hold it.

The Spirit Realm warriors often would have lived for more than one hundred years. Usually, they shouldn't be stirred up that easy. However, the Life Original Fluid was a kind of treasure they had been yearning for so long. This made these old men unable to control their emotions.

"There's a reason for me to say so," Shi Yan smiled. "Great Grandpa Xia, with one drop of the Life Original Fluid, I think it isn't hard to ask the people of the Pure Land to give back our people."

Xia Qing Hou nodded, "The Pure Land's one of the seven ancient factions of the Divine Great Land. Of course, they should have some warriors at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. I think they know how precious a drop of the Life Original Fluid is."

"Thus, don't worry. I said I would have plans to bring Xin Yan out of the Pure Land." Shi Yan comforted the old man. "Wait until we're done with the stuff in Endless Sea, I'll visit the Divine Great Land. Just wait and see, I have my own means."

"Good boy!" Xia Qing Hou smiled with shining eyes. He nodded.

"Yang Tian Emperor does have good fortune."

"As for you guys..."

He wanted to say something to Nu Lang and Yin Hui, but he didn't finish it.

"Say it," Nu Lang was trying to press down his excitement and spoke up casually. "As long as it doesn't require me to betray the Sea Tribes, anything can be negotiated."

"Of course I don't dare to force you to damage yourself or your reputation," Shi Yan was happy, but he was talking with solemn face. "The Kyara Sea belongs to us. I want to take it back."

Nu Lang relaxed his face.

Yin Hui was bewildered for a while, then said, "If it's the only request, no problem with our Silver Shark Clan."

"Members of the Yang family are still in the Demon Area. My Great Grandpa's doing well there. Perhaps, he's seizing the chance to invade the Demon Area. For the time being, he won't be back in the Endless Sea."

"What?"

Nu Lang, Yin Hui, and Xia Qing Hou stammered in fear.

The news about Yang Tian Emperor had been confined in Demon Area had soon spread over the Endless Sea, but the news of his escape was totally hidden. That's why some members of the Sea Tribes dared to plane their wild schemes on Barren City.

If they had known that Yang Tian Emperor had escaped from the Demon King's confinement, they would have never conspired against Barren City.

As they heard the earth-shaking news from Shi Yan, Nu Lang, Yin Hui, and even Xia Qing Hou were frightened.

"I'm sure this is real." Shi Yan smiled, "Don't be startled. I think my Great Grandpa has something he's arranged for the Demon



Area. Currently, I can't borrow the force from the Yangs much. Anyway, with the help from the Black Flood Dragon Clan and the Silver Shark Clan, plus Great Grandpa Xia... And yeah, perhaps I can also contact the Three Gods Sect. With this combined force, I think it won't be tough to take back the Kyara Sea."

Nu Lang and Yin Hui were surprised.

Xia Qing Hou shouted with low tone. "You also have a connection with the Three Gods Sect?"

"Yeah, my relation with Tang Yuan Nam isn't bad. Also, I have some old origin shared with Ouyang Luo Shuang," Shi Yan nodded. "With these relationships and the Life Original Fluid, I think it shouldn't be hard to ask for using people of the Three Gods Sect. Moreover, taking back the Kyara Sea also gives the Three Gods Sect a position here. And, in the future, I would pay back the favor by helping them deal with the Demon Dwellers in Yuan Luo Sea."

"Kid, not bad," Xia Qing Hou nodded continually.

"I won't ask you to do things for free," Shi Yan mused for a while, then his face stiffened. "The Dark Water Territory's a fertile land. If you Sea Tribes help us, after the Endless Sea is secured and the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers are killed, besides two drops of the Life Original Fluid, I will offer you the Dark Water Territory!"

Nu Lang and Yin Hui had their eyes brightened.

Xia Qing Hou's face slightly changed as he frowned. "Shi Yan..."

"The Dark Water Territory belongs to the Holy God Sect, the Spirit Treasure Wonderland and the Heaven Lake Holy Land. These three forces have been battling against me. Yeah, they are weak though. In my eyes, they can't keep the Dark Water Territory in the future." Shi Yan's face was dark and cold. "They are unkind to me, so I won't be polite either. In the future, of course, the Endless Sea would have a great change. I can see the Dark Water

become the Sea Tribes' territory. What do you think?"

He looked at Nu Lang and Yin Hui.

"Aren't you afraid that thousands of people would insult you?" Nu Lang knitted his brows. "Although some people from your human race have been cooperating with our Sea Tribes, until now, they don't allow us to get to the surface of the sea area. Thousands of years have passed by, and you guys have never allowed us to visit the blue ocean. If you do so, aren't you afraid that the warriors of the Endless Sea would unite and protest against you? They would say that you have united with alien tribes to deal with your own kind. Aren't you afraid of them?"

"I think the ones who could scold me should have already visited hell by that time," Shi Yan smirked. Nu Lang, Yin Hui, and Xia Qing Hou gave him a deep look as they all sighed inside.

This kid was vicious enough!

## Chapter 475: Final decision

---

"Great Grandpa Xia, you should be more open-minded." Shi Yan hesitated, then smiled. "If the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers bury themselves in Endless Sea, the Demon Area and the Underworld would become the places where no one lives. Haha... Losing the Dark Water Territory but earning the Demon Area and the Underworld, you tell me, aren't there a little bit profits here?"

Xia Qing Hou was shaken, as a strange light shot out from his eyes.

"Kid, you're young, but you do have strong wild schemes. Cruel and merciless, such a character..." Nu Lang took a deep breath. "Your appetite's bigger than Cao Qiu Dao's and Yang Yi Tian's. I didn't expect that you have dreamed about the Demon Area and the Underworld too. Sigh, it's unbelievable that the Yang family has another freak like you besides Yang Tian Emperor."

"Although you Sea Tribes can leave the sea surface, it should be a bit difficult if you leave Endless Sea for a long time." Shi Yan smiled, his face deliberate. "You shouldn't consider the Demon Area and the Underworld. These places aren't suitable for your Sea Tribes to live. The seawater there is also different from the Grace Mainland."

"Well, you're sure that our Sea Tribes can't earn a living in the Demon Area and the Underworld, that's why you offer so." Yin Hui snorted with irritation.

"It's true," Shi Yan didn't deny.

Nu Lang and Yin Hui fell into silence.

Shi Yan wasn't hurried, smiled and waited for them calmly.

"I would agree with your conditions and help you take back the Kyara Sea. However, I want to see the Life Original Fluid first." Nu Lang mused, wanting to confirm the fact that Shi Yan had the Life

Original Fluid.

Yin Hui also showed his longing face.

"No problem," Shi Yan was frank and straightforward. He contacted the King of Demonic Insects in the Blood Vein Ring, sending his thought.

After the King of Demonic Insects got a drop of Immortal Blood from him, their relationship had become more harmonious. Having heard his call, it came out from the Blood Vein Ring, opened its mouth and spurt out a crystal lotus throne.

A bottle stood amid the crystal lotus throne, holding some sort of white liquid. Heartbeats reverberated clear and loud from this white substance.

This bottle wasn't big, and Shi Yan took the chance to glare at it. He found that the bottle kept around ten drops of Life Original Fluid. Each drop had the heart shape with robust heartbeats sounding out. They were all radiating a milky white halo, which made them look like a strong, micro heart. Extremely marvelous!

Divine light sparkled in Nu Lang's, Yin Hui's and Xia Qing Hou's eyes as they were eyeing the bottle on the crystal lotus throne.

As the three of them had Spirit Realm cultivation base, they had unique recognition of strange things. At first glance, they knew how miraculous the liquid inside the bottle was.

"Not bad. The rumor's true." Xia Qing Hou affirmed first, his face surprised and happy. "Each drop of the Life Original Fluid seems to have its own vitality. I can hear the vigorous heartbeats. From its look, I can tell it's the Life Original Fluid."

Yin Hui nodded continually. "As you've said, it's the Life Original Fluid."

Shi Yan sent his thought again.

The King of Demonic Insects opened its mouth, swallowed the

crystal lotus throne and disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring. Shi Yan then looked at Nu Lang, smiled and asked, "Precursor Nu Lang, do you have further doubts?"

"Alright," Nu Lang spoke up with a serious face. "I'm going back to the Black Flood Dragon Clan and arrange things. As for the details, we need to talk and act together, okay?"

"You can contact my Big Uncle Yang Zhuo. I'll go to the sea surface and contact people from the Three Gods Sect." Shi Yan smiled, "Don't worry. I'll have a sufficient force to annihilate the Dark Dwellers in a flash."

"Right, I'll arrange the business of my clan and then find Yang Zhuo," nodded Nu Lang.

Yin Hui said the same. However, he was a little bit hesitant. "If the Water Scorpion Tribe and the Naga Tribe also want to join us, how about this Life Original Fluid?"

Shi Yan shook his head. "I didn't count them in this."

Yin Hui frowned.

"I don't want to waste it," Shi Yan considered, "On the seabed, the Black Flood Dragon Clan and the Silver Shark Clan are the strongest tribes, much stronger than the Water Scorpion Tribe and the Naga Tribe. With your help, the Xia Family and the Three Gods Sect, together with me and this black iron puppet, taking the Kyara Sea isn't a big deal. We don't need more people."

"How about the Dark Water Territory?" probed Yin Hui.

"Wait until we finish the Kyara Sea's matter, then I will see if your Sea Tribes have good wills." Shi Yan was serious. "If you guys want the Dark Water Territory, we will need forces in the future. Yeah, the Demon Dwellers are in the Endless Sea, too. It would be a conflict at that time. If you want to claim good things, you should think about the next steps."

Nu Lang's and Yin Hui's eyes sparkled, their faces complicated.

A while after that, Nu Lang nodded but didn't discuss anything else. He regarded Yin Hui then they left together.

"Shi Yan, your ambitious heart isn't small," Xia Qing Hou exclaimed after Nu Lang and Yin Hui had left.

"In fact, I have no ambition," Shi Yan burst out laughing. "I just don't want to leave the ones who want to deal with me live with ease. No matter it's the Endless Sea, the Demon Area or the Underworld, I don't have the desire to take them. However, the Yang family has treated me well. I have plenty free time at this moment, so I should do something to repay their favors."

"I heard that you came from the Quiet Cloud."

"Yes," Shi Yan's eyes glittered, then slowly nodded. The reason why he wanted to stir the rain and the wind in Endless Sea was for the Yangs on one hand, and on the other hand, because of the guilt towards Shi Jian and the others in the Quiet Cloud. Since he had descended in the Grace Mainland, the Shi Family had considered him their successor.

No matter it was Shi Jian, Shi Tie, or Shi Dang, they all took care of him, trusted him and treated him like a member of their family.

The Shi Family dwelled in the Merchant Union. The warriors there were normal, and the aura of the earth and firmament wasn't as good as the Endless Sea. They didn't even have a Spirit Realm warrior.

After he had seen the wealth of the Endless Sea and the peak prosperous time of the Divine Great Land, he had determined that he should come up with the plan to bring the Shi Family out of the Merchant Union of the Quiet Cloud and get them to the Endless Sea, or even the Divine Great Land. He should find the best place for their cultivation.

Only if the Endless Sea regained its peace and the Yang Family held the absolute overlord position in Endless Sea, the Shi Family

could have no worries and move there from the Merchant Union.

At that time, he could ease his mind and enter the Divine Great Land to learn the peak knowledge from the true warriors of the Grace Mainland.

"Great Grandpa Xia, do you want to visit Barren City?"

"Oh, no," Xia Qing Hou contemplated for a while then showed his worries. "I've just turned my back on Yang Yi Tian. I'm afraid he would do something behind my back. I have to go back to control the situation. When you have everything planned, send someone to notify me. I'll know how to cooperate with you. The Reincarnation Island of the Xia Family's also in the Kyara Sea. I want to take it back soon."

"Alright, I'm going back to Barren City and talk to my Big Uncle. Keep in touch."

"Okay."

Shi Yan bid farewell to the old man on the seabed. He then walked with his black iron puppet, leaving the graveyard and heading to Barren City.

Seven days later, he got to Barren City, returning to the Yang Family in the city. Since Yang Zhuo and the others knew that he would be going to the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard, they couldn't help but worry about him. Now, as they saw him coming back, everybody was happy and surprised, chirping around him to ask about his experience of this trip.

Shi Yan just smiled and didn't say anything. He waited until they finished and started, "I'm okay, I got a War Devil there," He pointed to the black iron puppet.

"War Devil?" Yang Zhuo and Zhang Mu frowned, looking at the black iron puppet.

"Really dangerous, eh?" Yang Zhuo couldn't hold but ask.

Shi Yan confirmed with a nod, "Really dangerous."

"How dangerous is it?" Li Feng raised her brows, giggling.

"He killed Situ Jie, Zou Yue Feng, and Zhong Li Dun."

Everybody was shaken, extremely frightened.

"No kidding?" Yang Mu was panic-stricken.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan smiled. "No kidding." He paused for a while, then explained. "If this War Devil urges all of his strength, he would be able to confront Nu Lang directly. Won't be defeated, I guess."

Everybody was dumbfounded on hearing him.

On the seabed, Nu Lang was an invincible existence. Every single member of the Sea Tribes or human race knew how tremendous Nu Lang's power was. He was the best warrior who was acknowledged by everyone.

And now, Shi Yan said that this black iron puppet had the ability to confront Nu Lang directly. Everybody thought he was crazy.

"Nu Lang and Yin Hui agreed to join hands with us and help us take back the Kyara Sea." Shi Yan threw them another bomb. Yang Zhuo and the other members of the Yang family all wore an extremely awkward face, gazing at him like they were looking at a monster.

"I'm not joking with you guys," Shi Yan said seriously, but Yang Zhuo and the others kept their dumbstruck complexion.

"Well, it happened like this..."

From their appearance, Shi Yan knew they couldn't accept the event. He had no choice but wear a forced smile and tell them in detail.

After he had finished, Yang Zhuo and the others gradually restored themselves, believing in his words. "We didn't expect that you could have the miraculous Life Original Fluid from the Dark



Magnetic Noxious Mist. Fella, you do have good fortune." Yang Mu exclaimed with an admiring face.

"No wonder why Nu Lang and the others were frank and straightforward. Seems, it's mainly because of the Life Original Fluid." Yang Zhuo shot right at the critical detail.

"Big Uncle, you guys just stay on the seabed. The current situation will change soon. Don't worry." Shi Yan smiled. "I'm going back to the sea surface to find Tang Yuan Nam of the Three Gods Sect. We have a good relationship. If he helps me now, we will repay his favor later. I think he won't deny me. With the forces from the Three Gods Sect, the Black Flood Dragon Clan, the Silver Shark Clan, and the Xia Family, we can easily get back to the Kyara Sea."

The Yangs was roused. "Seems like you don't need your Great Grandpa returning to Endless Sea to help us take back what belongs to us." Yang Zhuo smiled, patting Shi Yan's shoulder. "Bringing you here from the Quiet Cloud was our best decision. You're truly the lucky charm of our Yang Family."

# Chapter 476: Strong Wind

---

The Dark Water Territory, Holy Water Island...

This island was the sacred place of the Heaven Lake Holy Land. Legends said that the Holy Water Island had a heaven lake, which kept the Holy Water.

Soaking a newborn in the heaven lake for a whole forty-nine days could help wash all the impurities in the body, enhance tendons and meridians, and completely change the baby. This would give an ordinary baby the innate talent which was pretty good for its cultivation later.

The Holy Water Island was located on the sacred mountain of the Heaven Lake Holy Land.

More than ten warriors were sitting on the bench with a gloomy face.

Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven, Gu Xiao, the Emperor of Earth, Wu Qin, Qiu Xun, and the Cult Master of the Holy God Sect – Ling Mei, were the ones leading the forces of Endless Sea. They gathered there, but their hearts seemed to be pressed by a huge stone, which was exceptionally heavy.

"Is he really dangerous?"

Keeping silent for a long while, Qiu Xun from the Spirit Treasure Wonderland sighed and asked Gu Xiao.

Gu Xiao beamed a forced smile, shook his head and said begrudgingly. "He alone is dangerous already. But now it's not only that. From the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard, he brought out a tremendously intimidating black iron puppet. Honestly, I still can't believe it. It's just a simple-looking black iron puppet, but it has a scary evil power. Zuo Yue Feng and Situ Jie died in its hands, as soft as a block of tofu. They couldn't bear even a strike."

Everybody sank into silence again after his words were uttered.

Zuo Yue Feng and Situ Jie were both famous warriors in Endless Sea with their Spirit Realm cultivation base, just like everybody else here.

The black iron puppet had killed them easily, which meant that everybody else here would face a deadly consequence if they met Shi Yan.

"It's not long after..."

Wu Qin wore a bitter complexion then sighed. "We shouldn't mess with him. The trouble's blown up now. According to you, even Hall Master Yang couldn't control him. In this immense Endless Sea, who could subdue him then?"

"I think if we use individual power, no one in Endless Sea can do anything to him." The Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun was hesitant, and couldn't help but admit it begrudgingly. At present, Shi Yan was the biggest freak of the Endless Sea, and the word genius wasn't enough to describe him.

Everybody sank into silence.

"Did Hall Master Yang say anything about this?" The Cult Master of the Holy God Sect Ling Mei had short hair, each of it raising sparklingly. He looked young and handsome, with an evil, eccentric aura. However, he had the calmest look among them.

"Xia Qing Hou protects him wholly. Nu Lang and Yin Hui were also there. That kid has the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. As Hall Master Yang couldn't use his soul technique to kill him in an instant, nothing else was there that he could do."

Gu Xiao explained.

The others then sobered up.

"It seems that the most unpredictable factor of the future of the Endless Sea is this man." Ling Mei took a cold breath, mused for a long while before speaking up again, "He's younger than anyone else. At such young age, he has the realm and the power that

frightens people. I think we should be more careful."

Jing Yan Qing sat neatly and listened to them without intervening.

Through what Gu Xiao and the others had shared, although she hadn't witnessed the fight with her own eyes, she could imagine the deep impression Shi Yan had brought to them.

That year, Shi Yan had stunned people by fighting against Mo Qi Ta. It was just one year, and now he dared to provoke Yang Yi Tian. How amazing a progress had he made?

She didn't know why she felt refreshed and content seeing many overlords of the Endless Sea sighed in distress. She even had Schadenfreude to a certain extent.

The stronger Shi Yan progressed, the more excited she was.

"Any reactions from Cao Qiu Dao?" asked Wu Qin.

"Nothing up till now," The Queen of Heaven said after thinking. "Xiao Lan hasn't got back to the Tuta Sea, perhaps. However, the Master of the Cao should have known the news by now. He can communicate with Hall Master Yang. I think that if anything arises, he will talk with Hall Master Yang first."

"Just wait for now. Zuo Yue Feng and Situ Jie were their men. With their nature, they wouldn't stay idle for long," Gu Xiao nodded.

"But the current situation of the Endless Sea isn't good." Wu Qin shook his head. "The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers are pressing closer. If we spend more workforce on Shi Yan, it would be strenuous to resist the invasion of the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers."

"If the Sea Tribes are willing to join us, every difficulty will be solved easily." Fan Xiang Yun furrowed her brows. "Too bad that Nu Lang and Yin Hui always keep their mouths shut. They haven't revealed any intention that they would cooperate with us. I think

these two aren't friendly. If the Sea Tribes poke their noses in, the Endless Sea would have something interesting to watch."

"How about the Three Gods Sect?" Wu Qin glared at Gu Xiao.

"Stays secluded in their forbidden place in their Sea," Gu Xiao snorted. "Seems Tang Yuan Nan doesn't want to mobilize their force. They only want to secure the Three Gods Sect's force. If it isn't the most crucial time, Ouyang Luo Shang will never be willing to take action. She's ascetically cultivating in the forbidden place of the Three Gods Sect. I think they hide the malicious intent behind their fair countenances. We shouldn't lay any hopes on them."

"The Three Gods Sect appreciates Shi Yan. It's natural that they won't help us deal with Shi Yan this time." Wu Qin shook his head. "If the Three Gods Sect knows of Shi Yan's powers and joins hands with him, there will be a force that no one can deny in the Endless Sea."

The Yang family, the Three Gods Sect, and the Xia Family had the three most prominent characters: Ouyang Luo Shang, Shi Yan, and Xia Qin Hou. Those three had the power to battle against any peak warrior. Once they join hands, the Endless Sea would have a great transformation.

Anyway, they hadn't counted the Sea Tribes. If they knew that Nu Lang and Yin Hui also had gotten into an agreement with Shi Yan, it was unknown how frightened they would be.

"Sigh. It would be best if Shi Yan went the same way as us." Wu Qin was quite distressed. "Without that pursuit, perhaps Shi Yan wouldn't be that hostile toward us. With him, we don't need to bear such a headache."

Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven, and the others suddenly discolored.

It was because of them, who had persistently wanted to deal with

Shi Yan, that everybody turned their back on him. After a series of actions, everybody got involved in it deeply.

After one year, Shi Yan returned to the Endless Sea and showed his intimidating power that subdued everyone. This made them regret, but they couldn't do anything else.

"There's no pill for regret," Gu Xiao contemplated for a while, "Wait and see, I think the Cao's Master and Hall Master Yang would have their arrangement soon."

Everybody had no choice but to nod.

...

Yuan Luo Sea, in a marvelous place covered by a mysterious halo under the sea of the Sun, Moon, the Star Islands...

A mesmerizing figure stood in the moonlight, taking a bath in a pond. Countless dots of moonlight essence gathered and glinted on her jade porcelain like pure white body.

She was standing in the pond like a fairy maiden with an ethereal aura of a holy being.

She was the Moon God, Ouyang Luo Shang.

In the moonlight pond, she seemed to not bother with the annoying outer world, nor the raging waves of the Endless Sea. She was freely enjoying the moonlight entering her body, as she was taking each of her steps with caution on the way to the true goal of a warrior.

The Flame Qilin appeared from afar with its scorching flame. Tang Yuan Nan sat on his mount, controlling the speed to be not too rapid nor slow as he approached the moonlight pond.

The beauty in the moonlit pond frowned. All of a sudden, the moonlight covered her body wholly.

Just like the Goddess of the Luo River, the beauty slowly flew up from the Moonlight Pond, her entire body covered in the hazy

moonlight. She looked at the other with cold eyes. "What's happened?"

Tang Yuan Nan wore a tender face, slightly bent over and smiled. "I've got some interesting news. Haha, but I'm not sure if it is true or not."

Ouyang Luo Shang arched her eyebrow, her eyes as beautiful and shining as the stars. She spoke up with clear and chill voice. "What news?"

"Shi Yan has returned to the Endless Sea."

"So what?"

"I heard that he killed Zuo Yue Feng, Situ Jie and even Zhong Li Dun on the seabed..." Tang Yuan Nan curled his lips into a smile.

Ouyang Luo Shang's pretty eyes sparkled with strange light. She was astonished for a while before speaking up again, "Not quite realistic."

"I think so. There's no smoke without fire, anyway. My news came from the Sacred Water Island of the Dark Water Sea Area." Tang Yuan Nan didn't hurry, and just casually explained. "I heard that Gu Xiao, Qing Ming, and Wu Qin aren't good now. They are gathering because of Shi Yan. But they couldn't come up with a solution good enough. I even heard that after Shi Yan had killed Situ Jie and Zhong Li Dun, Yang Yi Tian had arrived, but then he came back with nothing. Even he couldn't do anything."

"Ah!"

Eventually, the beauty couldn't help but let out a slight sigh to show her surprise. "He killed Situ Jie and Zhong Li Dun, but Yang Yi Tian had unexpectedly let him go?"

"It seemed like Yang Yi Tian couldn't do anything to him," explained Tang Yuan Nan.

"Yang Yi Tian's the peak warrior of the Endless Sea. How could

he do nothing to him?" Apparently, Ouyang Luo Shang didn't buy it, shook her head and then burst out laughing. "Your disappearance seemed to be a mistake. Even if that fella's strong, it's impossible for him to defeat Yang Yi Tian. Yeah, don't waste your mind on it. The news you got shouldn't be true, for the most part."

"I think it could be true." Tang Yuan Nan's face was serious. "Can you guess who sent me the news?"

"Who?"

"The Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Holy Land?"

"Her? How could it be?"

"I don't know either. I haven't had any connection with her before. She must have it done behind Wu Qin's back. I'm not sure."

"Is it a plan of the Dark Water Sea Area, perhaps?" Ouyang Luo Shang mused for a while then shook her head. "It's not possible. They won't help that kid enhance his reputation like that."

"That's why I'm suspicious and puzzled."

All of a sudden, at this moment, the Teleportation Formation at the center of the Three Gods Sect's holy land glowed. Not long after that, a man appeared in the halo together with a black iron puppet. He then shouted, "Precursor Tang, I'm Shi Yan. Can we talk?"

Tang Yuan Nam was shaken.



## Chapter 477: Exposing

---

While they were talking about Shi Yan, Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang were yet to figure out whether or not the rumors were true. But at this moment, the main character of the rumors appeared at the holy place of the Three Gods Sect. This surprised both of them completely.

Tang Yuan Nan used to bring Shi Yan here before. Thus, he wasn't surprised that Shi Yan could come here himself. Anyway, Shi Yan was recently calling wind and rising tides in Endless Sea; they didn't know if he had settled all the things there to come to this place. This puzzled the two of them.

"Just ask to verify the news provided by Jing Yan Qing." Ouyang Luo Shang held an indifferent countenance, frowned and sent her order to Tang Yuan Nan. "Let him come here. He and I haven't met officially. Now, we can have a chance, finally."

Tang Yuan Nan nodded cheerfully, laughing, "We're here. Come over here!"

The Three Gods Sect's sacred area wasn't vast. Since everybody had relatively high realms, they just needed to raise their voices to spread the sound all over the sacred place.

The disciples of the Three Gods Sect gathering here heard Shi Yan come, and couldn't help but change their expressions as they silently came closer.

Recently, during this year, news related to Shi Yan were always noticed. He had fought against Mo Qi Ta, Qing Ming, the Queen of Heaven and the Emperor of Earth. Each of this series of events was enough to shake the entire Endless Sea. Many disciples of the Three Gods Sect knew his relationship with the Gods Sect and considered him the Star God.

As the God arrived, these disciples, of course, wanted to observe

him.

One man and one black iron puppet followed Tang Yuan Nan's guidance and calmly walked to the moonlight pond under the attentive looks of the other disciples of the Three Gods Sect.

Elders of the Three Gods Sect couldn't hide their bright eyes, looking at him and the puppet behind him with surprise, whispering to each other.

"He had disappeared from the Endless Sea for one year. During this time, where did he go?"

"Who knows. At present, the situation of the Endless Sea is so complicated. Not only the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers want to kill him, Gu Xiao and his men also consider him an eyesore and pain in the ass. Before he got strong enough, getting back to the Endless Sea isn't a wise move."

"Yeah, this kid has an endless potential. He could become the pillar of our Gods Sect in the future. He just needs to go out and cultivate until he reaches the God Realm. At that time, when he comes back to the Endless Sea, he can establish a footing without being afraid of the oppressors."

"Yeah, he came back a little bit earlier than expected."

"..."

The disciples of the Three Gods Sect held surprised faces, discussing quietly.

Shi Yan smiled, slowly walking towards Tang Yuan Nan under the attention of the Three Gods Sect's disciples. He was going to meet the Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang officially.

The Sun, Moon, and Star Gods of the Three Gods Sect of this generation had finally met in the sacred land.

The Moon God had the moonlight meandering around her while the moonlight above enveloped her. Although the distance was

close, Shi Yan couldn't see her appearance clearly. He could only feel the immortal, ethereal aura on her body, which gave people a vague but immense sense of aesthetic.

"Precursor Tang," He clasped his fists to greet Tang Yuan Nan, then shifted his look to Ouyang Luo Shang, hesitated for a while before speaking up embarrassedly, " Precursor Ouyang Luo Shang."

Ouyang Luo Shang had been sealed for thousands of years in the meteorite in the Sky Meteor City. Talking about age, she was at the monster-level. However, during thousands of years in her confinement, she had constantly been taking in the essence of the moonlight, which separated her from the mortal world. She had been asleep all the time, so perhaps her mentality hadn't reached the vicissitude degree of her real age.

"Haha, we were just talking about you," Tang Yuan Nan was smiling. "I think you didn't expect that we've received the news which said that you'd slaughtered Situ Jie and Zuo Yue Feng on the seabed. Such interesting news!"

He observed Shi Yan's expression while talking.

Beside him, some elders and disciples of the Three Gods Sect were stunned on hearing Tang Yuan Nan's news and then forced a smile, shaking their heads.

Apparently, these elders and disciples of the Three Gods Sect didn't believe that the news was true.

The Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang was also shocked, looking at him and waiting for him to explain himself.

"It's true."

In front of the attentive eyes of many people, Shi Yan deliberately smiled and nodded his head to confirm. "Situ Jie and Zuo Yue Feng are dead. It's true. But I didn't kill them."

He pointed at the War Devil behind him, "He killed them."

Ouyang Luo Shang, Tang Yuan Nan and the other elders of the Three Gods Sect all showed that they were astounded, but didn't buy it.

Shi Yan didn't say more details, just sending a thought to the War Devil.

Only the truth could be persuasive. Sometimes, words just wouldn't work.

After he had sent his thought, the deep, dark pupils of Lao Luo's Dark Body shot out two blood lights. Immediately, an evil, intimidating, earth-destroying aura spread out from him as the center, covering the whole sacred land of the Three Gods Sect.

Under this earth-destroying aura, all Three Gods Sect's disciples felt their mind and soul both shaken just like a massive mountain was pressing on them! Except for Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang, everybody now felt a pressure that they couldn't even move or breath normally.

Some warriors with low cultivation base trembled and fell. They were sweating while feeling all of the powers in their bodies get drained. They looked really distressed.

The Elders of the Three Gods Sect paled as fear sparked in their eyes.

Tang Yuan Nan opened his eyes wide, stunningly looking at the War Devil. He contemplated for a long while before speaking up, "This surging energy's so strong. I think even the Demon Kings and Chi Yan could only have this degree of powers."

Half a minute later, Ouyang Luo Shang, who was covered wholly in the moonlight, nodded with surprise. "Seems like the rumors are true. We don't know how this puppet was made, but its power's so terrifying. No wonder why Situ Jie and Zuo Yue Feng got killed. Their deaths aren't unjust."

Shi Yan curled the corners of his mouth into a smile, sending

another thought to make the War Devil retreat its subduing aura.

The sinister aura and pressure were like a water tide rushing back to the sea, withdrawing into the War Devil's body. Within the time of one breath, the terrifying pressure enveloping the whole sacred place of the Three Gods Sect disappeared into thin air as if it'd never been there.

If there weren't someone with trembling legs and sweating, sitting on the ground, perhaps they would think that the previous pressure was just a hallucination.

"I want to have some words with precursor Tang," Shi Yan's look raked around, signaling that there were so many people in the surroundings.

Tang Yuan Nan held a serious face, swaying his hand, "Do whatever you need to do. Do not linger here."

Elders and disciples of the Three Gods Sect paled on hearing Tang Yuan Nan's words. They eyed Shi Yan with fear and went away.

"It's..." Waiting until everyone went out of sight, Shi Yan started to present his ideas with a solemn face.

At the same time...

The Divine Sword Land of Yuan Lo Sea, which used to be the ancestral hall of the Gu family, was now the temporary palace of Demon King Chi Yan.

The Divine Sword wasn't in the Ten Thousand Sword Peak anymore, but the divine Qi there was still pretty dense, which pleased people physically and mentally.

On the high summit, Demon King Chi Yan was sitting cross-legged. He was a member of the Black Scale Clan, his body majestic with a black scale armor. He was sitting like a high mountain ridge, giving people a feeling that they could only lift their heads up to look at him.

Since the Corpse Soul Bridge had been thoroughly connected, he hadn't used the body of Xiao Han Yi. He was now in the Endless Sea with his own body.

At this moment, Chi Yan suddenly opened his eyes, and his pupils sparked with strange beams of light.

"Such a powerful force."

He muttered as his hands cast an odd seal formation. Numerous dots of light radiated from the seal, just like he was letting his Soul Consciousness run to Yuan Luo Sea.

Not long after that, ten beams of brilliance shot out from his fingers, entering wholly into the seal formation.

Inside the seal, a strange, sacred place on the seabed, which was covered with some barrier, appeared and then disappeared.

Chi Yan's eyes brightened. He withdrew the seal formation and then frowned. "It's the sacred place of the Three Gods Sect. Seems like something strange happened there. Did Ouyang Luo Shang demonstrate that formidable strength? No, it's not true. That evil force doesn't go the same way as the cold and clear moonlight on that woman's body."

Chi Yan furrowed his brows in contemplation.

Swoosh!

A foreign lightning shot from afar towards his position.

Chi Yan's eyes shot out divine lights while whispering, "The Soul Consciousness Spear of Bo Xun." He extended his arm and snatched. A giant hand appeared in the void, seizing that Soul Consciousness Spear.

Chi Yan felt it for a while and then suddenly got up, stepping forward. It was like he had crossed the space. Within only one step, he had left the Divine Sword Island to the location of the Three Gods Sect's Sun, Moon, Star Islands.

The Snow Dragon Island.

Demon King Bo Xun released a flow of Soul Consciousness, then turned into a dark, gloomy ghostly light, shooting towards the Sun, Moon, Star Islands.

The two Great Demon Kings understood each other well as they didn't beat the drum to summon warriors of the demon tribes and just acted alone. They seemed to spot something, gliding through the space.

"What's happened?"

At the foot of the Snow Dragon Mountain, Yu Rou of the White Wing Clan watched the ghostly light shoot away. Doubts flooded her charming face. "It's been a long time since Master Bo Xun got out from his place. He left without leaving any words. Is something big happening?"

Di Shan of the Black Wing Clan kept his cold face while looking at the general direction where Bo Xun disappeared, shaking his head. "Don't know."

"Something's strange," Yu Rou knitted her eyebrows. "If there were a fight with the enemies out there, he would call us. But he's just left without saying anything. It should be something he found. Is it related to the Three Gods Sect? I know they're looking for the sacred land of the Three Gods Sect in the sea. Recently, they got some clues. Perhaps, they have finally located the correct location?"

Di Shan still shook his head, "I don't know."

Undersea, the Three Gods Sect's sacred place.

Suddenly, the Three Gods Sect's barrier that kept the seawater out sparkled with countless dots of light. Moonlight, starlight, and sunlight all shone on it.

# Chapter 478: Those upholding justice will find help everywhere

---

Ouyang Luo Shang and Tang Yuan Nan discolored at the same time.

The change of the outside barrier made them realize something. Many disciples of the Three Gods Sect were terrified, looking at the barrier with fear on their faces.

Shi Yan didn't know what was happening. Together with the Three Gods Sect's members, he looked at the barrier with a puzzled face.

He was a little bit surprised, asking Tang Yuan Nan, "Precursor Tang, what's happening?"

"They found us," Tang Yuan Nan's countenance was solemn. "Ever since they came, Demon Kings Chi Yan and Bo Xun have been looking for the Three Gods Sect's sacred place. The barrier outside our sacred place could prevent all soul consciousness probes. Although Bo Xun and Chi Yan have the deep understanding of esoteric teachings, they could hardly cover this place with their soul consciousness."

"How about now?"

"Your puppet has released a very formidable surging energy that even this barrier couldn't hide." Tang Yuan Nan forced a smile. "Bo Xun and Chi Yan all have divine abilities, and now their real bodies are in the Yuan Luo Sea, too. Within this short distance, they can sense it."

"Ah."

Shi Yan changed his face, having regret inside. "I'm sorry. I didn't know it. I was careless this time."

"It's useless saying sorry," Ouyang Luo Shang made a quick



decision. "There're many disciples with low realms in the sacred place. If we let Bo Xun and Chi Yan intrude, they will destroy the sacred place and these weak disciples wouldn't survive."

"What do we do now?" Shi Yan was embarrassed.

"Will this puppet be able to fight off the powers of the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors?" Ouyang Luo Shang asked in a serious tone.

"I'm certain about that."

"Good then. We now go to the Sun Island and wait for them. We are the targets of the two Great Demon Kings. If we leave the sacred place, they won't go there to find us." Ouyang Luo Shang immediately arranged. "Get out right now. We shall wait for the two Great Demon Kings on the Sun Island."

Tang Yuan Nan nodded.

Shi Yan said, "Good."

The three of them then moved to the Teleportation Formation in the middle of the sacred place. When they stood firmly, Tang Yuan Nan activated the formation immediately. A bunch of light sparkled when they disappeared. A second later, they appeared on the Sun Island.

After experiencing the great change one year ago, the prosperous Sun Island was now left with collapsed walls and weeds. Even the Divine Temple was now a pile of debris.

The three of them went to the Sacred Mount which had many hot springs. They didn't cover their auras, waiting for the Demon King's soul consciousness to find them.

Two eccentric surging beams of soul consciousness covered Sun Island right when they disclosed themselves. These beams of surging soul consciousness were like rippling water, probing the whole island.

It seemed that the two great Demon Kings had never given up the Sun Island.

"I think the two Great Demon Kings will both come here soon." Ouyang Luo Shang's tone didn't have any fear, calmly comforting those around her. "They are in a hurry this time. I think they won't bring hotshots from the Demon Tribes. As long as your puppet can deal with a Demon King, I can lengthen the time. We will wait until the change of the earth-shaking powers calls the attention of the hotshots in the adjacent sea areas. I think Cao Qiu Dao and the others won't stay still and would join us."

Shi Yan couldn't help frown his eyes hearing her mention Cao Qiu Dao. "Even if Cao Qiu Dao comes, he won't help us. I had killed Zuo Yue Feng. Perhaps he would come here to deal with me."

"Cao Qiu Dao won't be that narrow-minded. He knows about the greater picture." Ouyang Luo Shang shook her head. "He sure knows who our main enemies are. If something happens to me, the balance of the Endless Sea will be broken. At that time, the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers will take the upper hand. I think it's not what he wants to see."

"I don't trust him."

Shi Yan contemplated for a while then flew out to the sea. He told the War Devil to get into the water and release its intimidating earth-destroying aura from there.

"What are you doing?"

Tang Yuan Nan was puzzled.

Previously, Shi Yan hadn't told him anything before they found the change outside the barrier. Thus, they didn't know the agreement between Shi Yan and Nu Lang, the peerless, number one hotshot of the Sea Tribes.

"The Black Flood Dragon Clan on the seabed isn't far from here. With Nu Lang's cultivation realm, he sure can sense the aura of the

War Devil." Shi Yan didn't hide the information. "As long as Nu Lang finds it, he will come. When Nu Lang joins us, we will be more certain."

"Nu Lang?"

Ouyang Luo Shang and Tang Yuan Nan were astounded.

Although their activities happened mainly on the land, the name of the number one hotshot of the Sea Tribes was like thunder in their ears for a long time ago.

Nu Lang, the warrior who was at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, had guarded the seabed for years. Even Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian didn't dare to extend their tentacles to the seabed. These points showed how dangerous Nu Lang was.

"You and Nu Lang know each other?" Tang Yuan Nan asked with astonishment.

"Yes," Shi Yan smiled, "Nu Lang and I just have an agreement. He and Yin Hui from the Silver Shark Clan will help me deal with the Dark Dwellers in Kyara Sea. However, it seems it didn't go as we planned. I didn't expect that my trip to Yuan Luo Sea would get the two Great Demon Kings on their nerves. I can only notify Nu Lang earlier than expected."

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang both had an extremely strange complexion hearing his words.

Over hundreds of years, the Sea Tribes had never had good feelings towards people on the sea surface. That year, when Yang Tian Emperor visited the seabed personally, Nu Lang wasn't friendly at all. If the Yang family in Barren City hadn't helped the Sea Tribes a lot, Nu Lang would have soon taken action.

Even Yang Tian Emperor at his peak couldn't have a friendship with Nu Lang, how could he do that? And not just Nu Lang, according to him, even Yin Hui, an unruly warrior, seemed to have become a good friend of his. What happened after all?

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang eyed Shi Yan suspiciously, their eyes filled with surprise.

"I'll explain later. We don't have time now, so I can't tell many things." Shi Yan smiled. "With Nu Lang's presence, even if Cao Qiu Dao comes, we don't need to worry about him."

"If he's willing to help, the Endless Sea can be steadied." Tang Yuan Nan said, "The forces of the Sea Tribes aren't weaker than any forces of the Dark Dwellers or the Demon Dwellers. They're even stronger. If the Sea Tribes aid us and join hands with the human race, the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers won't dare to swagger in Endless Sea."

"Nu Lang won't join hands with the human race. He just has an agreement with me." Shi Yan's face was arrogant, smiling coldly. "Those trash Gu Xiao, Qing Ming couldn't invite Nu Lang to join them. If they did, it would be a big surprise!"

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang were stunned. Although Shi Yan had revealed his arrogance by chance, the two of them recognized that he had a solid backup.

At this moment, the two of them finally realized the silent, great change that happened in the Endless Sea that could tilt the sky or dip the earth due to Shi Yan's appearance.

Stroking the Blood Vein Ring, Shi Yan contacted the Ring Spirit.

Soon, three living beings including the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the Earth Flame flew out from the ring, disappearing into the Profound Qi halo in his abdomen.

In just a flash, Shi Yan, who had only a Sky Realm cultivation base, could release an extremely violent surging energy.

It could be compared to a spirit Realm warrior!

"Come out!"

Shi Yan shouted. The mysterious giant sword turned into a blood

beam that shot out from the Blood Vein Ring, falling into his palm.

When the giant sword touched his palm, the sinister, brutal aura on his body became denser.

Behind him stood the War Devil. When it saw the mysterious giant sword appear, blood light flashed in its dark pupils, revealing a trace of respect.

The King of Demonic Insects, a level eight beast, and the Devouring Gold Silkworm also flew out, perching on his right and left shoulder respectively. Their small eyes sparkled with vicious light.

These series of changes happened in a flash.

In just a blink, Shi Yan had fused three living beings, hauled out the mysterious giant sword, and summoned the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm. The murderous aura on his body soared as he now had the formidable power to confront the Spirit Realm warriors.

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang dropped their jaws in awe.

"Truly a monster!"

Tang Yuan Nan was dumbstruck for a long while. He suddenly beamed a forced smile and shook his head. "You fella, you aren't human. With the Second Sky of Sky Realm, you can possess such abilities and backups. No wonder why you dare to come to Yuan Luo Sea alone. You don't even bat an eye on hearing that the Demon Kings are coming!"

Tang Yuan Nan had a profound knowledge; of course, he could see the level of the King of Demonic Insects and how dangerous the Metal Class Devouring Gold Silkworm was. With these supports, Shi Yan's arrogance became natural in his eyes.

Even Ouyang Luo Shang couldn't help but nod her head and exclaim, "Worth being the descendant of Gods."

"What?"

Shi Yan didn't care about these two, just frowned while looking at the Tuta Sea. He urged his Soul Consciousness to sense, then said surprisingly, "Ha, interesting."

From the response echoed from Tuta Sea, he recognized a familiar aura. It was the Ten-thousand-year King Corpse.

After he had borrowed the powers of the three living beings, his senses were enhanced widely. The aura he had released had caught the attention of the Ten-thousand-year King Corpse in the Corpse God Sect, who had a connection with him. It then sent him a friendly thought and asked, "What's happened to you? Need help?"

"If possible, come to me," He pressed his soul consciousness into a beam and tried to send it away.

The Corpse God Sect was situated next to the Tuta Sea, adjacent to Huan Luo Sea, and not too far from the Sun Island. Not long after he had sent his soul consciousness, he received a response. "Will be there immediately."

"What's going on?" Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang asked as they saw him startle.

"Haha, I didn't expect that my accidental deeds that year pay me with a good friendship." Shi Yan smiled cheerily. "The Ten-thousand-year King Corpse of the Corpse God Sect sent me a message that it would come to help."

"Ah!"

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang couldn't help but scream simultaneously.

"You even have a friendship with the King Corpse?" Tang Yuan Nan rubbed his face, thinking that the surprises Shi Yan brought him today were like tsunamis, striking him one after another. He couldn't help it.

"Yeah, a little connection," Shi Yan felt joyful. "These strange living beings remember favors and know how to repay. Just give them a hand, and they will remember it. From this aspect, they are much better than ordinary humans."

Ouyang Luo Shang looked at him but didn't say anything.

# Chapter 479: Fulfill expectations

---

What should be arranged had been arranged. What they could do now was just wait.

Standing on the Sun Island, Shi Yan, Ouyang Luo Shang, and Tang Yuan Nan wore solemn faces, looking at the expanding ghostly clouds in the sky. They knew that the two Great Demon Kings were about to arrive.

Indeed, not long after that, two figures appeared on the ghostly clouds.

In just a blink of an eye, those two figures descended on the Sun Island, standing in front of Shi Yan and the others.

The Demon Kings Chi Yan and Bo Xun, the two peak warriors of the Demon Area, had finally arrived at the Sun Island. Chi Yan came from the Black Scale Clan, and Bo Xun came from the Dragon Horn Clan. They were both three meters tall with hefty builds. Intimidating surging energies were rippling from their bodies.

The main characters had arrived.

After they had come, Chi Yan glared at Shi Yan and laughed with a surprised face. "Didn't expect you're here, too."

Bo Xun was bewildered for a while, his eye cold and gloomy. "You are the brat that hurt Mo Qi Ta?"

Shi Yan frowned and nodded, "It's true."

"Good then," Bo Xun harrumphed. "The Three Gods Sect has been hiding in the sea for long. Well, this time that you dare to come out, I assumed you are tired of being alive. If the Three Gods Sect surrenders, I will let you control the territory that belongs to you. But if you go against us, today, I'll erase the name of the Gods Sect from the Endless Sea."

"Stop babbling," Ouyang Luo Shang said, "If you want to



eradicate the Three Gods Sect, let's see if the two Demon Kings here have good taste or not."

"The terrific aura that came out from the sea doesn't belong to you." Chi Yan was still cautious, observing everywhere; he seemed to be trying to find out the targets. However, he couldn't see anything abnormal. He was more surprised. "Who did that?"

The War Devil had hidden its aura, and the surging energy of its body had disappeared. Even the two Great Demon Kings couldn't figure it out.

This showed that although the War Devil was just a black iron puppet, it had something special. Even the Demon Kings who had the Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base couldn't find it, which revealed the extraordinary features of the puppet.

"Who?" Shi Yan curled his lips into a smile. "You're too sensitive. There're so many things in the Endless Sea that you don't know of. Do you think that you could embrace everything, and know every single event in the Endless Sea with just a flicker of your thoughts?"

Although Nu Lang and the King Corpse hadn't come yet, he wasn't anxious, just babbling with the two great Demon Kings.

The more time he could extend, the better his situation would be. Thus, he didn't hurry to take action, just waiting to see if he could talk more.

No matter it was Nu Lang or the King Corpse, they all had the formidable powers. If they urged all their strength to fly there, they could arrive at the Sun Island not long afterward. If he could seize the chance, perhaps he didn't need to utilize all of his forces and just borrow the powers from Nu Lang and the King Corpse to oppress the two Great Demon Kings.

"Cao Qiu Dao's in the Tuta Sea. He's always paying attention to things here. If he comes here, it's going to be tough for us then."

Chi Yan was calm, as he said with frowning brows, "This battle shouldn't go on for too long."

Bo Xun understood the matter well.

Right after that, thick clusters of black clouds drifted over, covering the whole Sun Island in just a blink.

The light at twilight couldn't pierce through those ghostly clouds.

The light on the Sun Island dimmed. A huge pressure pressed down from the ghostly clouds, just like a big mountain pounding on the hearts of Shi Yan's group.

When the ghostly clouds pressed down, Demon King Bo Xun took action first. He opened his mouth and spurted out ghostly spheres, each of them pitch-black and carrying a rippling energy like water waves.

Ten ghostly spheres lined up, forming a bizarre ghost formation. Loud impacts constantly arose from it.

Under the noisy impact, some shattered structures in the Sun Island were trembling as they couldn't bear the pressure, about to collapse.

The ten ghostly spheres circled, taking in the energy of the ghostly clouds in the sky. Their size was increased from fist-size to a human head size. At the same time, the rippling energy inside the spheres was vibrating magically. It seemed like they had an evil force that could seal the whole space.

BOOM!

All of a sudden, ten ghostly spheres burst off.

Beams of ghost light spluttered out from the inside, weaving a black cocoon covering the sky over the Sun Island.

The earth and heaven essence Qi gathering year-round on the Sun Island seemed to be confined directly, unable to move with the

wind anymore. Under that massive cocoon, the heaven and earth essence Qi was dispersing, discharging from the Sun Island.

Demon tribes didn't need to borrow the essence Qi from earth and heaven. Bo Xun had washed away the essence Qi here to prevent Shi Yan and his group from using it to enhance their strengths.

The thick, ghostly clouds in the sky hindered the moonlight, sunlight, and starlight, preventing them from continually supplying to the three Great Martial Spirits of Sun, Moon and Star.

Next, Chi Yan took action.

Both of his hands were pulling something from the void. Then, a giant demonic dragon was pulled down from the ghostly cloud. This demonic dragon was made from his energy, looked true to life, and hiding a terrifying surging energy in its body.

He had pulled down twelve demonic dragons in total. Each four of them grouped, attacking Shi Yan and the others separately.

"Fight!"

Shi Yan shouted. The eyes on the mysterious giant sword in his hands opened. At the same time, a strong, evil world-destroying aura gushed out from the War Devil standing behind him all of a sudden.

Dark halo bloomed on the black iron body of the War Devil. His dark heart pounded as he extended one arm, snatching the oncoming demonic dragon.

Chi Yan and Bo Xun had their eyes lit up, looking at the War Devil.

At this moment, no one dared to be careless watching the aura expand from the War Devil. It even frightened the Demon Kings.

The War Devil stretched its arms. The dark light blinked in its palm, and a large, pitch black hole appeared. It seemed to be able

to devour all the light, and was like the most mysterious black hole in the galaxy that could even drag all the stars in.

The four demonic dragons plunging to Shi Yan were wiggling crazily even before they could reach him. The dark hole on the War Devil's palms was enlarging. Within three seconds, it expanded to the size of the abyss in hell, flying out from the War Devil's palms like a giant mouth of a ferocious beast, swallowing the four demonic dragons.

The four demonic dragons struggled in the air in an attempt to get rid of the devouring force of the dark hole. However, the more they moved, the closer to the hole they got. Eventually, the four demonic dragons had turned into four beams of dark light, disappearing into the pitch black hole of the War Devil.

"What foreign thing is that!"

Chi Yan discolored. Looking at the War Devil, his face stiffened.

Before he came here, he didn't expect to meet such a bizarre thing. It could release a tremendous aura, and it seemed to have intellect. This made him instinctively tense.

"Go!"

Shi Yan pointed to Chi Yan, his face cold. "Use all forces to kill him!"

One year ago, Chi Yan had attached to the flesh body of Xiao Han Yi, crossing the void to enter the Sun Island. At that time, he had savaged Xia Shen Chuan and killed Linda within a short period.

That was a disastrous defeat.

He could only open his eyes and see Xia Shen Chuan and Linda get killed without being able to do anything. Chi Yan had taught him what the so-called hopelessness was.

Also, after that battle, he was more determined, walking on the training path to thrive his powers. He had to make himself

stronger at any cost not wasting even a fraction of a second as he focused on his cultivation, which would enable him to take revenge one day.

Today, it was the same place – the Sun Island, and the same enemy.

However, today was different from one year ago. Today, his cultivation base was equal to the Spirit Realm. He had the giant mysterious sword, the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm.

And the War Devil.

In this battle, he had to take back the humiliation he had suffered that day from the one who initiated it.

The War Devil acted as ordered.

Its body was like a beam of dark light, appearing in front of Demon King Bo Xun in just a flash. Dark light bloomed on its black iron armor. An earth-destructing aura covered the entire Yuan Luo Sea from the puppet.

Chi Yan wore a stony face. He couldn't help but be more cautious, pouring out all of his powers to counter the War Devil.

Two dark lights intertwined above the Sun Island. Wherever they passed, land slid, and the earth split apart.

Although the War Devil was just a chunk of iron, its reflexes were fast as lightning, with the aura like a rainbow. Unexpectedly, it could perform all kinds of mysterious martial arts that could hardly be predicted. Under the urge of its dark heart, the dark energy on its body was torrential as it was playing hard on Chi Yan without falling into a disadvantage.

Holding the giant sword, Shi Yan was calm, watching the War Devil and Chi Yan fight. He cracked a cold smile while seeing mountains get leveled where the other two passed by.

The War Devil didn't fail him.

Even Demon King Chi Yan couldn't gain the upper hand while fighting against the War Devil.

All kinds of earth-shaking attacks from Chi Yan were blocked by the black armor on the puppet. At the same time, the armor didn't have any signs of being cracked or broken. Quite the contrary, dark light radiating on it became more dazzling, revealing a solid cold aura.

"This puppet follows your orders?" Bo Xun didn't take action yet. He frowned, looking at the War Devil and Chi Yan fighting. Ghost light shone from his pupils like lanterns that could take people's souls away.

"It's true," nodded Shi Yan callously.

"Then I have to kill you first."

A light crossed over Bo Xun's eyes as he swung his left arm. A giant white claw appeared in the sky. It was transparent like white jade, with patterns that looked like its veins where strange energy was moving. The white claw was like a mountain with its five fingers as five hooks, pressing down on Shi Yan.

# Chapter 480: Showing remarkable ability

---

"Such a good thought!"

The Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang slightly shouted. The moonlight on her body condensed into a light column in front of her.

In a flash, that column turned into a moonlight armor. The armor was like the still water in the pond under the moonlight, directly impacting against the giant white claw from Bo Xun.

BANG!

Like a collapsing mountain, countless black and white light dots shot out, while the whole Sun Island trembled.

"The Great Sunlight Cover!"

Sun God Tang Yuan Nan roared. The scorching solar heat turned into fiery flames, forming a blazing halo reaching to Bo Xun.

"Little tricks!" Bo Xun harrumphed. A dark green spirit snake shot out from his sleeve. The snake was icy cold as cold air emitted from its entire body. It opened the mouth and nipped at the Great Sunlight Cover. Numerous gloomy energy waves rippled, attacking the Great Sunlight Cover and dissolving its fiery power.

Shi Yan kept his cold face, watching the Moon God and the Sun God taking action. But he wasn't in a hurry, just coldly staring at Bo Xun.

Thick bony thorns suddenly jutted out from behind Bo Xun. Thousands of thorns combined, forming a white bone throne, on which Bo Xun sat down. Giant skulls emerged from his sleeves as countless ghosts appeared inside the skulls. They were baring their fangs and claws, releasing their evil soul attacks.

Skulls lined up in the sky, turning into a massive skull that was as big as a mountain. This skull was snow-white, around hundreds

of meters tall. It suddenly pounded down on Shi Yan with a malicious, ghostly aura.

The soul-terminating surging spirit from the pupils of the giant skull directly aimed at Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan was calmer realizing that the opponent was using soul attacks to face him. He stood still, waiting for this surging spirit to enter his body.

Waves of soul-destroying Soul Consciousness entered his Sea of Consciousness like lightning. However, they got covered in flames and were burned down to ashes before they could perform their deeds.

Bo Xun was trembling as a halo flickered in his eyes. Apparently, his Soul Consciousness was damaged.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was the sharp weapon that could destroy all kinds of souls or Soul Consciousness. As long as it stayed hidden inside Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, he didn't need to worry about the eradicating Soul Consciousness.

Bo Xun wasn't an exception.

When Bo Xun's Soul Consciousness was burned down, Shi Yan suddenly remembered Yi Tian Mo and his friends, and his face turned strange.

Only the group of Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan knew about the existence of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame on his body. If Bo Xun had known about the flame, he wouldn't have been reckless in using a soul attack, leading to his Soul Consciousness getting damaged.

Thus, he knew that Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan hadn't disclosed his situation to Bo Xun.

Since their tribes were clamped between Chi Yan and Bo Xun, Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan had to give in. Shi Yan had been enraged at that time, but later when he thought about it, he understood they



had their difficulties. One year ago, when he had come close to the Snow Dragon Island, the three of Yi Tian Mo's group had noticed his aura. He then asked Di Shan and Yu Rou to warn him not to enter the Snow Dragon Island due to the presence of Bo Xun.

Also, thanks to his face, Yi Tian Mo, and Di Shan had discreetly released He Qing Man.

These small details showed him that Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo, and the others had to comply with the demon tribes because of the temporary difficulties, but they still remembered him as their old master. They didn't turn their back on him or disclose his secrets.

He frowned while pondering. Shi Yan felt a little bit better when he knew that Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo weren't some sorts of traitors. The knot in his heart was untied.

"You can erase my Soul Consciousness!"

Suddenly, Bo Xun grinned fiendishly, faced up the sky and shouted. "Even Yang Tian Emperor didn't have this ability that year. You're just a junior from the Yang family, but you do have peculiar abilities. Seems like I have to kill you today. If I don't eradicate you today, you will become another Yang Tian Emperor. Kid, you can be proud!"

Then, a devil bell flew out from Bo Xun's sleeve, which had many carvings of ancient demonic beasts and scriptures. Thick aura from the Demon Area was released, seeming to lead to a strange change in the devil aura.

The Devil Bell soared to the sky, and the Devil aura over the Sun Island started to surge violently, torrentially gathering towards it. Absorbing the devil aura, the bell gradually swelled, while the small ancient carvings on the bell became clearer. Those beasts looked ferocious, just like they were about to fly out from the Devil Bell.

The Devil Bell pressed down from above Shi Yan's and the others'

heads, releasing seven layers of devil light. Each layer had the phantom of an ancient demonic beast, emanating the ominous aura of the threatening demonic beasts in the primitive era.

Seven layers of devil light slowly pushed down like seven massive boards. The phantoms of demonic beasts inside the light were showing claws and fangs, shrieking with a terrifying aura.

An extremely heavy pressure covered his whole body; Shi Yan actually had a feeling of being pounded by a mountain as his body felt sluggish, unable to urge his powers.

The three alien things, including a giant white claw, a behemoth skull, and a Devil Bell released by Demon King Bo Xun, appeared on the sky of the Sun Island. They were all malicious, and Ouyang Luo Shang, Tang Yuan Nan, and Shi Yan couldn't help but put forth all of their powers to resist.

Ouyang Luo Shang was urging her moonlight armor constantly to parry the giant white claw, while Tang Yuan Nan was utilizing all of his forces to confront the massive skull. However, he seemed to be struggling powerlessly. With this situation, the skull would soon dominate him.

As Ouyang Luo Shang saw Tang Yuan Nan unable to endure any longer, in the void, she used the moonlight to condense a Moonlight Sacred Sword, distracting her mind to control it to aid Tang Yuan Nan. She could only prevent the skull from killing Tang Yuan Nan for a short time.

The giant white claw and the massive skull forced the Moon God and the Sun God to urge all of their powers to counter.

No matter what, Demon King Bo Xun was a strong warrior at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, who was the tyrant of the Demon Area for years. His powers were truly sky-piercing and earth-splitting, worth the name of the most ferocious slaughter in this world. Although Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang had the moonlight accumulated for thousands of years, she was at the First Sky of

Spirit Realm only. When joining hands with Tang Yuan Nan, they could only resist half of the power of Bo Xun.

They weren't free to care about that Devil Bell.

As the seven layers of devil light were pressing down, the pressure it brought had suffocated Shi Yan. Without the powers of the three living beings, he was afraid that his knees would go soft. Perhaps, he would be pushed face down on the ground and be unable to get on his feet again.

"I got this Devil Bell and the Unbounded Devil Blade from the chaotic basin of the space. Recently, I haven't encountered many strong characters that were worth using them against. It's your fortune to die under this bell." Bo Xun exaggerated, his face arrogant. Apparently, he didn't consider Shi Yan his match.

The devil light from the Devil Bell slowly pushed down, as the heavy pressure kept increasing.

Under such circumstances, Shi Yan still kept calm, not hurrying to make any counterattack while he kept pouring more energy into the mysterious giant sword.

This sword could slash a slit on the Unbounded Devil Blade, and could break a Sacred level treasure within one strike. It was absolutely one of the God level secret treasures that existed in this world. Although he hardly utilized all of the sharp powers of this sword, he believed that it did have the power to fight once with Bo Xun's Devil Bell.

But he should not hurry. He needed to accumulate powers sufficiently to bring out the best of the sword in this battle.

The devil light was still pushing down, but Shi Yan stood still, crazily pouring energy into the giant sword. The closed eyes opened one by one, and by now, half of the eyes on the giant sword were opened. All of a sudden, Shi Yan felt fatigue.

This was the sign of consuming too much power.

"It's now!" He shouted, as all of his spirit, Qi, and energy gathered at one point, jumping into the giant sword. A destructive aura burst out from the mysterious giant sword.

The giant sword pierced to the void, directly towards the devil light released by the Devil Bell.

Red eyes blinked on the giant sword, while the wild, evil, destructive aura was activated brutally on the giant sword. It drew a long, bloody rainbow in the air, slashing directly on the devil light.

Rumbling Rumbling Rumbling!

The rumbling noises echoed from the devil light. The phantoms of ancient demonic beasts were dissolved into countless light dots that shot everywhere on the Sun Island. Five out of seven layers of devil light emitted from the Devil Bell were torn apart.

The remaining two layers still pressed down, just like they had to kill Shi Yan at any cost.

Still not enough power.

Shi Yan sighed inside.

He knew that if he could gather enough energy, he could open all the eyes on the giant sword and that would boost the power of the mysterious sword to double. If he had done that, he believed that he could have broken the Devil Bell with only one slash.

Unfortunately, even if he had borrowed the external forces, he could hardly control the giant sword wholly, and couldn't bring out its best.

Seeing the two remaining layers of devil light pressing down, he couldn't help but watch them since he had already urged too much energy, and couldn't mobilize more at this moment.

Right at this moment, a roar came up from the seawater.

At that point, people could only see a colossal trident carrying a

humongous amount of seawater shooting towards the Devil Bell.

As the trident emerged from the sea, a sharp aura covered the entire Sun Island all of a sudden.

The explosive sound was created when the trident jabbed at the Devil Bell. Countless phantoms of ancient demonic beasts on the bell faded somehow.

Also, the two devil light layers pushing down on Shi Yan were scattered when the bell got hit. Seeing the trident, Shi Yan was shaken. He knew that the peerless warrior of the Sea Tribes had come.

"Who the hell are you?"

Bo Xun discolored, looking at the hefty man slowly emerging from the sea."

"Nu Lang."

"The patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan." Bo Xun was scared as he shouted, "What does it matter to you? Your Sea Tribes are also bullied by the human race. Why you want to help humans?"

"I'm not going to help the humans. I only aid Shi Yan himself." Nu Lang wore a calm face as he nodded at Shi Yan. "Facing those demon tribes, will our agreement still work?"

Shi Yan smiled and nodded, "Of course!"

# Chapter 481: Corpse Mount, Corpse Sea

---

As Nu Lang arrived, Shi Yan's danger was relieved.

Both of them were at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, so Nu Lang shouldn't bear much loss fighting against Bo Xun. At his debut, he had smashed the devil light emitted by the Evil Bell, which obliterated the threat Shi Yan was facing.

Shi Yan seized the chance and gathered the power in his body to ensure the energy his body needed.

Demon King Bo Xun got mad, his roar reverberating the whole Sun Island.

As they were all foreign tribes, Bo Xun assumed that Nu Lang was supposed to have the same resentment as him, and that he would treat the humans as their enemies. It was out of his expectations that Nu Lang came to help Shi Yan. Bo Xun found it hard to accept this.

"Human race is always hostile to alien races. The Sea Tribes are also alien races to them. They've oppressed you for thousands of years. At present, the human race's in danger. I don't need your help here. As long as you play cool and don't poke your nose in it, I can subdue the spirit of the human race. From now on, you Sea Tribes won't need to worry about humans taking action against you. Why don't you want it?"

Bo Xun's face was filled with a murderous aura while cold light sparkled in his eyes. He appeared to be annoyed.

Nu Lang wore a faint appearance, frowned and said coldly, "I've told you. I come here to aid Shi Yan. It doesn't mean that I want to cooperate with the human race."

"For this kid?" Bo Xun sneered. "What can he offer you? What makes you cover him like this?"

"He can give me something you can't." Nu Lang's eyes became

burning.

Just with a thought of the Life Original Fluid, which would guide his steps to the True God Realm, he couldn't hold his excitement. He'd been yearning for the True God Realm for a really long time! From the day he had entered the Spirit Realm, he'd held the hope that he could enter this realm one day.

Hundreds of years had passed while he always focused and tried his best for this goal. After he entered the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, he thought about it day and night, in the hope that he could break through soon.

Shi Yan's Life Original Fluid was magical. To him, it was the encounter he was dreaming about desperately. Compared to the Life Original Fluid, the future of the Endless Sea was nothing.

As long as he could reach the True God Realm, even if Nu Lang didn't swaggeringly invade the Great Sea Areas of the Endless Sea, his existence would be enough to shake anybody there. In the future, he could even take the Sea Tribes out of the Endless Sea, heading to a vaster world.

Only the True God Realm could help him achieve the wonderful future that he hadn't dared to dream of before.

"What did he offer you?" Bo Xun's face was cold. "What he can give you, I can, too."

"You can't," Nu Lang shook his head and smiled. "Stop talking nonsense. If you want to touch Shi Yan, forgive me, fella, but I won't just stand and stare. I came here from the seabed to protect him, to ensure that he would have not even a single wound."

"So, you're determined to protect him?"

"True."

Bo Xun grinned fiendishly and roared, "Then don't blame me for showing no mercy. I want to see the peerless techniques of the Sea Tribes!"

Then, Bo Xun opened his mouth, spurting out a devil light which was immediately absorbed by the Devil Bell. A soul oppressing sound echoed from the bell from time to time. It looked like many Demon Gods had been revived from the antiquity time. These disorderly waves of wild, ghostly sounds seemed to drag people into the Demon Area, enchant them and keep them from staying conscious.

At the same time, Bo Xun soared up from his white bone throne as sharp beams of light shot out from his five fingers.

These beams shot over and intruded the giant bone claw and the skull in the sky, which made the surging energy on these two colossuses more intimidating.

Bo Xun had urged all of his powers, yet Nu Lang wasn't afraid.

He flung the trident in his hand. Suddenly, dozens of transparent water monsters jutted out from the sea around the area. They had a serpentine shape, and were condensed from the sea water. They were towering the area like sky pillars, emitting the intent domain of the ocean, accommodating everything. The ten water monsters were like the flickering candles in the wind, rocketing from the sea and striking towards the giant white bone claw and the skull.

Abruptly, all of the terrifying surging energy and the ghostly cloud above the Sun Island were smashed broken. The barrier that confined the earth and heaven essence Qi had vanished into thin air.

These ten towering water monsters swayed, fighting with the bone claw and the skull. Nu Lang turned himself into a strong wave, holding the trident to battle with Bo Xun.

Wind and cloud discolored while the Earth and firmament darkened. Furious surging energy tore the space, making the heaven and earth forces in the Sun Island change, radiating a brilliant light.



Tsunamis constantly raged in the surrounding area. The air was extruded while making a strange hissing noise. Wherever these beams of light crossed, they left deep holes in the land, which looked really exaggerated.

As Nu Lang had arrived, not only did he release Shi Yan, but also freed Ouyang Luo Shang and Tang Yuan Nan.

The giant white bone claw and the skull were aimed at Nu Lang only, not having more tricks to deal with the other two. This gave them time to breathe and recovered the energy that they had consumed.

"What did this boy do to have Nu Lang's protection?" Tang Yuan Nan was suspicious, walking to him. He forced a smile. "I have found that I can't understand you lately."

"Nu Lang's really extraordinary. His fame as the number one warrior of the Sea Tribes is real." Ouyang Luo Shang exclaimed slightly, then said again, "Bo Xun has a subtle, mysterious powers. The rumor's true though. I used to think that I had absorbed the moonlight for a thousand years, which should enable me to deal with Bo Xun without falling into a disadvantage. But today, I know that if Bo Xun urges all of his powers, I'm no match for him."

"Bo Xun's been famous for years. Of course, he isn't a typical person." Tang Yuan Nan looked solemn. "In the Endless Sea, only Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Tian Emperor, and Yang Yi Tian have the power to battle with him. Besides them, the others could only hold it for a certain period. It's impossible to gain the upper hand from the two Great Demon Kings."

"How about the King Corpse?" Shi Yan was bewildered for a while and then asked.

"One Corpse King isn't the Demon Kings' opponent."

Tang Yuan Nan mused as if he was considering, then said, "Anyway, if the two King Corpses join hands, they would be able to

deal with one Demon King."

His face went shocked, looking at Shi Yan. "Hey, I heard that one of the King Corpses gained his intellect and his well-being thanks to the relationship with you. Is it true?"

Smiling and nodding, Shi Yan didn't want to conceal. "Yeah, a freak combination of factors. I don't know what happened, but I do have a subtle soul connection with the King Corpse. Haha, it's weird for me too. I didn't expect that I could vaguely sense the aura of the King Corpse from this far distance."

"Since the two King Corpses have gained their intellect and consciousness of their beings, they became so dangerous. They've taken the Corpse God Sect and snatched the tyrant role of Qing Ming." Tang Yuan Nan was more serious. "You should pay attention. The powers of the King Corpses have been enhanced thoroughly. When dealing with them, don't be careless."

"Harrumph. Do you really think that we're the same as humans?"

Right at this moment, a sharp voice arose from the sea.

A coffin flew up from the water. Standing on the coffin was a hairy King Corpse with sharp hands. He was looking at Tang Yuan Nan with brutish eyes. Under his attentive gaze, Tang Yuan Nan was embarrassed, clasped his fist and greeted. "I spoke thoughtlessly."

Another coffin appeared from the cloud. Another King Corpse stood there as the coffin was slowly descending.

King Corpses could use the powers of the five elements even if they were in the sky or underground; nothing was beyond their ability. The seawater in the Endless Sea was also one of their sharp weapons.

As the two King Corpses arrived, they all heard what Tang Yuan Nan said, and were staring at him wickedly.

The King Corpse in the sky had calm eyes, looking more human.

He was the King Corpse that had the direct connection with Shi Yan. After he landed, he smiled amicably at Shi Yan. Although the smile on his hairy face was horrible, everybody could see his good will.

"Thanks for coming," Shi Yan smiled to them and said in a friendly manner. "This matter has nothing to do with you guys."

"Without you, we would still be the slaves of the Three Gods Sect, never having a chance to make a turn." The King Corpse from the sky beamed a smile. "We appreciate you a lot. The aura on your body's something we like, too. You gave us a big favor, so we should pay you back. It's what we should do."

The other King Corpse didn't have a human face. He still looked pretty brute, his eyes callous. He seemed unable to control his emotions well. However, he was calm, looking at Shi Yan with curiosity. A strange light flashed in his eyes.

"I'm called Corpse Mount, and he's called Corpse Sea. Corpse Sea hasn't gained full consciousness yet, so he can't control himself well. We need you to help him a bit." The King Corpse Shi Yan knew pointed at himself to introduce his name, and then introduced the other.

This was the first time the King Corpses introduced their names to the others.

Shi Yan was surprised for a while. He didn't expect that these two King Corpses would have names. Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, odd names. Anyway, they weren't human, so it was already good if they could name themselves. One shouldn't ask for more.

"The same way?" Shi Yan pondered, frowned and asked.

Corpse Mount nodded, "Yes, that way." He then shifted his look to Corpse Sea. "Don't worry. His method's good for us. You just need to feel it."

Apparently, Corpse Mount was the boss. Under his comforting

words, Corpse Sea nodded simple-heartedly. His brutal, bloodthirsty eyes foolishly looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's mind was struck. Under the other's look, he unexpectedly had the thought of slaughtering.

Forcefully pressing down the dark desire in this mind, he came to Corpse Sea. Next, he urged the energy in his body, condensed a Life Seal and put it on Corpse Sea's chest. Seven layers of the Seal piled up, disappearing into Corpse Sea in just a blink of an eye. Strange light expanded all over his body.

The chaotic thoughts in Corpse Sea's brain were stabilized by the help of the Life Seal, becoming magically tranquil.

Corpse Sea's bloodthirsty eyes gradually calmed down. The aura of death on his body was also diluted to a great extent. This gave people a human-like feeling, really magical.

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang were stunned on watching the scene.

"What kind of a martial technique is that?" Tang Yuan Nan let out a sigh. "This doesn't belong to the Three Gods Sect, neither the Yang family. Kid, where did you learn it?"

Shi Yan smiled but didn't answer, just kept quiet, looking at the change in Corpse Sea.

## Chapter 482: Wind and clouds discolor

---

After Corpse Sea got the Life Seal, he was like an enraged beast turning into a nice lamb. The Life Seal was changing his body, adjusting his chaotic conscious and waking him from the realm of insanity.

If a beast could calm down and reason with human intellect, its intimidating features would be enhanced incredibly.

Everybody knew that.

Corpse Sea's change made Tang Yuan Nan, and Ouyang Luo Shang astounded. The Life Seal Shi Yan had performed was mysterious beyond anything they had ever seen before. This sort of a martial technique didn't belong to the Three Gods Sect, neither the Yangs. This shocked and frightened the two a lot.

As for the doubts of these two, Shi Yan didn't want to explain. He just smiled and watched Corpse Sea.

Corpse Sea restored his calmness not long after that, becoming like Corpse Mount. His wild eyes had the trace of excitement he had just been familiar with. Next, he glanced at Corpse Mount, nodded to him and then shifted his look to Shi Yan, his eyes grateful. "Thank you."

Corpse Sea spoke up in human language.

Shi Yan was shaken, and burst out laughing. "Good then. Seems you've successfully changed your fate. From now on, you can separate yourself from your fellows. You're smarter and more conscious than them now, and know how to communicate with humans. I think your future will be brighter, not as simple as what you have now."

The ten-thousand-years old King Corpses, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, had their eyes brightened with blooming light.

"What can we help you with?" asked Corpse Mount all of a

sudden.

Shi Yan looked at the battle between Bo Xun and Nu Lang. His face darkened. "I heard that Bo Xun used to visit your Corpse God Sect. He had talked to you guys."

"Yeah. He's a dangerous fella. Last time, Corpse Sea and I had to join forces to somehow resist him." Corpse Mount rose up as the fierce fighting will emitted from his whole body. He seemed to want to join Nu Lang in fighting Bo Xun to take revenge.

As Shi Yan sensed the change of the aura on his body, he curled his lips. "I hope you can deal with him."

He pointed at Bo Xun. The two King Corpses nodded simultaneously.

They didn't wait for Shi Yan's order and turned into two brilliant beams of light, striking directly towards Bo Xun.

The King Corpses hovered in the air, as five-element powers vehemently spread out from their bodies. The light of the metal, wood, water, fire, and earth elements radiated from them, turning into brilliant five-element halos, which could seal and lock any creatures, shooting directly towards Bo Xun.

When Bo Xun fought with Nu Lang alone, their powers were equal, and no one could gain the upper hand from the other. But since the two King Corpses had joined their battle, Bo Xun received double the pressure. He couldn't help but urge all of his tricks to defend. The giant white bone claw, the skull, and the Devil Bell were retrieved to surround him, continually releasing devil halos to prevent Nu Lang and the King Corpses from getting close to him.

Bo Xun was really strong, but Nu Lang and the King Corpse weren't weak either. The combined force of the three of them had completely stopped Bo Xun, clamping him and pushing him into a difficult situation.

On the other side, the War Devil was entangling with Demon King Chi Yan.

The black iron body of War Devil had no flaws. Any martial techniques or magical powers struck on the War Devil couldn't really hurt him.

The War Devil knew how to utilize all kinds of deep understanding abilities of his body. While he was taking action, darkness covered everything. Usually, black holes appeared on his body that swallowed everything, including a big part of Chi Yan's power. This made Chi Yan no threat for him at all.

War Devil alone was pushing Chi Yan into difficulty, while the latter was trying to use many kinds of different powers to find something that could deprive the fighting ability of the War Devil.

However, he made no progress after a long while.

The War Devil not only had the inexplicably strong body, but a strange, magical soul, which had the features of a black hole. It could swallow all kinds of soul energies that Chi Yan released. Chi Yan's soul attacks fell into the War Devil's body like a stone falling into the vast sea, making a small ripple before disappearing forever.

The two great Demon Kings arrived at the Sun Island to destroy the Sun, Moon, Star Gods. But War Devil, Nu Lang, and the King Corpses were hindering them, forcing them to defend in the Sun Island without a chance to break out.

The energy of heaven and earth changed greatly while earth-shaking forces impacted on the Sun Island. This alarmed many strong warriors of the crowded Endless Sea.

...

Snow Dragon Island...

A white bone clone hiding deep inside the Snow Dragon Mountain seemed to receive the summon from its master. It flew

out from the mountain, heading to the Sun Island.

Demon tribes' hotshots, including Mo Qi Ta, saw the white bone clone leaving. They were all pale, reluctant for a while before taking out their secret treasures and following the white bone clone to the Sun Island.

"What's happening?"

Fear flooded Yu Rou's charming face. She was staring stunningly at the white bone clone of Bo Xun. She mused before finally speaking up. "Bo Xun must have encountered strong enemies out there. Otherwise, he wouldn't summon his white bone clone. In the Endless Sea, only Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian have the powers to trouble Bo Xun. Is he fighting with Cao Qiu Dao?"

"This has nothing to do with us."

Di Shan held an indifferent face, not caring about Bo Xun's life. "We came out from the Chasm Battlefield not to be limited in the Endless Sea. Our ancestors came from the Divine Great Land. Bo Xun can't bring the Wings Clan a bright and prosperous future."

"You still think about him." A trace of confusion appeared on Yu Rou's face. She sighed, then gently shook her head. "He had left the Endless Sea one year ago. We have no news from him since. Sigh, if the situation didn't force us, we wouldn't be like this. I wonder if he would bear a grudge against us."

"I've made the oath that as long as he doesn't die, he'll be my master," Di Shan said solemnly. "The one who could bring us out of the abandoned place, the one who has the bloodline of the Immortal God King... According to our ancestors' teachings, he's our master. Although the situation has forced us, and we had to depend on Bo Xun to save our races from extinction, we have never treated Bo Xun as our master. If Bo Xun dies, we're freed from the Demon Tribes, never to be controlled again."

"Our master's extraordinary," Yu Rou smiled and nodded in



agreement. "We don't know where he's been during one year. Although we're dependant on the Demon Tribes, we didn't do anything to betray him. I hope he would forgive us."

"Whether he forgives us or not, he's still our master. What we can do in the future is to beg for his forgiveness." Di Shan was stubborn. "We should wait patiently. Sooner or later, we will return back to our master. It's our ancestors' will. It should have some meanings there. Only when the Wings Clan follow our master can we have a better future. The Demon Tribes had abandoned us that year, making us get confined for so many years in the abandoned place. Even though we're back in the Grace Mainland, we still remember that lesson."

As Yu Rou heard him talking about the old stories, she nodded. "I hope that one day, our fortunate master can enter the realm strong enough to lead the Wings Clan back to our ancestors' land, taking back what belongs to us."

"I believe our master can do that. It shouldn't take long. In ten years max, I think master can have the power to fight against Bo Xun." Di Shan was certain, talking again arrogantly, "Give me thirty years more and I'm sure I can break through the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. At that time, even if our master doesn't come to us, we still have the powers to leave the Demon Tribes."

Yu Rou's eyes brightened. "How about the Demonic Sound Clan?"

"Yi Tian Mo and the others aren't stupid. They should know about the deep meaning in our predecessors' wills. Perhaps they're like us. We're all waiting for the right time."

"I hope so."

...

Kyara Sea, Immortal Island...

The island that once belonged to a family was now flooded with dark, cold yin. Countless Dark Dwellers from the Underworld were

walking back and forth on the Immortal Island, using some mysterious method to convert the earth and heaven essence Qi into dark yin Qi, suitable for their cultivation.

This was a big project that needed countless materials to form the most well-known Firmament Dark Transfer array of the Underworld. They had to use the water of the Netherworld River and pour it onto the Immortal Island. Besides, they needed an innumerable number of spirits from resentful souls. If they wanted to move the Firmament Dark Transfer array completely, it would take around one hundred years.

The Dark Dwellers had started the preparation work.

Today was the time of the array's crucial change. The three great Yama Kings of the Underworld had gathered, urging their supernatural powers to carry out the first cycle of the change.

The light at twilight was hindered by the dark Qi, unable to pierce through to the Immortal Island. The three Yama Kings stood in a triangle in the middle of the island. They were condensing the dark Qi.

However, when the first cycle had just begun, the three Yama King all sensed an inexplicable change in the heaven and earth's energy.

The Dark Dwellers were good at using soul senses. The three Yama Kings exchanged looks, then stopped their moves, starting to trace the subtle change in heaven and earth to find where the anomalous event that had happened.

Not long afterward, all the three Yama Kings paled, jolting up from their spot.

"A strange change comes from Yuan Luo Sea, the Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect. Demon Qi's surging there! It's obvious that Bo Xun and Chi Yan are fighting with strong warriors there. This fight 's so fierce! Perhaps, it would turn the whole situation of the

Endless Sea upside down!"

"We shouldn't linger. We must use the fastest pace to get there. If we're late, I'm afraid it would be pretty hard for us to live in peace in Endless Sea."

"Go!"

The three Yama Kings exchanged thoughts then simultaneously turned into a bunch of lights, shooting towards the Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect.

At the same time, Yang Yi Tian and Xia Qing Hou in the Vault of Heaven Sea Area also noticed the strange change of the heaven and earth. They all left their cultivating places.

Undersea, Yin Hui received the message from an elder of the Black Flood Dragon Clan. He then departed from the Silver Shark Clan, heading to the Sun Island.

Strange things happening on the Sun Island had shaken all the hotshots of the Endless Sea on land and underwater. As the earth-shaking battle progressed on the Sun Island, many warriors were on their ways to the island. The entire Endless Sea was burning!

# Chapter 483: Cao Qiu Dao

---

Yuan Luo Sea, the Sun Island...

A great fight that was worth being written down in the history was happening like a raging fire, and its participants were all the true peak realm warriors of the Endless Sea.

Bo Xun, Chi Yan, Nu Lang, the King Corpses, the Sun God and Moon God of the Three Gods Sect, and the new face of the Endless Sea, Shi Yan.

Hotshots of the Endless Sea gathered. Not only that, an innumerable number of strong warriors on the land and undersea came there using their secret treasures or the Teleporting Formation, or any other means that could bring them there as fast as possible, after they sensed the strange change in heaven and earth.

Many people knew that this battle would turn the impasse of the Endless Sea upside down. Perhaps, after this battle, the Endless Sea's destiny would be determined ultimately.

On the island, Shi Yan was recovering his powers silently while holding the mysterious giant sword, watching the fights between the two Demon Kings and the others. He held his vigilance discreetly.

Cao Qiu Dao should be here soon.

From Yuan Luo Sea, the Cao family's island was further than the Corpse God Sect. That's why Cao Qiu Dao couldn't arrive as fast as the King Corpses. Anyway, Cao Qiu Dao was a true hotshot of the Endless Sea. If he flew at his full speed, he could arrive the Sun Island not long after that.

Shi Yan was lingering, and hadn't taken action because Cao Qiu Dao hadn't come yet. He was still guarding against this real master from the Caos, who had his name famous in the Endless Sea for so

many years.

He had killed Zuo Yue Feng not long before this event. If he were Cao Qiu Dao, of course, he wouldn't have spared his life. If such a hotshot was hiding away, waiting for a chance to ambush him, he was afraid that he would be dead before he could make any reaction.

Thus, he didn't dare to join the battle, just cautiously being on the alert.

"Here he comes."

The Moon God suddenly sighed, looking at the general direction of the Tuta Sea. Moonlight in her body suddenly condensed.

Tang Yuan Nan seemed like he was about to encounter the archenemy.

The name of Cao Qiu Dao had been famous for so many years on the Endless Sea; the power of the Cao family in Endless Sea was so tremendous. No one on the Endless Sea dared to look down on Cao Qiu Dao, or knew what this martial art addict would do.

A faint light appeared from far away. At first, it was like the light of a firefly, not bright, but really flickering.

However, after three seconds, that faint light bloomed like a flame. Seconds later, that halo could even cover the sky and hinder the earth. Unexpectedly, it made the dark Qi above the Sun Island disperse.

Inside the brilliant halo, an old man with senile, gloomy face slowly appeared.

He was wearing a simple green warrior clothing. His gray hair were tied into a chignon, and his eyes bright. He didn't appear to be a good-looking man, with flashy and fierce markings, or any precious accessories. There was nothing majestic about Cao Qiu Dao's appearance.

Quite the contrary, he looked more like an average old man. Without his bright pupils, many people couldn't imagine that such an appearance belonged to the famous Cao Qiu Dao in the Endless Sea.

Tang Yuan Nan's face was solemn. He clasped his fist to greet Cao Qiu Dao before the old man descended to the island. "Master Cao."

Ouyang Luo Shang was standing in the air, not moving an inch. She seemed to be seriously assessing Cao Qiu Dao. As she had sealed herself for a thousand years inside a meteorite, she was much older than the latter. Although her current competence wasn't as strong as his, she wouldn't humble her status to fawn over this hotshot from the Cao family.

"Hello, Cult Master Yang," Cao Qiu Dao nodded. His face was calm while the light in his eyes dimmed.

After exchanging greetings with Tang Yuan Nan, he immediately shifted to the earth-shaking fight on the Sun Island while frowning.

As his eyes caught the sight of the War Devil, he couldn't even hide his surprise. He was dumbstruck for a while before he started to search for the target. His eyes eventually stopped at Shi Yan. "You've brought this black iron puppet out of the Antiquity Lofty Dragon Graveyard? He killed Zuo Yue Feng?"

Shi Yan wore a cold face as he snorted and then nodded. "Yes."

"Not bad, kid," Cao Qiu Dao nodded, "When I was at your age, I had just the cultivation base of Earth Realm. You're now at the Sky Realm, and can even borrow the external forces to reach the Spirit Realm. Not bad, really. Yang Tian Emperor does have a good fortune. I admire him for this aspect."

Shi Yan's countenance still darkened, not choosing to answer him. He didn't get the real purpose of Cao Qiu Dao. However, with Nu Lang, the King Corpses, Tang Yuan Nan, and Ouyang Luo

Shang were all here, together with the level eight demonic beast King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm on his shoulders, if he needed to fight the old man, and the latter didn't ambush him, Shi Yan didn't worry much.

As they saw Cao Qiu Dao arrive, Chi Yan, Bo Xun and Nu Lang became more cautious, even though they were in the middle of the battle.

Everybody knew of Cao Qiu Dao's competence. If he took action and joined one side, the other side wouldn't be comfortable. His presence would change the whole picture. Thus, everybody was saving their strengths to deal with him in case he decided to join any side.

Chi Yan was also careful. Under the wanton bombarding of the War Devil, he revealed his dangerous features.

Different from Bo Xun and Nu Lang, the puppet didn't care who Cao Qiu Dao was. Shi Yan had ordered him to urge his full force to deal with Chi Yan, so he only remembered this, maliciously attacking the other without leaving him a leeway. His brutal, wild attacks aimed to kill Chi Yan, forcing him to pay full attention to their battle.

"Master Cao, the main enemies of the Endless are certainly the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers. If we don't erase these two great foreign tribes, all the Endless Sea's warriors would be killed or enslaved. Master Cao does consider the whole picture. I guess you get it well. Don't bury the future of the Endless Sea because of some personal grudge."

Tang Yuan Nan was a bit hurried, trying to persuade the other painstakingly. Ouyang Luo Shang remained silent, but she was secretly alert in case the other suddenly ambushed them.

"Of course I know who are the main enemies." Under the attentive looks of Shi Yan and the other two, Cao Qiu Dao arched the corner of his brows. He mused, looking at Demon King Bo Xun.

Bo Xun started to reveal his reluctant defense under the besiege of Nu Lang and the two King Corpses. When his eyes met Cao Qiu Dao's eyes, he revealed a serious face for the first time, snorted and said, "Cao Qiu Dao, your men were killed, but you don't plan to take revenge. Are you going to help your enemy to deal with me? You should know that I come here this time to kill Shi Yan. You and I have the same target. It's better to unite and kill this brat first. We will solve the business between us then."

Cao Qiu Dao kept silent, and didn't say anything.

"If Shi Yan won't die today, in the future, even if the Demon Dwellers have to leave the Endless Sea, the whole situation of the Sea won't turn as you expected. That brat can even get Nu Lang involved. Men like him don't care about rules. Later, when he enters the Spirit Realm, with his potential, he will replace the overlord positions of yours and Yang Yi Tian's."

Bo Xun continued his advice. "As long as he lives, he's the biggest threat to you and Yang Yi Tian."

"I didn't think that this Demon King could be so wordy." Cao Qiu Dao frowned, remained unmoved. "As the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers dare to invade the Endless Sea, you should have thought about your defeat one day. Yeah, I think today is that day, the day your two tribes are doomed. Bo Xun, you shouldn't have let your real body come here. If you were still in the Demon Area, even if you were besieged, you could have used the advantage of the Demon Area to flee deliberately. But it's not that easy in this Endless Sea."

Then, an amethyst sword flew out from Cao Qiu Dao's sleeve, purple light radiating from it. Beams of purple light were everywhere, drifting away all of the ghostly clouds.

A vicious current was generated in the middle of the purple clouds, with mirages of beautiful, glorious fairylands appearing in them. In the mirages that could quiet down people's minds, the



hostile aura was strengthened strangely.

Wilted, yellow leaves fell piece after piece from the purple clouds. They were made from condensed energy, which was thick like a shower and sharp like swords.

The torrential dark Qi on the Sun Island was diluted vastly when the leaves fell. They disappeared from the sky over the Sun Island at the speed that naked eye could observe.

The Amethyst Sword moved slowly. In the purple halo, a vicious current locked on Bo Xun, slowly approaching him.

The heavy, vicious aura flooded the Endless Sea, gradually gathering on Cao Qiu Dao's body. His aura became chilling to the bone. Moreover, it was getting more intimidating over time.

Boom Boom!

Thunderclap arose in the void, and lightning danced. The halo created by the Amethyst Sword had unexpectedly driven the strange change in heaven and earth. Inside the lightning, Cao Qiu Dao's figure was fading away gradually, until he completely disappeared.

The aura on his body suddenly became invisible. It seemed like he had never come here. No one could use his Soul Consciousness to detect his location.

Shi Yan, Tang Yuan Nan, and Ouyang Luo Shang were more anxious than anyone else after the old man disappeared. They released the protective halo and discreetly stayed alert.

Compared to them, Bo Xun was even more agitated.

Cao Qiu Dao's Shadowless Path was famous all over the Endless Sea. When he was totally out of people's sight, it was the moment he really wanted to take action. Everyone knew this.

The Shadowless Path was the profound divine ability that Cao Qiu Dao had comprehended. Once he used it, his essence Qi, spirit

and soul would be hidden away, making him completely disappear in the world. No one could detect him in hiding. Sometimes, his opponents got killed before they realized when he took action.

The most formidable feature of the Shadowless Path was the murderous intention, which was really magical.

Many enemies of the Cao family had died unknowingly. In some cases, they were killed while cultivating. Until they died, they didn't know that Cao Qiu Dao was there to kill them!

The Shadowless Path helped Cao Qiu Dao swagger in the Endless Sea. He was the character that planted fear everywhere. Enemies of the Cao Family had to live in fear every day, not knowing when and why they were killed. Perhaps, it would happen when they were having lunch, when they were asleep, or even when they were talking with the others. Their deaths were sudden and without any known causes.

"Be careful."

Tang Yuan Nan reminded Shi Yan with a low voice, his face solemn. He was afraid that Cao Qiu Dao's main target was Shi Yan.

# Chapter 484: Yang Tian Emperor

---

Shi Yan didn't dare to distract his mind, attentively watching everywhere in case Cao Qiu Dao suddenly took action.

It was hard to obstruct the Shadowless Path. If one couldn't react at the moment Cao Qiu Dao took action, the one who was ambushed would instantly become a dead body.

Although it seemed Cao Qiu Dao was aiming at Bo Xun, nobody could guess his moves. No one could be sure whether or not he was faking a strike, then shifting to kill Shi Yan instantly.

The Moon God and Tang Yuan Nan stood guard on both sides of Shi Yan. They were all waiting in silence.

Bo Xun was a bit anxious. Under the clamp of Nu Lang and the two King Corpses, he fell into the disadvantaged situation already. If Cao Qiu Dao took action all of a sudden, in that short moment, he could easily get hurt.

The War Devil was intertwining with Chi Yan, not leaving him leeway to watch here and there. Chi Yan could hardly watch Bo Xun's back.

Suddenly, a beam of light zoomed over from the East. A white bone clone was flying fast toward them.

It was Bo Xun's white bone clone.

Receiving Bo Xun's summon, this white bone clone had departed from the Snow Dragon Island and arrived on time to help him cope with this strenuous situation.

Bo Xun had three white bone clones in total, each of them fabricated by extremely marvelous methods. They all had part of Bo Xun's divine abilities and some bizarre tricks.

Years ago, when Xiao Han Yi had just arrived the Endless Sea, one of Bo Xun's white bone clone had snatched him and dragged

him to the Demon Area.

That terrifying scene still stayed in Shi Yan's memory until today.

At that time, in his eyes, the white bone clones were the most dangerous existence in this world, which had unimaginable earth-shaking powers. It could even rip the barrier of the Demon Area off, as intimidating as a God!

At that moment, he didn't dare to estimate Bo Xun's power. Xia Xin Yan used to tell him that Bo Xun was the strongest Demon Dweller, with the most peerless divine abilities. At that moment, a strong fighting will had erupted from him as he was dreaming of fighting with Bo Xun one day, and sitting upright in front of him.

Today, he did it.

Swoosh!

The Amethyst Sword hiding in the purple cloud shot out at this moment.

At the same time, a brilliant, sharp beam of light appeared next to the white bone clone.

At that moment, Bo Xun's white bone clone was like it got jabbed hard by a sharp weapon. The skeleton of the white bone clone was shaken disorderly, like it was about to lose its frame.

Cao Qiu Dao showed himself.

The Amethyst Sword came back to his hand. Light shadows of the sword were circling like thousands of purple lightning, as thick as a shower, covering the white bone clone.

Beautiful light sparked out from the white skeleton clone. Grumbling impact rose, boiling the seawater around the Sun Island.

Waiting until the countless beams of light disappeared, people concentrated their minds and watched. They realized that Cao Qiu

Dao had hidden away again, and the white bone clone Bo Xun had summoned had turned multi-colored, like it was smudged with ink. It now looked extremely eccentric.

BOOM!

Bo Xun's flesh body shook as he was attacked at his back. Dark Qi gushed out continually in the void. Cao Qiu Dao showed himself again behind Bo Xun, piercing Bo Xun right in the middle of his back.

Nu Lang seized the change and grinned fiendishly, releasing the trident and violently striking the Devil Bell. The bell then turned into a beam of dark light, falling down out of everyone's sight.

Cao Qiu Dao disappeared again.

Bo Xun's face was gloomy. The evil light in his eyes became bright; clearly, it seemed he was enraged. However, he suddenly spurted blood before he could take any action. Terrified expression flashed on his face for the first time.

He didn't look at Nu Lang or the King Corpses. His complicated eyes were gazing at the endless vast sky, where the dark Qi was surging torrentially. Inside the clusters of dark Qi, a strange, intimidating power burst out. Transparent bones shot out from the dark Qi.

"Yang Tian Emperor!"

Bo Xun cried, his face frantic.

Shi Yan, Tang Yuan Nan, and Ouyang Luo Shang were dumbstruck, looking suspiciously to the sky. In between the clusters of dark Qi, space suddenly cracked. A vague, majestic silhouette was breaking a white skeleton clone with his bare hands in the lightning weaved space.

This was the white skeleton clone Bo Xun had summoned from the Fourth Demon Area.

It was pitifully broken in the space slit before it could enter the Endless Sea from the Demon Area. That man had borrowed the chaotic, turbulent energy in the space to smash that white skeleton clone.

The bones that shot out were from the skeleton of that white bone clone.

From the lightning weaved space, that majestic silhouette laughed wildly. "Bo Xun, I've confined your other white bone clone in the outer territory space. You will never be able to summon it again." Then, that man tore the space slit with both hands and drilled out.

He was the head of the Yang family, Yang Tian Emperor!

The peerless warrior of the Endless Sea appeared again after years, having been tortured in the Demon Area after he had subdued two white skeleton clones of Bo Xun.

It was like there was a tacit understanding between them, that at the moment Yang Tian Emperor got out from the space crack, Cao Qiu Dao retook action.

The Amethyst Sword appeared with radiant purple halo, covering Bo Xun entirely. Nu Lang and the King Corpses exchanged looks and took action together, attacking Bo Xun with their full forces.

After Yang Tian Emperor got out of the space crack, he didn't hesitate, joining the battle right away.

Yang Tian Emperor came with an irresistible momentum, not caring about the layers of defense Bo Xun had arranged. He shot straightforward, breaking numerous demonic defending walls until he reached Bo Xun's true body and punched him.

A heavy, overbearing punch that could block the space slit pounded on Bo Xun's head.

Bo Xun had enemies both in front and behind him. As he was

about to parry, the purple light had pierced from behind like sharp spears.

Under the severe pain, Bo Xun hardly gathered the internal force in his body. He could only strive to get rid of the situation. The dragon horn on his head glowed, gushing out waves of crazy, fierce air to encounter Yang Tian Emperor's fist.

BANG!

It was like landslides and earthquakes were happening. Grumbling sounds reverberated the whole Yuan Luo Sea, making people feel a vague pain in their eardrums.

Slits of flesh and blood cracked on Bo Xun's rigid body under this punch. His body was like broken glass, looking extremely bizarre.

Cao Qiu Dao, Nu Lang, and the King Corpses seized the chance to storm forward together. They urged their powers, bombarding crazily on Bo Xun.

After this wave of attacks, Bo Xun's flesh body had many open wounds that were bleeding badly, his bones broken.

Shi Yan frowned, then sighed, "Bo Xun's done."

Tang Yuan Nan nodded with a solemn face. "Cao Qiu Dao, Nu Lang, the King Corpses, each of them is enough to cope with him. The three forces joined hands to deal with Bo Xun, which was enough to fight with him. With Yang Tian Emperor's interference in midway, it's hard for him to find a way to survive."

While they were talking, Bo Xun's flesh body showered out blood. He faced the sky, laughing wildly while his body cracked into fissures. Even though the Demon Dwellers had sturdy bodies, under so many attacks of violent forces, no one could help him.

Bo Xun's body was wrecked.

A dark beam of light shrank into a dot in the air the moment Bo Xun's body was killed, shooting towards the space crack,

disappearing in just a blink.

"Soul compelling!"

Tang Yuan Nan couldn't help but shout.

Shi Yan wore a terrified face. At the moment his body was exploded, Bo Xun determinedly condensed his soul into a small dot, leaving the flesh body and sneaking into the space crack in a flash to save his immortal soul.

Although there were countless dangers inside the lightning weaved space, which could make his soul disappear forever, it could prevent the others from chasing after him.

Everybody knew that the space crack wasn't stable. Anybody who dared to get in could get both his soul and body perished. However, if his soul flew fast enough, it wouldn't be affected by the chaotic forces in the space crack.

However, if the body got in together, the risk factor would increase by ten times.

Thus, even though they saw Bo Xun send his soul into the space crack at the last moment, Yang Tian Emperor and the others didn't continue their pursuit. They calmly looked at the crack, urging their soul consciousness to sense.

"Can't find him."

Cao Qiu Dao closed his eyes to sense for a while, then shook his head in regret. "The chaotic energies in the crack usually appear, hindering the soul sensing. If we let the soul consciousness go too far, it's hard to call it back. We'd better not to take risks."

"Never mind," Yang Tian Emperor laughed. "Only Bo Xun's fled away. Even if he has divine abilities and can find a shelter in the space crack, it will take several hundreds of years to recover. At that time, perhaps you and I would have the True God Realm cultivation base already. Even if he could come back, he wouldn't be a threat." Cao Qiu Dao nodded.



"There's one more of them," Yang Tian Emperor looked at Chi Yan. He suddenly cried in surprise. "Where does this black iron puppet come from? It has such tremendous powers to hold Chi Yan down."

"Harrumph," Cao Qiu Dao frowned and said indignantly, "Your Yang family has good fortune!" Hearing him, Yang Tian Emperor was stunned for a while before shifting his eyes to Shi Yan. He smiled brightly. "Good boy! I can't believe that after I left the Endless Sea, you can still hold the torch of the Yangs to shine on the sea of Endless Sea!"

Shi Yan lifted his head, smiled and bent down to greet him. He didn't babble, just briefed, "We should kill Chi Yan first, then we'll talk."

"Good."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded cheerily, turning himself into a red light that shot towards Chi Yan.

Cao Qiu Dao also took action.

Nu Lang and the King Corpses didn't move.

"Kid, do you really need me to work here?" Nu Lang snorted, somehow disgruntled. "The Yangs do have a deep conspiracy, hiding inside the Demon Area and waiting for the best chance. When he took action, he immediately made Bo Xun leave with only a beam of soul. I think the stuff here doesn't matter to me anymore, does it?"

"If you want something, you have to extend your hand to reach it. Kill Chi Yan when we still have a chance." Shi Yan curled his lips. "If Chi Yan doesn't die today, he'll come to take revenge on the Sea Tribes soon. Yeah, I think that if you want the best for your Sea Tribes, you shouldn't let him leave here alive, right?"

Nu Lang shut his mouth, and couldn't help but nod begrudgingly.

"You guys should help them, too." Shi Yan looked at Corpse

Mount and Corpse Sea. Receiving Shi Yan's order, the two ten-thousand-year old King Corpses from the Corpse God Sect flew up again, storming towards Chi Yan.

# Chapter 485: Determine firmament and earth!

---

Bo Xun ran away, while Chi Yan could hardly escape his destiny.

The five great warriors, War Devil, Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, Nu Lang and the King Corpse, took action together. Chi Yan was smashed even faster than Bo Xun.

The strongest energies blocked Chi Yan's leeway, under the bombardment of which, Chi Yan's flesh body was soon mashed to pulp. At this moment, warriors from everywhere gathered on the Sun Island.

Yin Hui from the Silver Shark Clan, Yang Yi Tian, Wu Qin, Gu Xiao, Qing Ming and the others famous characters of the Endless Sea, all came after they got the news. Now, they were gazing at the impact point of the attacking energies.

Under the furious attacks from all sorts of powers, Chi Yan's fleshy body directly exploded as expected. At the moment when his body exploded, a beam of soul flew out, following Bo Xun's way to enter the space crack.

The soul of the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors had been trained strenuously many times, so it was hard to erase it completely.

As the attackers saw Chi Yan's soul flying out, they wanted to stop it but realized that none of their forces worked.

"Don't let him go!"

Many voices arose above the Sun Island, but too bad that no one had the guts to waste their souls and stop the escapee.

Once the soul left the body, physical attacks couldn't do anything to it. If they wanted to destroy the soul of a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior, they would need some warriors in the same realm,

using the soul power to bind the other.

Wu Qin, Gu Xiao, and the others were only at the First Sky of Spirit Realm. Of course, they didn't dare to do anything.

Nu Lang participated this battle because of Shi Yan, so he wouldn't urge all of his powers. Soul fighting was dangerous. If Chi Yan had no way to flee and wanted to die together with them, even Nu Lang couldn't swallow this. He didn't want to take any risks. Although Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor had the power, they didn't master soul fighting. Thus, they couldn't risk it. Yang Yi Tian was there, but he was also afraid that if he took action, Chi Yan would drag him to death together.

People here had wild schemes. While they were hesitant, Chi Yan's soul was getting closer to the space crack. Seeing Chi Yan was about to disappear into the crack, and no one seemed to want to chase after him, Shi Yan, the one no one paid attention to at this moment, suddenly moved.

His host soul got out of his Sea of Consciousness directly.

Shi Yan's host soul turned into a beam of silver light, getting near Chi Yan in just a blink. Right at this moment, the third eye of his host soul opened.

Silvery flames shot out from his third eye, covering the whole horizon in just a flash.

"Host soul leaves the body!"

Yang Tian Emperor's face slightly changed. He didn't think much, and descended next to Shi Yan's body to guard him.

When the host soul left the body, the body would be left in an unconscious state. If someone ambushed him at this moment, death was his only consequence.

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang were alert.

Nu Lang, Yin Hui, Xia Qing Hou and the King Corpses also

noticed the subtle change. Everybody came close to him, throwing their warning eyes everywhere against those who dared to attack him.

"That year, you killed my Grandpa Xia, my friends, and you almost took my life." Shi Yan's host soul released a thought that everyone could sense. "Today, also in the Sun Island, I want to erase your soul and spirit, and let them vanish into thin air!"

"Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame!"

Many people couldn't help but cry with fearful faces.

They all knew that no one could tame the legendary heaven flames that could destroy all souls. But now, they were witnessing it appear strangely on earth.

Yang Tian Emperor's eyes brightened like a torch. Tang Yuan Nan and the others held their breath, concentrating their minds while looking at Shi Yan with surprise.

Chi Yan's soul shivered, then flashed to escape the coverage area of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

"You can't hide. Blood has to be paid back with blood!" Shi Yan's host soul was brilliant, sending an icy cold thought. "Even if you're a Demon King, I'm telling you what you're going to receive for messing with Shi Yan."

Numerous silvery flames flooded out, covering Chi Yan's soul while it was running away. Under the flames of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, Chi Yan's soul was burned little by little, emitting mournful cries.

Everyone felt shivers running down their spines on watching the scene.

Chi Yan was an illustrious Demon King in the Fourth Demon Area. He had been swaggering for so many years, a nightmare of all warriors in the Endless Sea. However, under the effect of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, this earth-shaking Demon King

was burnt pathetically.

This scene scared many people, as they instinctively thought that they should never go against Shi Yan.

Chi Yan's soul burned in the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, and finally disappeared completely from this world.

The ones who got burned by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame got both of their soul and spirit destroyed, and never had a chance to resurrect.

In other words, Chi Yan was dead, completely dead.

That year, when the Demon King appeared on the Sun Island, he had scared a lot of warriors to death. But today, he was brutally terminated by Shi Yan.

"Get back to your body, quickly!" Yang Tian Emperor shouted.

Shi Yan's host soul trembled in the air, turning into a silver light falling from the sky.

Among the warriors of the Endless Sea watching the fight, some of them did want to seize the chance and sneak in, but they were scared seeing the formation next to Shi Yan.

There was Nu Lang - the number one hotshot of the Sea Tribes, Yang Tian Emperor - the head of the Yang family, Ouyang Luo Shang - the new peak warrior, Xia Qing Hou, the two King Corpses, Yin Hui from the Silver Shark Clan, Sun God Tang Yuan Nan, and then the extremely intimidating black iron puppet, and the level 8 demonic beast.

This force was magnificent to the extreme!

At first glance, no one dared to move, since they were afraid that their movement would be misinterpreted and the others would crush them to a pulp within seconds.

In Endless Sea, no one had ever gathered so many formidable warriors at once like this, and even make them willingly guard his

body.

But Shi Yan did it.

A young man who had spent not more than ten years in the Endless Sea could shake the heaven and earth. With his personal potential and connections, he had gathered so many strong warriors of the Endless Sea to stand on his side.

At this moment, many people started to regret as fear swelled in their hearts. The Queen of Heaven, the Emperor of Earth, Qing Ming, and Gu Xiao were the warriors, who were eligible to be his match, all felt helpless all of a sudden.

It wasn't that they were too weak. It was just that Shi Yan was so strong. This young man was growing up so fast that before they realized, they could only look up to him.

Under the attentive looks of everybody, Shi Yan's host soul came back to his flesh body. His eyes brightened, as he let out a smile.

"Good."

Yang Tian Emperor laughed cheerily. His laughter shook the whole world as if he wanted to announce to the world that the Yang family would become the most brilliant force of the Endless Sea once again, beyond all the other forces.

"Yang-ge, long time no see." Yang Yi Tian smiled coldly, nodding at him. "According to our plan, should we deal with the Yama Kings now, eh?"

People gathering on the Sun Island were dumbstruck, as they didn't understand anything.

Shi Yan was startled, looking suspiciously at Yang Tian Emperor. "Great Grandfather, you, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yang Yi Tian had some agreement?"

"Leading the Demon Tribes to Endless Sea, seizing the chance to kill the two great Demon Kings... That's our plan." Yang Tian

Emperor curled his lips. "From fifty years ago, we have wanted to remove the threat from the Demon Tribes. We've had plans for him since a long, long time ago. When the Demon Kings were in the Demon Area, even if we urged all of our powers, it was hard to kill any Demon Kings. In the Demon Area, the powers of the Demon Kings are even thirty percent stronger than what they have here. Moreover, they could take advantage of the barrier and their arrays for hundreds of years. Even if we could defeat them, they could retreat safe and sound. Thus, only leading them to the Endless Sea would give them some restrictions, which would prevent them from borrowing the arrangement and the powers from the Demon Area."

Yang Tian Emperor smiled coldly, telling everyone their earth-shaking plan under their attentive look.

It turned out that Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian and him had never actually fought to death.

Several fights they had had were just to discuss the martial techniques. After each battle, they stayed hidden, which made the others believe that they were hurt. This was to deceive the Demon Tribes, giving them the bait that they had the chance to enter the Endless Sea.

Yang Tian Emperor initially intruded the Demon Area and got confined there by the Demon King, which was a part of their plan.

The Yang family had the undying body. During the time he was imprisoned, he had used the blood of the God King, trained it with his flesh body, to make his undying body enter a further step to a deeper achievement. At the same time, every force on the sea targeted the Yang Family, making them leave the sea begrudgingly. Next, those forces joined the Demon Tribes. Changes constantly happened, which were all in the three's calculations, as they were using their forces to affect the whole picture of the Endless Sea discreetly, guiding the situation accordingly with the scenario they had planned.



Gu Xiao, Qing Minh, Dongfang Kuai, and Wu Qin had taken part in their plan unknowingly. Little by little, they had fallen into today's situation.

When Yang Tian Emperor finished, all warriors there dropped their jaws in astonishment.

"The three Yama Kings are still here. We shouldn't linger. Let's take action immediately," Yang Yi Tian urged.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor nodded, looking towards the Kyara Sea.

"Great Grandfather," Shi Yan suddenly recalled something, screaming.

"What?" Yang Tian Emperor smiled, "Is there anything you don't understand?"

"The Wings Clan and the Demonic Sound Clan are my servants. I've put them temporarily in the Dark Tribe and the Demon Tribe. Don't touch them," said Shi Yan with a dark face.

Everybody was bewildered, looking at him with a disbelieving countenance.

# Chapter 486: Spoils of War

---

Both Chi Yan's soul and spirit perished. Bo Xun had only a beam of weak soul sneaked into the space crack. As the two Demon Kings had perished, the Demon Tribes in the Endless Sea were about to receive tragedies pouring over their heads.

The Wings Clan had joined the Demon Tribes, and they didn't have a backup, which meant they would become an obvious target. If Shi Yan didn't cover them, the Wings Clan would go extinct.

The Demon Tribes were done, and so were the Dark Tribes. As the Dark Tribes couldn't avoid this disaster, the Demonic Sound Clan would be involved in this catastrophe soon.

Whether it was the Wings Clan or the Demonic Sound Clan, he had rescued them from the Chasm Battlefield. He didn't hold any grudge against Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo. Under the circumstances that their whole tribes would be erased, Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo had no choice but to yield to the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers. This was because of the existence of their races, and nothing they should be ashamed of.

As the warriors of the Endless Sea were about to take the once in a blue moon chance to clean up the threat from the Dark Tribes and the Demon Tribes, if Shi Yan didn't prevent them, Di Shan's and Yi Tian Mo's tribes would disappear from this world.

Because of the old relationship, he had spoken for their sakes.

"The Wings Clan and the Demonic Sound Clan belong to you?" Yang Tian Emperor was stunned, his eyes strange.

"Yes."

Yang Tian Emperor grinned and nodded, "Go. I have my calculations."

"Ge, are we going now?" Yang Yi Tian urged.

Yang Tian Emperor smiled, looking towards the Kyara Sea. "It's time to take back our family's territory." Then, Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yang Yi Tian exchanged looks, flying together towards the Kyara Sea.

That was where the Dark Dwellers stayed currently.

The other warriors of the Endless Sea left on the Sun Island looked at each other with dismay. They eyed Shi Yan, then the general direction where Yang Tian Emperor and the other two disappeared. Bitter feeling gnawed their hearts.

Those three had kidded all the warriors of the Endless Sea, toying them in their hands. Their plan of uprooting the Demon Tribes had been started dozens of years ago. Finally, they had killed two Demon Kings.

When this war ended, the Demon Tribes would be suffering a great loss, and their men, who had entered the Endless Sea, wouldn't leave alive.

The Demon Kings and the Demon Masters should be all killed, leaving the Fourth Demon Area unoccupied. People of the Yangs that intruded the Fourth Demon Area would have the chance to take the upper hand, or even the whole Fourth Demon Area territory.

In the history of the Grace Mainland, there were times the human race took over the Demon Area. However, they were the particular, infrequent circumstances.

The Yang family had endured humiliation and all sorts of tribulations to set the record for a vast wealth like this.

"You guys still want to deal with me, don't you?" Shi Yan's visage darkened. He grinned fiendishly at the group of Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, and Dongfang Kuai. "Well, we should settle our debt, but I think it's not the good time now. What do you think?"

The group of Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, Dongfang Kuai changed their

complexions.

There were the War Devil, Nu Lang, Yin Hui, Ouyang Luo Shang, Tang Yuan Nan and the two King Corpses standing next to Shi Yan.

If this force wanted to fight with a force of the Endless Sea, even Cao Qiu Dao of the Cao Family and the Yang Yi Tian Martial Spirit Palace couldn't deal with them at ease, let alone the group of Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, Dongfang Kuai.

Hearing Shi Yan, Gu Xiao and the others were frightened, exchanging looks, while the other warriors surrounding the Sun Island fled pathetically.

"Get out and enter that white skeleton clone!"

Waiting until the others had left, Shi Yan let out a slight shout, with his eye gazing at a white skeleton body in a gully in Sun Island.

This was Bo Xun's white bone clone. It took its time to come here from the Snow Dragon Island. However, when it got to the place, Bo Xun's body exploded, and his soul sneaked into the space crack.

As its master died, the spirit Bo Xun placed in the white bone clone vanished.

The white skeleton clone became ownerless.

The Holy Spirit God in the Profound Qi halo moved, turning into a separate beam of light shooting towards the white bone clone.

When he was in the Snow Dragon Island that year, he had promised the Holy Spirit God that he would find it a suitable body. It'd been a long time, and now he finally found a good one.

"There's still a piece of Bo Xun's soul."

The Holy Spirit God circled above the white skeleton clone, but didn't hurry to get in. Instead, it sent him a message.

Shi Yan smiled coldly. "Easy."

His eyes gazed at the white bone clone, as a cluster of silvery flames came out from deep inside his eyes, getting into the white bone clone.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame!

The flames got into the skeleton, moving around the head and then burned the beam of Bo Xun's soul into ashes.

Then, the Holy Spirit God got in.

The empty sockets of the white skeleton clone suddenly sparkled with an icy light.

Crack Crack!

The white bone clone moved slowly. Cracking sounds echoed from its joints, as the Holy Spirit God tried to control its new body.

"How does it feel?" smiled Shi Yan.

"Not bad," the Holy Spirit God said, "I have never had a real body before, so I'm not used to the feeling of having a body. Yeah, I need time to fit in and see how it would be to have a body. It feels wonderful. Good, very good. Thank you. It's worth the time I've spent with you."

Shi Yan nodded contentedly.

"It's..."

Nu Lang frowned, then mused. It seemed he wanted to say something but didn't finish it. Yin Hui smiled embarrassedly. "I came late, and couldn't help much. Hmm, our agreement..."

They wanted the Life Original Fluid.

"Don't worry. Wait until the Endless Sea's situation's steadied. I'll give it to you. I keep my words." Shi Yan's countenance turned solemn. "Precursors, the situation of the Endless Sea will change in just a blink of an eye. I think we should amend the agreement between us."

"What?"

"I need time to think about it." Shi Yan mused and then talked. Suddenly, he arched his brows as divine light shot out from his eyes towards the South-East of the Sun Island.

A familiar aura came from the South-West of the Sun Island.

It was the Ghost Hunter.

This strange demonic beast had a spiritual connection with him. However, the time they had been on the Sun Island, it was unknown why this beast went together with Chi Yan and Bo Xun. At present, Chi Yan and Bo Xun were all dead, and the Ghost Hunter then revealed its aura. This surprised him.

He hesitated for a while and then turned into a bunch of lights, flying towards the general direction where the Ghost Hunter's aura came from.

The War Devil followed him.

Nu Lang, Yin Hui, Tang Yuan Nan and the others were suspicious, since they didn't know why Shi Yan left hurriedly.

They thought for a while and then followed him.

In the South-West of the Sun Island, dark Qi torrentially burst out from under the reef. The seawater was surging while ghostly smog fumed. A thorny humanoid creature was embracing something undersea, trying its best to cope with that thing's resistance.

The Devil Bell!

This strange secret treasure of Bo Xun had fallen into this sea. At this moment, the Ghost Hunter was hugging it tightly, as the bell rippled with devil light, struggling in the Ghost Hunter's embrace. Its power was so strong that it was constantly shaking the Ghost Hunter.

The Ghost Hunter's evil, bizarre pair of eyes suddenly opened

with a tremendous murderous aura. It was gazing at Shi Yan.

"Long time no see," Shi Yan frowned and snorted. "Why did you go away with Chi Yan and Bo Xun? When we were at the Sky Demon Mountain Rage, I asked you to wait for me there. Why didn't you follow my words?"

Inside the Ghost Hunter's vicious pupils, he saw two strange seals. A devilish halo sparkled from the seals, which seemed to affect its soul.

All of a sudden, the Ghost Hunter appeared to struggle intensively to resist the seals in its pupils. Its face grimaced painfully.

"Bo Xun and Chi Yan had sealed his soul. I saw this sort of seal when I was fighting with them. This seal has the evil power to tie the souls." Nu Lang was standing far from there. He frowned, looking at the Ghost Hunter. "This is a strange creature. He has both the dark Qi and the demon Qi. I've never heard of this creature anywhere. What's that?"

Yin Hui and the others were curious, too.

Shi Yan didn't explain, just looking at the Ghost Hunter while releasing his soul consciousness to peek at the beast's status.

However, when his soul consciousness approached the beast, a bloodthirsty yin aura shot out, attempting to damage his soul consciousness.

"What!"

Shi Yan grinned fiendishly while his pupils shot out a silver light, darting towards the Ghost Hunter.

When the light zoomed over, the tempered restless Ghost Hunter seemed like he was stuck by a freezing spell. It stopped moving, and even its eyes turned empty.

"Burn!"

Shi Yan let out a low shout, using the flame of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame to carefully search for the soul seal in the beast's brain while avoiding touching its soul.

There was a strange soul connection between Shi Yan and the Ghost Hunter. As the beast was putting forth everything to deal with the seal in its head, its soul didn't put up any guard, which enabled Shi Yan to enter.

Not long after that, the flame searching inside the Ghost Hunter's soul finally found the exact location of the seal.

After Bo Xun and Chi Yan died, the power of their barriers was greatly reduced. That's why the Ghost Hunter had the strength to resist it. Otherwise, under the restraint of the soul tying seal, the Ghost Hunter didn't even have the strength to wiggle.

Sizzle Sizzle!

As the soul tying seal was burned, the painful, uneasy Ghost Hunter restored its calmness.

Shi Yan shifted his look to the Devil Bell. A silvery flame flew out from his eyes, instantly got into the Devil Bell and burned down Bo Xun's seal left inside the bell.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was magically useful in cleaning up those soul tying seals. It was like flipping one's hand, as easy as a piece of cake.

When Bo Xun's seal vanished, the bell became unowned. It didn't struggle inside the Ghost Hunter's embrace anymore. At this moment, the Ghost Hunter quietly looked at him and sent him a message, "Master!"



# Chapter 487: Master?

---

Kyara Sea, Immortal Island...

The three Yama Kings Abi, Hades, and Hei Tian, sat neatly in the center of the island, their faces dark and gloomy.

They had rushed all the way from Immortal Island to Sun Island. However, when they were about to reach the Sun Island, they found that Chi Yan and Bo Xun were killed. The three Yama Kings halted, then left Yuan Luo Sea.

The deaths of the Demon Kings meant that the invasion plan of Endless Sea this time had failed totally.

The powers of the three Yama Kings were one level lower than the Demon Kings, and their bodies were much frailer, having difficulties in using the dark weapons. As they had spent much time waiting in Endless Sea, they had consumed a big part of their powers.

Seeing the Demon Kings die, the three Yama Kings immediately recognized that if they still lingered in the Endless Sea, they would hardly be able to retreat intact.

At this moment, the Firmament Dark Transfer array had been formed primitively, but still, they had to use it. The three Yama Kings cooperated, pouring their powers into the array to make a strong connection with the River of the Netherworld.

Countless dark beasts came out from the Firmament Dark Transfer Array while ten thousand tons of water appeared in the center of the array.

"All fellows, get in immediately!" Yama King Abi shouted.

Many Dark Dwellers lined up and jumped and disappeared into the River of the Netherworld in the Firmament Dark Transfer Array. Soon, Dark Dwellers summoned from many islands disappeared into the River of the Netherworld.

The three Yama Kings had to build the Firmament Dark Transfer Array in a hurry because they wanted to bring the dark Qi to the Endless Sea to prepare for their long war. Another reason was that they could use the array to retreat from the Endless Sea at the critical moment. This way, they could get back to the Underworld directly without transitioning through the Demon Area.

As long as they were in the Underworld, the three Yama Kings would have their powers enhanced vastly.

In the Underworld, even if Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yang Yi Tian joined hands, they would hardly gain the upper hand over the three Yama Kings. In the Underworld, there were so many intimidating dark beasts and magic formations. If Yang Tian Emperor and the other two dared to enter the Underworld, what awaited them was an endless annoyance.

As long as they could get back to the Underworld, they would be safe and sound. Dark Dwellers disappeared into the Firmament Dark Transfer Array continuously. Not long after that, all Dark Dweller in the Immortal World had gotten in the Array.

Then, the three Yama Kings stood up, exchanged looks and released a fierce magnetic wave. When the Firmament Dark Transfer Array was about to explode, the three Yama Kings turned into three beams of light, disappearing into the Array.

One hour later, Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian, and XQ arrived at the Immortal Island.

"We were one step late." Yang Tian Emperor shook his head then said begrudgingly, "The three Great Yama Kings seized the chance quickly. I didn't expect that they would build the Firmament Dark Transfer Array first. Once they sensed the situation turning bad, they fled back to the Underworld directly. I think it's impossible to catch the Yama Kings now."

Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Yi Tian, and the others also sighed.

The three of them had planned for so many years to uproot the whole Underworld and the three Yama Kings. Unfortunately, their plan was perfect, but its implementation was not.

Looking at the bursting Firmament Dark Array, they knew that unless they reached a higher level, they could hardly take action against the Yama Kings.

While they were still regretting, some figures were flying towards them from the further islands. However, those figures screamed in fear before they could reach the island, then flew away using a faster speed.

"They're the Dark Dwellers left behind." Cao Qiu Dao's pupils shrank. He disappeared all of a sudden.

At the moment after that, the others saw the Dark Dwellers coming from the other island falling into the sea from the sky. They were dead even before they sank into the sea.

Yang Yi Tian and Yang Tian Emperor looked in the direction and then launched their attacks.

Those Dark Dwellers didn't have high realms. Under the slaughter caused by the three great executioners, all those Dark Dwellers died. Yang Tian Emperor released his Soul Consciousness, covering the adjacent islands. The end of his brow arched as he teleported away.

Not long after that, he reappeared on the Reincarnation Island of the Xia Family.

Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were on the Reincarnation Island with frightened faces.

"Something big happened."

Yi Tian Mo's face was gloomy, he frowned. "The Firmament Dark Transfer Array was activated. I found that the aura of the three Yama Kings had completely disappeared from the Endless Sea."

"Are they going back to the Underworld?" Ka Ba was shaken. "What has happened?"

"I think a great change has happened on the Endless Sea. And, this change made the three Yama Kings know that staying in Endless Sea is useless now. That's why they hurried to get back to the Underworld."

Ya Meng forced a smile. "No one tells us anything."

Yi Tian Mo wore a complicated face. Ka Ba and Ye Meng had a cold appearance, but they were anxious inside.

"We're abandoned." Yi Tian pondered for a long while, his face bitter. "I've known that the Yama Kings won't remember us at the critical moment. Seems like we have no way out this time. The Yama Kings ran away, which means the Kyara Sea is about to undergo a massive purge. Is it true that our Demonic Sound Clan would be eradicated soon?"

Ka Ba and Ye Meng were desperate, looking blankly at the sky as sorrow filled their hearts.

"Are you guys from the Demonic Sound Clan?" At this moment, a surprised voice came from above their heads.

They were here.

Yi Tian Mo changed his look, eyeing the figure in the sky with a cautious face. Not long after that, three other people appeared above the Reincarnation Island.

Yi Tian Mo and the other two had strong soul power. Just with a little sensing, they felt completely desperate.

They were strong warriors that the clansmen couldn't see through!

"Yes, it's true. We are the fellows of the Demonic Sound Clan." Yi Tian Mo tried to calm down, lifted his head and answered the man. "I know we're about to be doomed, but I want to know what's

happened to the Endless Sea."

"Bo Xun and Chi Yan are dead," smiled the man coldly.

The three of Yi Tian Mo's group were shaken as they felt powerless, knowing the event they feared the most had happened.

The Demon Kings died, and the Yama Kings fled away. Where should they go?

"Let us die straightforwardly," Ye Meng's face was fierce. "I know our Demonic Sound Clan would die this time. No one can help us. If you guys come here for it, what are you waiting for?"

"I am Yang Tian Emperor," The man who spoke up first curled his lips. "Little Shi Yan said that your Demonic Sound Clan belonged to him. Don't worry, no one dares to touch you. You've chosen a good master. He'll protect you. You won't be affected by this event."

Yi Tian Mo and the other two were dumbstruck.

...

Snow Dragon Island...

The strong warriors of Endless Sea including Wu Qin, Gu Xiao, Dongfang Kuai, the Queen of Heaven, the Emperor of Earth arrived at this island and started to kill the members of the Demon Tribes there.

Mo Qi Ta, Xie Yan, Sinda, Alex, the four Demon Master were struggling hard under the besiege of the warriors of Endless Sea. Many warriors from the Dark Water Territory and Tuta Sea arrived, as they had received the message from their leaders. All forces came to clean up the Demon Tribes.

"Bo Xun and Chi Yan are dead. Your Demon Kings are over, and today is your death day." Dongfang Kuai grinned fiendishly while standing on the Snow Dragon Island, shouting loudly, "Kill!"

All the members of the Demon Tribes became anxious and

restless.

"The Demon Kings are dead?" At the foot of the Dragon Snow Mountain, Di Shan shouted in fear. "How could it happen?"

Yu Rou was frightened, "The Demon Kings are dead. What should we do? Bo Xun wanted to kill us too. If we knew that, we wouldn't have left the Chasm Battlefield. At least, we could preserve our clan there."

"Run, take our fellows and run far away, as far as possible. I hope that we are not going to be uprooted." Di Shan's face was gloomy. "It's our great kalpa this time, and no one can help us. If we dare to take life-risking actions, perhaps we can turn it over."

"We can only run away," Yu Rou said sadly, "I'm going to arrange it."

Di Shan nodded, "Should be quick! Every minute you can seize, a fellow of our clan more can survive."

"Eh?"

As Yu Rou was about to move, she suddenly startled, looking blankly out there, talking disbelievingly. "They... Don't they see us, the Wings Race?"

Di Shan was stunned, watching here and there suspiciously.

There was a thick jungle at the foot of the Snow Dragon Mountain. Many wooden houses of the Wings Clan were built on big ancient trees there. When they recognized the change of the Snow Dragon Island, people of the Wings Clan scattered in the jungle and looked at the sky with fear.

Around them, so many members of the Demon Tribes were killed by the warriors of Endless Sea. However, no warrior of Endless Sea entered the Wings Clan's territory.

Even the Wings Clan's members who lived near the Demon Tribes stayed safe and sound, while the Demon Tribe members

next to them were killed.

It seemed the Endless Sea's warriors had some problem with their eyes; they seemed not to see the members of the Wings Clan. They were slaughtering the Demon Tribes, but sparing the Wings Clan. As long as they saw the man have wings, that man became invisible in their eyes, and he could save his life from the slaughter.

"Why is this happening?" Di Shan was astounded. "Why aren't the human hotshots killing the Wings Clan? I don't think humans can be that kind. What's going on?"

Yu Rou kept shaking her head, "Weird. Really weird. Can somebody tell me what's going on?"

"All members of the Wings Clan must not be involved!" Di Shan mused for a while and then shouted. "Stay where you are, don't move! No one takes action. We just watch."

Fellows of the Wings Clan wanted to help the Demon Tribe, but on hearing Di Shan, they all stopped.

At the same time, some members of the Wings Clan who had been fighting with the others didn't receive attacks.

They had no clue why the human warriors didn't touch the Wings Clan. This kindness dazzled Di Shan and Yu Rou, as they had a feeling that this was unreal.

"Yeah, without Shi Yan, your Wings Clan would be exterminated!" Dongfang Kuai snorted from the sky. "You lucky b\*stards!"

"Master?"

Di Shan and Yu Rou exchanged confused looks, their faces stunned.

## Chapter 488: We'll do as you say

---

Di Shan and Yu Rou had never expected that Shi Yan was their clan's savior. One year ago, Shi Yan disappeared from the Endless Sea, and no news about him was heard.

And now, while the Endless Sea was having a great change, the leaders of the forces who used to want to kill him, gave him face and spared their Wings Clan.

What was going on?

Di Shan and Yu Rou were suspicious, blankly looking at the change in the sky. They didn't know what made Shi Yan become a blazing character like that.

Strong warriors of the human race were still killing the Demon Tribes. The warriors of the Demon Tribes who had entered the Endless Sea together with the Demon Kings were struggling hard to resist, but they were all killed in the end.

The Wings Clan, under Di Shan and Yu Rou's orders, didn't participate this battle, just standing and observing.

After an unclear period of time, a young man appeared above the Snow Dragon Island. Nu Lang and the War Devil stood behind him.

Qing Ming, Dongfang Kuai, Gu Xio and Wu Qin, the leaders of the Endless Sea discolored as they saw that young man. They instinctively stayed as far from him as possible, afraid that this young man would trouble them.

The Queen of Heaven, Fan Xiang Yun smiled reluctantly and explained softly. "As you've asked, we didn't touch the Wings Clan." Fan Xiang Yun was scared that she would enrage the young man. The rest of them were cautious and anxious at the same time.

The young man observed here and there from the sky and smiled, but didn't say anything.



The Queen of Heaven breathed out in relief, then blinked at Qing Ming and the other, signaling them to continue.

Qing Ming, Dongfang Kuai, Gu Xiao and Wu Qing then hurried to order their men to continue their slaughter. They needed to eradicate the Demon Tribes. Moreover, they warned their men against touching the Wings Clan.

Di Shan and Yu Rou looked at the familiar figure in the sky, their faces shaken. They bent down on one knee, then lifted their heads up to greet him, "Master."

Shi Yan was floating in the sky. He frowned, mused for a while and then descended, landing in front of the two. "Get up."

"We, your servants, don't dare," Di Shan cocked his head, talking with a low tone.

Yu Rou clenched her teeth, didn't say anything.

"Why don't you dare?"

"We don't deserve your effort." Di Shan took a deep breath. When he faced up, his eyes reddened. "We deserve punishment. Please grant us that."

Yu Rou also lifted her head up, her charming face full of guilt. "Master, it's us who weren't determined enough. Please punish us."

"You did nothing wrong." Shi Yan shook his head and sighed. "To save your races, you had to follow Bo Xun. It's alright. If you were stubborn at that time, perhaps I wouldn't have seen you now. Yeah, so you still consider me your master now?"

"Never changed!" Di Shan was shaken, screaming with excitement.

"Although we had to count on Bo Xu, in the bottom of our hearts, Master is always our Master. Di Shan has vowed to obey master as long as our clan exists."

Yu Rou blushed, then nodded determinedly.

"Get up," smiled Shi Yan.

Di Shan and Yu Rou looked at each other, hesitated for a while then stood up. They still felt anxious.

Nu Lang, Yin Hui, Tang Yuan Nan and the others looked at the two Spirit Realm warriors of the Wings Clan with surprise. As they saw the two of them treat Shi Yan with much respect and compliance, they felt it somewhat inconceivable.

They knew that the time Shi Yan had demonstrated his talents wasn't long enough, and that year, Shi Yan's realm was still low, without too many tremendous supports.

However, Di Shan and Yu Rou had recognized him as their master. Had they known of his potential at that time?

Otherwise, why were the Spirit Realm warriors willing to humble themselves and serve him as their master?

Nu Lang and Yin Hui couldn't figure it out.

"Somethings should be forgotten, you know. I won't keep them in mind." Shi Yan smiled coldly. "When we were in the Snow Dragon Island, you guys never hurt me. You even helped me release He Qing Man. When I came near to the Snow Dragon Island, you also reminded me of Bo Xun's presence. I know that you still keep our relationship in hearts. Otherwise, I wouldn't come to Snow Dragon Island today."

Di Shan and Yu Rou were touched.

They got it clear that if Shi Yan didn't come to the island today, the name of the Wings Clan would have been removed from this world.

Although they didn't know why Qing Ming and the others were scared of Shi Yan like that, they could understand that the Wings Clan could avoid this Kalpa thanks to Shi Yan.

"Master has saved us again," Yu Rou said softly. "The Wings Clan

memorizes your favor forever."

"Alright," Shi Yan curled his lips. "The members of the Demon Tribes on this island won't escape death this time. After the Holy Spirit God left the Snow Dragon Island, Heaven and Earth Qi here received a big loss. It's not suitable for you guys to stay here cultivating anymore." He paused, then continued, "Hm, yeah, you should go to Kyara Sea. I'll arrange a suitable island for your tribes."

Of course, Di Shan and Yu Rou wouldn't object him. They constantly nodded to show their agreement.

"Shi Yan," Tang Yuan Nan suddenly sighed, "Although the Snow Dragon Island doesn't have thick essence Qi, there're some good islands for warriors to cultivate in the Yuan Luo Sea. You're the Star God of our Three Gods Sect. According to our Sect's regulations, you have one-third of the jurisdiction. You can assign a good island for them to stay in Yuan Luo Sea."

"Yes, you do have these benefits," Ouyang Luo Shang backed him up.

After this event, both Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang could see how tremendous Shi Yan's competence was.

A person that could gather Nu Lang, Yin Hui, the King Corpses, Xia Qing Hou and Yang Tian Emperor, and even had a War Devil and the King of Demonic Insects... In the future, he would become the peak existence of the entire Endless Sea.

He also had the Star Martial Spirit of the Three Gods Sect.

With this relationship, Tang Yuan Nan obviously wanted to make use of it well. If he could keep Shi Yan in Yuan Luo Sea, the Three Gods Sect could borrow this gust of wind to thrive faster.

As long as Shi Yan nodded, the Three Gods Sect would become one of the strongest forces in the Endless Sea.

"No thanks," Shi Yan just smiled, talking to Di Shan and Yu Rou.

"Where do you want to go? Yuan Luo Sea or the Kyara Sea, it's up to you."

Tang Yuan Nan revealed his concerned face immediately.

"Wherever you go, we'll follow you." Di Shan and Yu Rou expressed themselves.

Shi Yan stayed silent. After a while, under the attentive looks of Nu Lang, Tang Yuan Nan, and the others, he cracked a smile and then instinctively looked in the general direction of the Divine Great Land. "After we get things settled here, I will leave Endless Sea. This place's just a stop in my journey. It's not the final destination."

Everybody was shocked, looking at him.

"Wherever master goes, we will follow you." Di Shan was determined.

Yu Rou nodded.

"Alright, but not now. After I get the way, I will send someone to tell you." Shi Yan smiled. "For now, you guys will go to the Kyara Sea of the Yangs. Yeah, the Yang family does not have much manpower right now. We'll need some support to steady the situation in the Kyara Sea. You guys will stay there temporarily. We'll think about the other stuff later."

Di Shan and Yu Rou nodded.

"Shi Yan," Tang Yuan Nan wore an honest face. "Kid, you're the Star God of our Three Gods Sect. Don't forget that no matter what, the Three Gods Sect walks the same way with you. We'll always be by your side."

Then, Tang Yuan Nan darkened his face, looking at Gu Xiao, Dongfang Kuai, and the others, speaking up with low tone. "If you want to deal with them, the Three Gods Sect won't shirk back."

Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, and their men were still watching over the

movement of Shi Yan's group. When they met Tang Yuan Nan's cold, evil eyes, they discolored, becoming more anxious.

Shi Yan looked towards Tang Yuan Nan's line of sight.

Qing Ming, Gu Xiao, and the others became tenser under Shi Yan's look. The smile on the Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun's face deformed to turn into a forced one, revealing her anxiety.

After this event, everybody recognized that the powers Shi Yan could gather were much more significant than the whole Yang Family!

Nu Lang and Yin Hui were the Sea Tribes' representatives. Xia Qing Hou, Ouyang Luo Shang, and the King Corpse were the new prominent warriors of the Endless Sea.

Besides them, Shi Yan with his external forces could reach the Spirit Realm, and he also had the War Devil, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Devouring Gold Silkworm. With this force, he didn't need Yang Tian Emperor to clean up any force in the Endless Sea.

The Heaven Late Holy Land, the Yin Yang Wonderland, the Gu Family, the Dongfang Family, even if they joined hands now, they could hardly withstand a tremendous threat like Shi Yan.

They were terrified.

Under Shi Yan's gaze, the warriors who had been swaggering around the Endless Sea for so many years had no guts left. They were trying to force ugly smiles, and didn't know what to do now.

"Don't be nervous. There are many ways to solve the grudge between us." Shi Yan was extremely joyful, laughing out loud. "Don't worry. I don't like violence. We can always solve the matters in peace. Yeah, I think you guys don't dare to violate our treaty this time. I believe that you will be content with your lot."

Due to the invasion of the Demon Tribes, and the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Clan turning their back to him, the

agreement he had with Wu Qin and the other was violated by the other party. He still kept this grudge.

As he had the powers enough to destroy these forces now, he didn't need to worry that the terrible history would repeat itself.

"Slow down," Gu Xiao forced a smile on his embarrassed face.

He was the one who witnessed the intimidation of War Devil on the seabed. The deaths of Zou Yue Feng and Situ Jie had shaken him, making him know that this Gu family couldn't deal with the War Devil alone. And now, he had to be honest.

"How about you guys?" Shi Yan laughed evilly, looking at Dongfang Kuai and the others.

"We'll do as you say," Dongfang Kuai cocked his head, feeling helpless.

"That's right."

# Chapter 489: New legend!

---

Half of a month later.

The Endless Sea, after two years of having constant great changes, finally quieted down and steadied.

The forces that used to attack Shi Yan couldn't help but bow their heads under the young man's powers. They had to transfer precious cultivating materials that their clans had been gathering for hundreds of years to the Immortal Island as requested.

The materials those forced had brought was double the amount the Yang family had accumulated for hundreds of years.

After this change, the Yangs were the ones who received the ultimate benefits as not only they got the cultivating materials from the others but also intruded the Demon Area and enslaved the Demon Tribes. They then started to collect the bizarre and precious cultivating materials of the Demon Area that had never existed in the Endless Sea.

After Bo Xun and Chi Yan died, the Demon Area was in chaos. Demon Tribes in the area engaged continuously in wars. They would never become a significant threat to the Endless Sea.

One part of the Yang family was operating their deeds in the Demon Area while the other part took over the Kyara Sea once again.

The Yang had cleaned up the Evil Wonderland, one of their traitors. The cult master got killed on the spot.

The Yang family and the Xia family shared the islands that belonged to the Evil Wonderland. The Xia Family had just become one of the most prominent forces of the Endless Sea as they were walking together with the Yangs family.

Nu Lang and Yin Hui of the Sea Tribes had one drop of the Life Original Fluid for each. They felt delighted.

Nu Lang and Yin Hui maintained their personal relationship with Shi Yan. The Barren City undersea was as rich and prosperous as they had never been before.

On the seabed, no members of the Sea Tribes dared to provoke the Yangs. Nu Lang and Yin Hui had warned all of their members, making them know that the Yang family is the best ally of theirs in the future.

Nu Lang was still the best warrior of the Endless Sea, and the Black Flood Dragon Clan was still the strongest clan.

However, Nu Lang used to admit frankly that in the Endless Sea, the most dangerous person was Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Tian Emperor or Yang Yi Tian, but the new wind Shi Yan.

Nu Lang had stated clearly that one day Shi Yan was there, no tribes of the Sea Tribes were allowed to raise the tide in Endless Sea.

The battle on the Sun Island had changed the whole fate of the Endless Sea and even the Demon Area, becoming the most exciting page in the history. On that page, the name Shi Yan was prominent, more dazzling than the three Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yang Yi Tian. He became the new legend of the Endless Sea.

Chiefs of the four great clans including Nu Lang, Yin Hui, Bao Ke, and Li Sha announced that in the sea areas, they would maintain the trading and the friendship with the Yang family. As long as Shi Yan was alive, the Sea Tribes would still consider the Yang family the master of Barren City. And, they would never have any conspiracy in the city as they would help the Yangs to maintain the order there.

It wasn't because they were giving Yang Tian Emperor face. It was because of Shi Yan.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Yi Tian didn't provoke them because Shi



Yan had killed Zou Yue Feng and Zhong Li Dun. Quite the contrary, they praised the young man as if they didn't hold grudge against him. They even ordered their members not to take revenge on Shi Yan.

Three Gods Sect also became harmonious with the Yangs like they had never been before.

Tang Yuan Nan often came to the Immortal Island to discuss with Shi Yan about the Endless Sea's situations. His manners were tender and humble, never considered himself his precursor but a good friend.

The whole picture of the Endless Sea had changed earth-shockingly because of the presence of a young man.

The Immortal Island.

"This is the Immortal Canon. The miracle effects of the Immortal Martial Spirit and the Immortal Blood are written down in this Canon." Yang Tian Emperor, the leader of the Yangs, smiled in the main hall of the Yang family. He drew an old book from his sleeve and threw it to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan caught the Immortal canon, eyeing it with a strange face. "Great Grandpa, I just want to know the content of the Immortal Canon, you don't need to give me the whole thing."

"Boy, you don't know the pain in our head master's heart?" Shura King Mo Duan Hun shook his head with a forced smile. "The Immortal Canon is the most precious treasure of the Yangs. The headmaster handed it to you now, and don't you know what did he mean?"

In the hall, the two great Shura Kings Mo Duan Hun, Li Mu stood. Besides, the key persons of the Yang family like Yang Zhuo and Yang Lao also appeared. They were all smiling with Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. Afterward, his eyes brightened. "Great Grandpa, I..."

"The Yang family will belong to you in the future." Yang Tian Emperor raised the corners of his mouth. "I've been putting efforts for the whole life, but I could only make the Yang family one of the three outstanding forces of the Endless Sea. And you, you've been to Endless Sea not more than ten years, but you've made the Yang the overlord of the whole sea! I have to say, compared to me, the head of the Yangs now, you're much more eligible to lead the Yangs than me. I'm giving you the Immortal Canon today, which means, I'm announcing to everybody that you are the future headmaster of the Yangs. When I'm in need of secluding cultivation, you will take care of the Yangs on behalf of me."

"Great Grandpa..." Shi Yan forced a smile. He hesitated for a while, caressing the canon then said, "Great Grandpa, I'm afraid I have to fail your expectation."

Strong warriors of the Yangs were confused hearing him saying so.

"Why?" Even Yang Tian Emperor was astounded. "The head of the Yangs in the Endless Sea means the absolute power. You can take it yourself, and it's also what you deserve. Why you deny it?"

"I want to go to the Divine Great Land. The Endless Sea is just a stop in my journey. It's not the final destination." Shi Yan's eyes lit. "I've heard lots about the mysterious, magical things about the Divine Great Land. It's the real center of the warriors in the Grace Mainland. It has the strongest warriors, the most intimidating beasts and clans. They also have the oldest martial spirit inheritance. And, all above that, Xin Yan 's there."

Yang Tian Emperor was surprised. He was stunned for half a day before releasing a sigh. "So your heart isn't here. Yeah, it's alright. With your potential, even when you're at the Divine Great Land, your name will shock the whole world there, sooner or later. Perhaps, it's your real arena."

"So, I just need to read the Immortal Canon for a while." Shi Yan

smiled. "I want to visit the Quiet Cloud Land first to bring my grandfather to the Endless Sea. After that, I'll return the Immortal Canon to you. Yeah, no matter what, I'm from the Yangs. Even I'll be in the Divine Great Land in the future, I always belong to the Yangs. If possible, when I'm settled down there, I hope you - Great Grandfather, and the others will move to the center of the Grace Mainland with me."

Members of the Yang family were shaken, their faces excited.

"In fact, in the eyes of the people from the Divine Great Land, we, the warriors of the Endless Sea, are just barbarians." Shi Yan mused then decided to tell them the truth. "They have the True God warriors or the ten-thousand-years ancient factions. They even have more mysterious lands as their territory's much bigger. It's the peak gathering of the martial path. We shouldn't be the frog sitting under its coconut shell forever."

Yang Tian Emperor said with a happy face. "Boy, you're stronger than I am."

Mo Duan Hun and Li Mu were also amazed, looking at Shi Yan with excited eyes, just like he was hiding a lot of treasures on his body.

"There's no force in the Endless Sea able to threat the Yang family. At this moment, we should envision further," smiled Shi Yan.

Everybody thought a bit then nodded in agreement.

"You want to go to the Quiet Cloud?" Yang Tian Emperor pondered for a while. "It's good though. We should thank the Shi family. Without them, we don't have you now or the glory the Yangs have today. Bloodline's something we can never deny. You go and get'em here."

Paused, Yang Tian Emperor then arranged. "I will assign the Shura Blood Guard to go with you. We'll ride the demonic beasts

then we can bring all the members of the Shi family to Endless Sea at once. What do you think?"

Shi Yan nodded cheerily. "It's awesome then."

"Go. I'll arrange this." Yang Tian Emperor raised his eyebrows, laughing. "With your powers now, needless to mention the Quiet Cloud land, even if it's the Divine Great Land, you can always get there at ease. Yeah, we don't need to bring many hotshots. We just need some beasts to carry more people."

"Yes."

Yang Tian Emperor said his order. Soon, one hundred Shura Blood Guard were ready to deploy from the Immortal Island.

After bidding farewell to the Yang family, Shi Yan didn't linger, riding the Ghost Hunter, which was in its beast form now, heading to the Quiet Cloud.

On the way, he passed across the Yuan Luo Sea. As Tang Yuan Nan knew he wanted to go to the Quiet Cloud land to pick up his family, he didn't say extra words but assigned the Star God Guard he had appointed to ride the Giant Horned Lion Vultures of the Three Gods Sect to go to the Quiet Clouds with him.

Shi Yan wanted to deny but Tang Yuan Nan was persistent. He couldn't deny the other's good deed, just nodded.

Thus, he took one hundred Shura Blood Guards and eighty Star God Guards riding on the Giant Horned Lion Vultures to the Quiet Cloud land.

On their way, warriors of the forces in Endless Sea came to him as they heard the news. Seeing him riding the Ghost Hunter leading the formation, many leaders approached him to talk and ask if he needed help.

Even Yang Tian Emperor that year couldn't have this offer when he went out.

In Endless Sea, no one had ever made all of the forces bow to him.

Shi Yan made it with his young age.

The Cyan Blood Bat and the Giant Horned Lion Vulture were the level 5 or 6 beasts. His Shura Blood Guards and the Star God Guards also had the exquisite cultivation or at least Earth Realm and Nirvana Realm.

Besides the guards, Di Shan, Yu Rou, Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ye Meng - the five great warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Clan, also went with him, plus the War Devil, the Kings of Demonic Insects, the Devouring Gold Silkworm and the Holy Spirit God inside the white bone clone.

This was such a powerful force that could be compared to any force of the Endless Sea.

Even the Cao Family hardly resisted them.

Thus, when they passed by the Cao family, the Caos was so tense and nervous as they thought that he wanted to eradicate the Caos. They had put forth all of their defenses as if a great enemy was about to hit them.

They could only breathe out in relief when Shi Yan and his men crossed over their sea territory.

On a summit of a mountain covered with strange stones, a beautiful woman lifted her face, looking at the young man and his delegation, fixing her pretty eyes on him. Deep regret appeared on her exquisite face. Half a day later, she muttered, "In my whole life, the thing I regret the most is to give up to you."

# Chapter 490: Visit the old place

---

Blue sky hung above the vast, shoreless ocean. Wind breezed in the clear, boundless sky.

Above the sea, the Cyan Blood Bats and the Great Horned Lion Vulture were flying fast. Shi Yan sat neatly on the Ghost Hunter, holding the Immortal Canon, reading with furrowed brows.

The Immortal Canon described the most effective features of the Immortal Martial Spirit and all mysterious, subtle effects of the Immortal Blood.

After reading the Immortal Canon, he knew some ways to use the Immortal Blood. Turns out the Immortal Blood could restore the damaged secret treasures as new. It could even help the demonic beasts thrive greatly.

Besides, the Immortal Blood could predict the future of low realm warriors.

Using the Immortal Blood and the Immortal Rebirth Secrets, he could see the current and past of the warrior he knew. He even could vaguely know that one's life trajectory in future.

Of course, it was limited. He could only perform the technique on warriors whose realms much lower than his.

With Shi Yan's current Sky Realm cultivation base, if he used the Immortal Blood he could see the status of the warriors at lower than the Earth Realm. However, it was more complicated to get the situation of the Nirvana warriors. If it was a warrior at his level, he couldn't use the Immortal Blood to investigate that one's past and present.

Beside predicting things, the Immortal Blood still had another magical effect. With the Immortal Blood in his body, he could cultivate the Immortal Rebirth Secrets. After he had mastered the secrets, later on, when engaging in battle, if his limbs got cut off,

he could use the Immortal Rebirth Secrets to grow his cut limbs back.

To cultivate the Immortal Martial Spirit to the peak, he had to know how to use the Immortal Blood. According to the writing in the Immortal Canon, at the peak realm of the Immortal Martial Spirit, he had to change his blood.

Flooding the veins with the Immortal Blood, using the Immortal Blood to replace his own blood could bring his Immortal Martial Spirit to the peak. At this stage, he would be complete immortal. Even if his flesh body was exploded, he could still come back to life.

When Yang Tian Emperor had been confined by the two Demon Kings, he had been trained and refined by their magic formation. Later on, thanks to the Immortal Blood, he could recover fully.

If Bo Xun and Chi Yan had the Immortal Martial Spirit, on the Sun Island, even if their bodies were smashed, they could have come back to life with the Immortal Martial Spirit, using the Immortal Blood to grow a new flesh body, which wasn't much different from their original bodies.

This was the most miracle effect of the Immortal Blood.

Riding on the Ghost Hunter, studying the Immortal Canon for days, he had a deep understanding of the ingenious features of Immortal Martial Spirit and his Immortal Blood. Eventually, he knew why the Yang family could tower the Endless Sea for so many years.

As long as the Yangs had the Immortal Martial Spirit, with its aid, they would be super strong in fighting. Even their bodies got hurt severely, they could always restore their health and tremendous competencies shortly.

In fighting with people who had the Immortal Martial Spirit, unless you could kill them curtly, once they could lengthen the time, you would fall into the extremely disadvantageous situation.

All sorts of magical, exquisite features of the Immortal Blood and the Immortal Martial Spirit were written in the Immortal Cannon. After one month studying, Shi Yan had memorized all secrets of the canon. Now he was quietly cultivating the most mysterious secret of the Immortal Canon – the Immortal Rebirth Secret.

Several days later, when he had a deep understanding of the Immortal Rebirth Secret, he stashed the Immortal Canon away, closed his eyes and meditating on the Ghost Hunter.

Time flew fast.

It was as short as a blink of an eye, they had left the Endless Sea and appeared in the sky of the Quiet Cloud land.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, looking at the vibrant forest of the general direction of the Merchant Union, couldn't help but smile.

The Shi family is there.

As he was thinking about Shi Jian and Shi Tie, a joyful smile appeared on his face.

"Master."

Di Shan and Yu Rou came forward, calling from five meters away from him.

Shi Yan was surprised, looking suspiciously at the two, frowning. "What's up?"

"We want to go with you to the Divine Great Land. The Wings Clan's and the Demonic Sound Clan's homeland's there." Di Shan slightly cocked his head. "Our homeland has many secret techniques and strange treasures which have been lost for generations. We would like to see if we can take back what belongs to us."

"Don't rush," Shi Yan mused then said coldly. "The Divine Great Land's much complicated than you've pictured. Warriors there are much stronger than the Endless Sea's warrior. I come there but I



won't dare to do any rash actions. I know you are uneasy. Anyway, I think you should stay in the Endless Sea for a while. It's temporary. After I got used to the situation of the Divine Great Land, I'll send someone to reach out to you."

Di Shan and Yu Rou just nodded listening to him, and they didn't say anything else.

"Yeah, we're about to reach the Merchant Union. You guys go prepare, We're landing on Sky Meteor City shortly." Thinking for a while, Shi Yan added, "Remember, don't do anything wild in the city. Follow me. Do not act rashly."

"Got it."

"You guys, too. The Merchant Union now belongs to the Shi family. Don't stir things here up." Shi Yan turned around, looking at the Shura Blood Guards and the Star God Guards, giving them a curt shout.

His Shura Blood Guards and Star God Guards regarded him loudly with serious complexion.

Many Shura Blood Guards and Star God Guards had him like a superstar in their eyes, making him their idol.

Shi Yan's name was famous, spreading out all over the Endless Sea. He was now even more well-known than Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yang Yi Tian. He had become the newest Nova that no one could oppress his halo.

Being led by a character like that, the guards were both excited and proud.

Cyan Blood Bats and the Giant Horned Lion Vultures were fast. Not long after they had entered the airspace of the Quiet Cloud, they arrived at the Merchant Union, flying over the cities of the territory.

"What?"

Shi Yan screamed in surprise observing the ground, his face strange. Among many cities beneath them, which belonged to the Merchant Union, as he focused on watching, he didn't see the flags of the Zuo family and the Shi family. Quite the contrary, he saw many signs of the forces of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire.

Those cities were packed with warriors of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-bless Empire. No one knew what wild schemes they had.

Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness. After passing through a city, his eyebrows slammed together.

The Earth Realm, Disaster Realm warriors of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire gathered in each city just like they were the masters of the city. However, it seemed no member of the Shi family and the Zuo family appeared there.

"It seems something's happened to the Merchant Union..."

Shi Yan's face gradually darkened.

Initially, in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, Zuo Xu and Chi Xiao had told him about the signs of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire having a conspiracy on the Merchant Union, attempting to divide the place. Perhaps, their words had come true.

Since the time he had drawn Xiao Han Yi's power to clean the Beiming Family, the Mo Family, and the Ling Family in the Merchant Union, even though the Merchant Union then belonged to the Shi Family and the Zuo Family, its overall force wasn't as strong as it used to be.

And, that's how the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire saw their chance. They constantly sent their messengers to force the Shi Family and the Zuo Family to submit to them and became their dependencies.

Of course, Shi Jian and Zuo Xu weren't happy. They tried to lengthen the time without saying yes.

Thus, the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire weren't satisfied. From politeness, they gradually turned to forcing step by step. Currently, it seemed they started to take action.

The Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire had some Sky Realm warriors to guard the places. The Shi Family and the Zuo Family could never resist their forces. If Chi Xiao weren't in the Merchant Union, the two empires would have soon taken action on them.

Thoughts popped up continually in his head. Shi Yan's eyes got colder. A mocking smile hung on the corner of his mouth.

If it were him that year, facing the great force of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire, he could have been helpless watching the Merchant Union being invaded meter by meter.

However, ten years after he had entered the Endless Sea, he had reached the Sky Realm, and he had the powers that sent shivers down the Endless Sea's warriors' spines. Both of the empires had no Spirit Realm warrior. In his eyes, they were just a pack of lamb, waiting for his slaughter.

If he wanted, he just needed three days to destroy the two empires.

This was the absolute confidence that the intimidating power brought him.

"Speed up!"

Shi Yan mused for a while then shouted.

He didn't know the situation of the Merchant Union. From what he observed from the cities around, the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire were tyrannical. Perhaps they had entered the Sky Meteor City, which was dangerous to the Shi family.

Since he had entered this world, people from the Shi family did care about his well-being. Shi Jian had a cold face, but his heart warm. He had personally urged Shi Yan every day, keeping track of his cultivation, giving him the martial technique of the Shis. He had been whole-heartedly dedicated to Shi Yan. And, Yang Hai, Shi Yan's father by the name, was also in the Shi family.

After he shouted, he patted the Ghost Hunter by its neck.

The Ghost Hunter shot out like an arrow, using its lightning speed, drawing a black light curve in the air and flying toward the Sky Meteor city.

Swoosh!

The Ghost Hunter covered in thorns appeared in the sky of the Sky Meteor City. A formidable, intimidating pressure covered the whole Sky Meteor City.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness expanded to every corner of the city. He closed his eyes and sensed. Shi Yan exhaled in relief.

People of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire hadn't entered the city yet, which meant the Shi family and the Zuo family were still safe and sound.

As long as all were alright at this time, with his presence, there was no force could threat the Shi family and the Zuo family in the Quiet Cloud land.

Roar!

The Ghost Hunter howled, echoing the whole city. All warriors of the Sky Meteor City were shaken. Some low-realm warriors got their Qi disorderly, couldn't calm their minds down to restore their Qi.

"What a dangerous beast!"

"So scary!"

"Who's coming anyway?"

The warriors of the Sky Meteor City screamed in fear, looking up at the sky with panic-stricken faces.

"Is that the hotshot the God-blessed Empire and the Raging Fire Empire has invited to here?"

"We're doomed."

"We're dead soon."

Many warriors who knew the general situation of the Sky Meteor City were desperately sorrowful.

The Ghost Hunter slowly flew in the general direction of the Shi Family.

# Chapter 491: Sweep away!

---

Everything stayed the same in the Shi family, and nothing was changed. Even though it was the strongest force in the Sky Meteor City, the Shi family maintained their original simplicity. They didn't build any luxurious buildings or gardens on a grand scale to please their eyes.

Slowly descending on the courtyard of the Shi family, Shi Yan frowned while watching here and there. He found that the number of the Shi family members here was bigger than what he had imagined.

"Young, young master Yan!"

The familiar voice came out from a corner. They then saw an overjoyed man rushing out.

Han Zhong.

This man used to be Shi Yan's buddy. However, after ten years of arduous cultivation, he still stayed at the Disaster Realm, and didn't make any step further.

"Long time no see," Shi Yan smiled, seeing someone familiar indeed made him joyful. "Hey dude, you have no progress at all. Why are you still at the Disaster Realm? Haven't you wasted these ten years?"

"I'm not a freak like you, buddy." Han Zhong was cheerful. Looking at the Shura Blood Guards and the Star God Guards following Shi Yan, his smile widened. "I didn't expect that you would come back at this moment. It's good then."

Ye Meng, Di Shan, and Yu Rou landed with their beasts, observing the small manor. They were surprised in thinking that this house was the fortunate land that their master was born in.

Many warriors of the Shi family saw so many strange people coming, and were surprised, walking out from their cultivating

places to see.

Members of the Shi family who used to meet Shi Yan before couldn't hide their amazed faces, dashing towards the group. Shi Dang, Shi Tian Ling, and Shi Tian Luo couldn't press down their surprise, shrieking in extreme joy.

"Where's my grandpa?" Shi Yan frowned. As he didn't see Shi Jian and Shi Tie, he couldn't hide his worry.

"They went to the Zuo's. I think they should be back soon." Shi Dang took a step forward while his eyes brightened. All of a sudden, he cried, "What realm are you at now?"

"Sky Realm."

"What!"

The Shi family members screamed in awe, their faces shaken.

Ten years ago, when Shi Yan left the Sky Meteor City, he was only at the Disaster Realm. This time when he came back, he had the Sky Realm cultivation base. Such a progress was something no one dared to picture.

"How is the situation here?" Shi Yan asked while frowning, "When I flew across the adjacent cities, I saw a lot of warriors of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire. Have they entered the Merchant Union?"

"They have," Shi Dang beamed a forced smile and then sighed. "After the Beiming family, the Mo family and the Ling family were uprooted, the general competence of the Merchant Union hasn't been as strong as before. We can't resist the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire. These two empires are like tigers watching their prey. They want to take our Merchant Union," explained Shi Dang.

It wasn't much different from what Shi Yan had guessed. The two empires had tightened their clamp. In the beginning, they had watched over each other as they were afraid that if they took

action, they would force the Merchant Union to find another place for shelter. That's why they were treating them tenderly.

However, after the two empires had received denial many times from the Shi family and the Zuo family, the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire gradually lost their patience. Under the trigger from the mediator of the Medicine Valley, the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire worked together, preparing to split the Merchant Union, making it the battlefield where they would find out who was the ultimate winner.

When the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire joined hands, it meant the Merchant Union's fate was decided.

The Merchant Union's overall competence wasn't able to deal with any force. At the moment, it was under the clamp of two forces from two sides. In addition, many small forces of the Merchant Union started to rebel. They surrendered to these two empires, which put the Shi family and the Zuo family into isolation.

The two great empires didn't take action yet, as they were using the tactic of invading the Merchant Union step by step. They would put their hands on the surrounding cities first. Then, they would push over to force the Merchant Union. That's how they could take the Merchant Union without destroying it.

"The Medicine Valley works as a mediator," Shi Yan snorted coldly while his eyes darkened. "Oh right, now that I am here, we can have a chance to uproot the rebellious small forces."

"Shi Yan, this time you come here..."

"I want to bring you to the Endless Sea. The whole situation there is settled now. You don't need to worry about anything when you come there. I've arranged everything well." Shi Yan smiled and explained to them. "The Endless Sea's a better place for you to cultivate. The warriors there have richer cultivating materials, much more than the Quiet Cloud. They have more hotshots with



amazing martial techniques. They're one grade higher than the Quiet Cloud."

The Shi family had their eyes brightened, and their faces excited.

"The Endless Sea," muttered Shi Dang. His mouth opened in a joyful smile.

"First, I'll help you guys deal with these troubles."

Waving his hand, Shi Yan signaled Di Shan and the others to come forward. "Di Shan, Ye Meng, you guys take the Shura Blood Guards and the Star God Guards to the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire. Kill all the warriors whose cultivation bases are higher than the Nirvana Realm. Oh, yeah, remember to visit the Medicine Valley, too."

"Yes."

Di Shan and Ye Meng bent their bodies, answering him.

The Shura Blood Guards and the Star God Guards also regarded Shi Yan upon his order. Then, Di Shan and Yu Rou took the Shura Blood Guards, while Ye Meng, and Ka Ba went with the Star God Guards. They both rode the beasts, and after they had adjusted the formation, they waited for Shi Yan's order.

"If there're Nirvana Realm warriors in the adjacent cities, kill them all." Shi Yan mused and then said, "Don't mind the warriors lower than Nirvana Realm. The bosses are the ones who have the highest realms. Just kill them. Now go!"

Di Shan and the others put on serious expressions, then nodded to show that they understood.

In just a blink, Shura Blood Guard and the Star God Guards disappeared.

Shi Dang, Shi Tian Ling and Han Zhong dropped their jaws, their eyes wide-opened.

"Shi Yan, the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire

have the Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors," Shi Dang's face was complicated, "Are we taking risks?"

"Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors?" Shi Yan just smiled, shaking his head. "Don't worry. Warriors at this realm can't even defend themselves in front of our force."

"What realm those people have?" Shi Dang was surprised, his whole body shaken.

"Spirit Realm," Shi Yan curled his lips. "Five Spirit Realm warriors taking action at the same time, no need to mention the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire, even if they are in the Endless Sea, how many forces could resist them?"

People of the Shi family was dumbfounded, looking at him like they were looking at a monster.

It was just ten years. Not only had Shi Yan reached the Sky Realm, he also could invite the five Spirit Realm warriors to come with him. From their attitude towards him, it seemed like he was the boss here, having the absolute power over those five people.

It was so strange that the Shi family's members couldn't even think it through.

Shi Yan smiled, but didn't attempt to explain to them.

At this moment, no warrior of the Quiet Cloud could compare to him. The strong warriors who, in their eyes, they could never reach, were so fragile to him that he could smash them at any minute. Since the gap between their realms was too wide, communicating was actually a problem.

If he told them that he could change the wind and stir the rain in the Endless Sea, making the warriors on the sea and on the seabed bow to respect him, he didn't know how they would think about him.

Big difference indeed.

"You guys should prepare. After we're done, we'll be getting back to the Endless Sea together." Musing for a while, he then spoke up to Shi Dang. "There's nothing to linger or regret in the God-blessed Empire. Wait until you come to Endless Sea, you'll soon find what the Merchant Union has, the Endless Sea has the same. Things that the Merchant Union doesn't have, Endless Sea has them all. Yeah, I've prepared the cultivating materials for you guys. Don't worry about that. After we get there, you'll have everything you need."

Shi Dang didn't know what to say.

"Haha!" Loud laughter came from afar along with a group of warriors. "Stinky boy, it's just been ten years, and we can't even recognize you."

Shi Jian, Shi Tie, Zuo Xu, Zuo Shi, Yang Hai and the others emerged. Shi Jian was laughing cheerily while, shouting. "Brother Zuo, you're right. This kid's changed too much."

"As I saw the beasts pack the sky, I knew that this kid Shi Yan was back. Besides him, who could make such noisy moves?" Zuo Xu smiled. "I knew he won't forget us, and that he will come for us. Haha."

"Grandfather," Shi Yan revealed real joy, went forward while slightly bending his body to greet them. Then, he shifted his eyes to Yang Hai. "Father."

"This time, I come back with the hope to bring you guys to the Endless Sea. We shouldn't stay in the Quiet Cloud any longer."

He explained his plan again.

"Good."

Shi Jian replied him briefly. "Since brother Zuo told us about the rich world out there, we've prepared for our departure to the Endless Sea one day. We've been fully prepared since half a year ago. Even if you didn't come, after a while, we would have moved."

"If you had gone there half a year ago, entering the Endless Sea would have been risky and troublesome." Shi Yan smiled. "However, it's no problem now. The situation of the Endless Sea is steadied. Come with me, I'll have everything arranged sufficiently. As we're well prepared, we don't need to worry anymore."

"Is it true?"

"Really?"

"Even the cultivating materials are collected?"

"Argh. At present, the things I don't lack the most are the medicines, pellets, ores or crystals to cultivate. It's true that I have everything you guys may need."

The others all wore a disbelieving face.

"Don't worry. After you get there, you'll see that I'm not lying. Things you can think about, I can always provide. Actually, you can trash away the things you have here. They aren't valuable."

"..."

They didn't know what to say.

## Chapter 492: Proper arrangement

---

The Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire were swept away.

Di Shan, Yu Rou, Yi Tian Mo, Ye Meng, and Ka Ba were five Spirit Realm warriors, who could withstand them in the Quiet Cloud? Within five days, the hotshots of the Raging Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire were terminated. They had no Nirvana Realm warriors left now.

Under the absolute power, these empires showed that how weak and fragile they were. A strong warrior himself alone could burn down many empires into ashes, and their name would disappear from the map forever.

This slaughter made all the warriors of the Quiet Cloud know what was the consequence of going against the Shi family.

The Quiet Cloud now had no force that dared to fight with the Shi Family. Although the Shi Family had left for the Endless Sea, their fame had been spread through the entire Quiet Cloud because of Shi Yan.

Under the Shi Family's arrangement, the Shi Family and the Zuo family didn't linger in the Sky Meteor City, gathering their members and leaving the Quiet Cloud together with Shi Yan, heading towards the Endless Sea.

During their journey, Shi Yan had refined some secret treasures and given them to his relatives, in the hope that they could help the Shi family improve their strength.

After he had been imparted with the memories of an excellent blacksmith, he would fabricate some toys whenever he had time.

In the Endless Sea, he had asked for the cultivating materials from the other forces, so there were enough of them for him to waste as much as he pleased. This huge amount of materials had

become his consumable goods, becoming the solid supply for his refining.

Members of the Shi family were so joyful they even went crazy when they received the treasures. No one had expected that after just ten years, Shi Yan had reached the Sky Realm and had even become a blacksmith. They were so surprised that they didn't know what method he had used to progress that fast during these ten years.

After two months, Shi Yan and his relatives arrived at the Tuta Sea.

He didn't hurry to reach the Immortal Island. Shi Yan visited the Corpse God Sect in Tuta Sea, found the two King Corpses and gave them four drops of his Immortal Blood to help them evolve faster.

After he had formed a good friendship with the King Corpses, he recognized that the King Corpses had always treated him with care. King Corpses were different from mankind. If they trusted someone, they would treat them the best, and never plan any wild schemes against their friends. Shi Yan was happy realizing this.

The Immortal Blood had a miraculous effect on demonic beasts and living beings with flesh entity. After the King Corpses had taken in the two drops of Immortal Blood, they vaguely had a blood connection with Shi Yan. They then treated him even closer and better, just like a family member.

As he was about to leave the Endless Sea, he hoped that he could arrange things in the Endless Sea properly. The King Corpses had earth-shaking powers; they would become the intimidating existence in the sea area. If he had the warm support from them, even if he weren't in the Endless Sea, the Yang family would stand still Mount Taishan. No force could threaten them.

After spending a couple of days at the Corpse God Sect, he departed again to the Immortal Island.

He stopped at another stop in the Yuan Luo Sea.

On the Moon Island, Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang received him grandly. All the elders of the Three Gods Sect were present, as everybody wore a respectful face, as they considered him their Star God.

"I return the Star God Guards to you," Shi Yan smiled. "I want to leave the Endless Sea and visit the Divine Great Land. I have something I want to make clear to you guys."

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang showed that they were paying the utmost attention.

"I've been to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist and got to know an old faction of the Divine Great Land." Shi Yan mused, then shared the current situation. "The Radiant God Cult's one of the seven old factions of the Divine Great Land. They have a ten-thousand-year history. The Radiant God Cult also has the Sun, Moon, and Star Gods. They have the Flame Sun Martial Spirit, the Silver Moon Martial Spirit, and the Star God Martial Spirit. Their understanding of these martial spirits is much deeper than yours. There're True God Realm warriors in this ancient faction. There's a delicate relationship between the Three Gods Sect and them. I assumed that the ancestors of the Three Gods Sect came from the Radiant God Cult of the Divine Great Land."

He shared them the information he knew about the Radiant God Cult and the Three Gods Sect.

"I can assure that the Radiant God Cult in the Divine Great Land is the origin of the Three Gods Sect. This time, I will go to the Divine Great Land. If nothing is unexpected, I'll visit the Radiant God Cult." Shi Yan's countenance was calm. "If you have something you want to talk to the Radiant God Cult, and you don't mind, just tell me. I'll deliver your message. Of course, you can go to the Radiant God Cult yourself. I think they would host you guys with joy. Your realms aren't low. I think you could have a good

position if you go there."

The Spirit Realm warriors were considered the hotshots in the Divine Great Land too. If these two went to the Divine Great Land and visited the Radiant God Cult, warriors there would receive them with joy. As they would have more powers to support their cult, of course, they wouldn't deny.

However, at that time, Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang wouldn't have the freedom they had now.

In the Endless Sea, these two were the masters of the Three Gods Sect, so they could do whatever they wanted and arrange the Three Gods Sect as they pleased. They didn't need to watch people's faces to act.

However, once they joined the Radiant God Cult, they wouldn't have such freedom. At that time, perhaps they would become the elders of the Radiant God Cult, but they would be under the command of the Radiant God Cult's Cult Master. Moreover, the stronger elders there could always assign them to do tasks.

The battles in the Divine Great Land were much fiercer than in the Endless Sea. If the Radiant God Cult's people arranged them to fight against strong enemies, they could even lose their lives.

But there were also immense benefits.

When they joined the Radiant God Cult, they could have the cultivating materials related to their martial spirits. This could help them shorten the time needed to break through. If they could thrive well there, perhaps they could have the superior position, which would give them bigger powers than what they had in the Endless Sea.

There were pros and cons for them to consider definitely.

After he had finished, Ouyang Luo Shang and Tang Yuan Nan pondered, but didn't hurry to show their opinions. Shi Yan didn't want them to make up their minds immediately, so he didn't urge



them.

Afterward, Tang Yuan Nan took a deep breath. "We need to think more carefully whether or not to go to the Divine Great Land. In the case we don't have enough power but hurry to get there, it won't be a wise decision. Yeah, we need time to consider it."

"It's up to you," Shi Yan nodded. Suddenly, he blinked at Tang Yuan Nan, signaling him to send the other elders away.

Tang Yuan Nan followed him.

In just a flash, people gathering in the Three Gods Sect disappeared, leaving only Shi Yan, Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang.

"These are two drops of the Life Original Fluid. I hope it could help you somehow. Take them." Shi Yan took out two special drops, handing them to Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang respectively. "I know you found it strange why Yin Hui and Nu Lang of the Sea Tribes respect me a lot. The Life Original Fluid is the answer."

Thump Thump...

Heartbeat arose from the two drops of the Life Original Fluid, which surprised Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang.

"The Life Original Fluid is extremely precious to the Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors. It could increase the chance to break through the True God Realm and ease a lot of barriers."

Shi Yan told them the effects of the Life Original Fluid.

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang had their eyes brightened, and couldn't hide their astonishment.

"Too precious," Tang Yuan Nan trembled, rubbing his hands embarrassedly. "How we can take it. We didn't help you much."

"No need to help me, as long as you show your good friendship." Shi Yan smiled. "Take it. This stuff will be crucial for your

cultivation in the future. I do hope that you guys would enter the True God Realm one day. I just hope that you would remember my favor today at that time."

Tang Yuan Nan and Ouyang Luo Shang nodded solemnly, taking the Life Original Fluid. Although they didn't say anything, their visages told him many things.

"Yeah, I have a final request." Shi Yan smiled, looking at the Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang and said shyly, "Since I was in the Sky Meteor City, you've been covered in the moonlight. I have never seen your real appearance. I regret that. Can I have a look at your true self now?"

Ouyang Luo Shang's tender body shivered tenderly. Under the haze moonlight, her eyes seemed bright.

"Cough, I have some stuff to do." Tang Yuan Nan was tactful, leaving in awkwardness.

When there were only the two of them, Moon God asked, "Why are you curious about my appearance?" The clear, but cold voice came from the mouth of the beautiful figure.

"I'm just curious. No other reason."

"Alright."

The moonlight gradually ceased. The peerless beauty that could make all living creatures fall slowly revealed from the haze. She was like a translucent crystal jade, like the moonlight that had been refined for thousands of years. Dreamy and imaginary like a fairy, or a charming devil, her beauty shook and moved all hearts.

Shi Yan was stunned like a wooden rooster.

That face could only appear in dreams by chance, hard to describe in mere words. So exquisite, fine to the acme.

"You should reveal your true face sometimes." A while later, he sighed slightly. "I'm afraid that very few men in this world would

not be moved by your appearance. This is earth-shaking, and really rare in this world. Today, my vision has indeed been widened."

"Am I that pretty?" Moon God curled her lips, beaming a strange smile. "Guys like you are also astounded because of me?"

"Of course, of course," Shi Yan nodded his head continually. "I think all men in this world would be jealous to death of the man who has you."

"No man's good! Harrumph!" Moon God snorted, her face disdainful.

Shi Yan shut his mouth, and beamed a forced smile. "If a guy's bad having the desire for beauty, I think all men in this world are bad guys."

"Have you watched enough?" Moon God stiffened her face. The moonlight covered her fully once again. She spoke up with a cold attitude. "If you're done, go away. Perhaps we'll meet up again in the Divine Great Land. I hope you would truly have the Spirit Realm cultivation base instead of borrowing external forces at that time. I can tell you that I'll enter the Second Sky of Spirit Realm in the next half year. I expect that you, the Star God, won't be lazy. Don't fail the Star Martial Spirit in you."

Shi Yan was dumbstruck.

## Chapter 493: Pay the favor with the body ?

---

Shi Yan wore a bewildered face while walking to Tang Yuan Nan's reef, beaming a forced smile while shaking his head.

He vaguely felt that the Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang wasn't close to him, and she seemed to disdain him too. This made him suspicious of what she had to be arrogant.

It was true that this woman's realm was high. But it was actually because of her absorption of the moonlight during her one thousand years of being sealed.

It was okay if she didn't appreciate him for giving her the drop of the Life Original Fluid. However, getting scolded for watching her face made Shi Yan indignant. He then regretted his generous deed.

"How is it?" Tang Yuan Nan smiled wickedly. "Aren't you disappointed?"

"Well, not bad. A world treasure... But her attitude is stinky." Shi Yan forced a smile. "She scolded me for nothing. Does she have any mental problems?"

"Haha... She thought that you've been using external forces, which is not good for your cultivation base in the future. In her eyes, only the powers of your own are eternal. If you depend on the others every time you fight, you'll be dependent, and this will hold back your cultivating progress."

Tang Yuan Nan smiled and explained, "She just wants the best for you. Perhaps she thought that your cultivating speed's too fast, and your foundation isn't stable. This would trouble your cultivation in the future. Although she's more than one thousand years old, she's still a juvenile little girl. She doesn't know how to hide her feelings. You shouldn't blame her."

Shi Yan still felt angry. "It's my stuff. Why does she need to poke her nose in?"

"The Star Martial Spirit on your body came from Ouyang Zhi, her elder. This is what we call 'love the house and its crow.'"

"Ha ha, is that 'love the house and its crow'?" Shi Yan burst out laughing, then shook his head begrudgingly. "Forget it. I don't mind her. I gotta go now. Later on, if the Yangs meet trouble in Endless Sea, please give me face and aid them."

"With Yang Tian Emperor there, they don't need my help. You shouldn't be worried about insignificant matters," smiled Tang Yuan Nan.

"Human affairs are variable. Although the Yang family can make the Endless Sea be afraid of it, it doesn't mean it would last forever. Anyway, it's good if you remember my favor."

"Wait!"

Tang Yuan Nan stopped him.

"What else..."

"Someone has been waiting for you for too long here. Do you want to meet that person?"

"Eh?" Shi Yan's face was suspicious, then he asked with astonishment. "Who's waiting for me?"

"The Holy Maiden Qu Yan Qing from the Heaven Lake Holy Land. Half a month ago, she came here, found me and asked me to introduce her to you. It seems she knew that you would pass by the Three Gods Sect on your way back. Perhaps it's because of the Star God Guards you brought. This woman's mysterious though."

Tang Yuan Nan mused for a while and then said, "Previously, she had sent me the news that you'd killed Zou Yue Feng, Situ Jie and Zhong Li Dun on the seabed. She said that you would return to the Endless Sea soon. I felt strange, too. I don't know why she wanted to hide the matter from Wu Qin and tell us the information related to you."

Shi Yan was surprised.

"It's hard to guess women's mind. If you don't want to see her, you can leave now. I'll talk to her."

"Where is she?"

"In the small island in the south of the Moon Island. That place is secluded, without any guards. She's been there for half a month, didn't go out even once."

"I'll go and check."

Shi Yan's heart filled with doubt while he said farewell to Tang Yuan Nan and flew towards the south of the Moon Island. He found that small manor in a bamboo jungle near the shore.

A charming, tender figure appeared behind the window of a five-level bamboo house. Strange light flashed in her eyes as she was scrutinizing Shi Yan.

The man frowned, getting in the room through the window. He threw the woman a glance and then said coldly, "What do you want to talk to me?"

Squeak!

Qu Yan Qing closed the door after Shi Yan had entered the room. She took off the mask on her face, revealing the face that could shake all living creatures.

Smiling mildly, the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Holy Land said softly. "I hope you could take me with you."

"Take you with me?" Shi Yan arched his brow, cracking an eccentric smile. "How do you know I'm about to leave?"

"I've heard that you've been to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, and now you want to come to the Divine Great Land. This isn't secret information, though. What's so strange to know this?" Qu Yan Qing's smile was like warm sunlight as she was leaning against the window. "I want to see the marvel of the Divine Great Land.

But I don't dare to cross the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. I hope you could lead the way."

"You don't want to be the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Holy Land anymore? Why do you want to go to the Divine Great Land?"

"The Heaven Lake Holy Land is nothing compared to you." Qu Yan Qing's red lips trembled, as a strange expression flashed on her face. "It's just been a few years. When we were chasing after you in the Chasm Battlefield, you didn't even have the Nirvana Realm cultivation base. But now, you've reached the Second Sky of Sky Realm. You even have an intimidating support. You have steadied the whole Endless Sea, and even my master has to consider his words when talking about you. He's afraid that you would come to the Heaven Lake Holy Land and kill us all one day. People who went against you that year are living in fear day after day like they're sleeping on pins and needles, worrying that you would find them and take revenge."

"I said I let it go, so I won't revert back on my words." Shi Yan snorted and then shouted. "Do you think that everybody would be like your master regarding the agreement bullsh\*t and that he could change it at any time as he pleases?"

"Of course, you aren't," Qu Yan Qing smiled, "That's why I come to you."

"What do you want after all?"

"I want to pursuit stronger power. I want to see the Divine Great Land and seek more knowledge. But the best thing is that I want to be your woman. Even being a concubine is okay." Her beautiful eyes were bright and hot, sparkling with the brilliance that mesmerized people. She was looking at him daringly.

Shi Yan was shaken, his face disbelieving. "Are you crazy?"

"I'm not," Qu Yan Qing took a deep breath, raising her milky white ample bosom. "In the abandoned place, you did many dirty

things. You touched me. And, it was the same the time you came back. You bullied me..."

The little beauty had her face blush, her voice fading out as she lowered her head. She didn't even dare to look at him in the eyes.

"I didn't sleep with you." Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "I just touched you a bit. Do you really need to pay back my favor with such a deed?"

"You!"

The Holy Maiden suddenly lifted her head, rolling her eyes at him indignantly. "Anyway, you did bad things to me. If you don't care about me, I will announce to everybody to destroy your reputation. I will ruin you and bring shame to you."

"Well, then do it. It's no harm to me. I think something trivial like this is just like a joke to amuse other people. You will be the one who bears the biggest loss." Shi Yan cracked a bizarre smile.

Since she couldn't play hard, the beautiful woman switched to her 'soft skills'. She turned into a breeze of aroma, jumping onto Shi Yan's lap, pressing her big breasts against his chest. Her red lips caressed his earlobe, whispering. "Am I not pretty? A beautiful woman like me jumps into your chest, but you aren't moved? I can promise you that as long as you want me, even if when you get married to Xia Xin Yan, I won't regret it. I'm not bad, right? Even more tender than her!"

Wonderful fragrance permeated the air with the beauty in his chest. Shi Yan got his masculine reaction under the attack of that generous bosom.

The beauty in his lap could feel that as she giggled. "Well, and you said you didn't like me. See? Just nod, I will let you..."

Her voice was so seducing, as she was ready for him to do whatever he wanted with her; as if she was pitiful that Shi Yan hadn't eaten her on the spot right now.



‘Mother\*\*\*\*, she delivers herself to me!’

Shi Yan’s eye became hot. He hesitated for a while and then gritted his teeth. He grabbed the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Holy Land, put her against the wall of the bamboo building and started his dirty deed with the woman.

"Ah..."

Qu Yan Qing’s beautiful eyes turned hazy, moaning softly as her supple body got hotter.

"After I’m done with the stuff in the Divine Great Land, I’ll take you there." Shi Yan thrust his hands into her clothes, stroking her plentiful creamy areas.

"No!"

The little beauty wiggled, calmed herself, panted, and then said through gritted teeth. "Wait until you bring me to the Divine Great Land, you’ll have what you want from me. Now, you’ll take me there with you, and I’ll follow you. Or, you’ll take me there after you are done with the stuff at that place. It’s your call. Otherwise, you will ask me to wait for you here and enjoy yourself there. Isn’t it me waiting for you the whole life without a positive result?"

At this hot moment, she was still practical enough to restrain the sexual desire and bargain with him.

As she said so, Shi Yan’s desire also decreased. He frowned and then said deliberately. "Alright."

"You agree with me?" Qu Yan Qing was surprised. "You want to take me to the Divine Great Land with you?"

"Yeah, but later. Save your body for me. I’ll come for you later." Shi Yan raised the corner of his mouth, kissed her roughly and then flew away.

Qu Yan Qing held a disappointed visage, her eyes glum.

"How was it?" Tang Yuan Nan smiled.

"Nothing significant!" Shi Yan wore an indifferent face. "Watch that woman after I leave. Yeah, don't let others kill her."

"You got it." Tang Yuan Nan said, "If she meets troubles, I will give you face by aiding her. Don't worry. Haha, it's good to be young and full of vitality. Well, I understand love though. No wonder why that little girl betrayed Wu Qin and sent us your news. You've tamed her. Kid, you're experienced, your style's just like mine that year!"

"..."

"I got it. Don't worry. I will take care of your woman." Tang Yuan Nan nodded continually, patting his chest to look more trustworthy.

"Alright, don't talk nonsense. We'll see each other again."

After bidding farewell to Tang Yuan Nan, the delegation departed again. Ten days later, they arrived at the Immortal Island.

Two months later, after Shi Yan had arranged everything properly for the Shi family and the Zuo family, he impatiently continued his journey.

## Chapter 494: The coldest place

---

One month later, Shi Yan entered the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist again, where no heaven and earth powers existed, and darkness covered the place year round.

He saw the familiar scenes and the unchanged magnetic field in the exotic land. Nothing in this place conformed to common sense. Islands and mountain ranges were floating in the air, moving slowly in certain trajectories.

He'd been there once before, so he understood the situation. Thus, he didn't panic.

After he had identified the correct direction, he flew towards the East of the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, with a speed that was neither fast nor slow.

The War Devil, the Ghost Hunter, and the Holy Spirit God in its white bone clone were dormant inside the Blood Vein Ring, not having even a beam of vitality.

The Blood Vein Ring was truly a God level secret treasure. The other Storage Rings could only contain dead things and stuff. Meanwhile, the Blood Vein Ring was much different, as it could generate suitable land and precise space for living beings to survive inside.

It was the same for the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, the War Devil and the Ghost Hunter. It seemed that the ring had some rule in defiance of natural order, or, it understood well some kind of principle in heaven and earth.

Up till now, Shi Yan hadn't explored all the mysterious features of the Blood Vein ring. Anyways, he knew that this ring was the biggest support and the most mysterious secret of the whole Grace Mainland that he shouldn't let anyone else know about.

While crossing through the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, he

seriously studied the Immortal Rebirth Secret, not caring about his meals or sleep and cultivating arduously. Whenever he met the bottleneck in his cultivation, he switched to refining secret treasures, seizing the chance to moderate his mind and spirit. With this method, he achieved big progress in cultivating the Immortal Rebirth Secret. Also, he gained a good grasp over many fascinating formations for refining tools.

After he got through the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, his understanding of the Immortal Rebirth Secret had taken a big leap. Now, he could use his Immortal Blood to see the past and the present of the Shi family. When he burned the Immortal Blood, he could see Shi Dang's face.

However, he couldn't see Shi Dang's future using the Immortal Blood yet.

Only if he mastered the Immortal Rebirth Secret could he use the Immortal Blood to vaguely see some details about Shi Dang's future.

Among the past, the present, and the future, the future was the most unpredictable. When he reached a certain realm and a certain understanding of the Immortal Rebirth Secret, he could do that.

Spending half a year inside the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, he finally crossed the natural barrier between the Endless Sea and the Divine Great Land, appearing above a deep blue sea area.

Using the sun to identify the East, he continued flying.

When he had departed from the Endless Sea, he made up his mind that unless he fell into a life-threatening situation, he would never borrow external forces.

Although the external forces like the Ice Cold Flame, the Holy Spirit God, and the War Devil could help him have the power much beyond the warriors at the same level, these forces didn't belong to him. If he got dependent on them, he would have a hard

time achieving a big breakthrough in the future.

What the Moon God Ouyang Luo Shang told him had irritated him, but he couldn't deny that those were precious words indeed.

The cultivation of a warrior was a rough way without a shortcut. He needed to do everything himself.

If he considered using the external forces as a natural tactic, and always thought about borrowing them even when he hadn't met any deadly situation instead of using his own strength, he would gradually move towards his own decline.

Then, it would eventually change his mentality, leading to his imposing will and daring spirit waning away.

That's why he put the War Devil, the Holy Spirit God, and the Ghost Hunter into the Blood Vein Ring. He had decided that from now on, except for the cases of encountering a seriously deadly situation, he would never use them.

After he had made up his mind, it seemed his confidence and will had returned to him.

Later on, when he was cultivating, he found out the change of his characteristic, which was like a catalyst that could help him gain more during learning and comprehending powers.

He landed after flying over the deep blue sea for half a month.

It was a vast jungle without a visible boundary. Old trees jutted up, towering to the sky. It was like that year when he had descended in the gloomy, deep forest, which filled his vision completely with a green hue. The air here was fresh, and the essence Qi was a little extraordinary.

Crossing through this thick forest, he continued walking Eastward. After another half month, he reached a snowy mountain range. Snowflakes fluttered everywhere, and snow piled up at the summit of the mountain range. The place had an extremely low temperature, that could make anyone shiver.

This was a place of bitter cold.

Looking at the snowcapped mountains and the unceasing fluttering snowflakes, he knew where he was.

The Far East of the Divine Great Land, the Bitter Cold Land, a snow mountain region covered by snow year round.

This was the west area of the Ice Emperor City, one of the seven cities of the Fighting Union in the Divine Great Land. The back garden of the Ice Emperor City had so many beasts and spirit herbs of ice class. All warriors of the Ice Emperor City considered this place their training court to whet their martial arts.

The Bitter Cold Land had nearly one hundred snow mountains, hiding many ice class cultivating materials. Only warriors of the Ice Emperor City dared to explore this place. As for other warriors of the Divine Great Land, the cultivating materials of this place had little value to them.

In the eyes of the old factions in the Divine Great Land, the Bitter Cold Land was worth its name. It wasn't a place suitable for warriors to cultivate, and didn't have treasures precious enough to catch the eyes of the other warriors.

After crossing the Bitter Cold Land, it was the Ice Emperor City, one of the seven cities of the Fighting Union. This city was nearest to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist in the far west of the Divine Great Land. This meant that when the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist opened, this place could become more crowded. Usually, there weren't many warriors visiting the place.

The Ice Emperor City among the seven cities of the Fighting Union was the most rural area with poorest cultivating materials and weakest forces. There weren't many products here or citizens, leading to a small number of innate warriors.

Thoughts continually ran through his mind, while Shi Yan was calm and deliberate. He didn't fly over the Bitter Cold Land

directly and descended from the sky.

The Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist didn't have the powers from heaven and earth for him to borrow. Along the way, he had been concentrating on his arduous cultivation and refining, which drained a lot of power from him. Then, he had flown with max speed after passing the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist without a rest stop, until he reached the Bitter Cold Land. Currently, the Profound Qi in his body was consumed by 70%.

He needed to recover his strength to maintain his best condition.

Snow mountains followed one after another. He came to a snow mountain around three thousand meters tall, dug a cave and got in. He took out the crystals from his Storage Ring and closed his eyes, starting to cultivate.

Time flew by.

He opened his eyes, letting his Soul Consciousness sense his body. As he felt the Profound Qi fill his body, he smiled and got up to continue his journey through the snow mountain.

With his Second Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base, at normal speed, it would take around seven or eight days to cross the Bitter Cold Land. If he had used the support from the star brilliance or the Electric Shift to fly with the max speed, he could shorten the time to three or four days. However, if he did that, crossing the Bitter Cold Land would cost him 70-80% of the Profound Qi.

Getting out of the cave and looking at the fluttering snowflakes and the white mountain flanks, he took a deep breath of cold air before starting to move.

All of a sudden, the Ice Cold Flame sent him a message from the Blood Vein Ring.

"This place's really cold. Let me out and check. Perhaps I can find something."

A white flame flew out from the ring, shooting out of the cave. It

was like a snow white spirit, dragging snowflakes everywhere just like the flickering candlelight, which gave people a strange, demonic aesthetic.

"Boundless snow mountain ranges, extremely low temperature... Not bad, this place is a good place." The Ice Cold Flame seemed to use its own method to observe the area. It continually sent Shi Yan its thoughts, "It's snowing year round here... Such a cold aura! Perhaps this place could have the Cold Chalcedony. Yeah, this sort of soil should be able to produce the Cold Chalcedony. Let's search for it."

The Ice Cold Flame flew away, swaying in the shower of snowflakes like an ice flower.

Shi Yan didn't disturb it, just standing and watching from his cave.

Half a day later, the Ice Cold Flame came back from afar. The white flame seemed to be joyful. "There should be the Cold Chalcedony. If I maintain my sensing, I can sense the Cold Chalcedony when I get close to it. It's beneficial to the Holy Spirit God. Every living being of the cold class desires the Cold Chalcedony a lot."

"What's it good for?"

"There are no big and vast snow mountains like these in the Quiet Cloud or the Endless Sea. Snow here won't melt year round. It should have many spirit herbs and treasures of cold class, which hardly grow in the Quiet Cloud or the Endless Sea. The Cold Chalcedony's the essence of the cold air in liquid form. Only the ten-thousand-year-old cold snow mountain could generate this precious substance. I can see the cold air's really heavy in this area. Perhaps it has a ten-thousand-years snow mountain somewhere. It should be the highest mount. That's why the cold air could spread through many other smaller snow mounts."

"The Cold Chalcedony's the essence of the snow mountain, a rare



treasure of cold class. To cold class living beings like me, it's the fairy pellet. Eating the Cold Chalcedony and absorbing the cold air could help me evolve perhaps. My power will grow tremendously."

The Ice Cold Flame was excited, sending Shi Yan its assumption.

"Okay. Then we should keep an eye on it along the way. Maybe we can harvest something." Shi Yan smiled, "As I promised you guys, as long as you find something that could help you evolve, I'll try my best to obtain it."

The Ice Cold Flame jumped in joy.

"Let's go."

Shi Yan took a breath of cold air, walking carefully in the void. The Ice Cold Flame turned into an ice flame flower, sitting on his shoulder. Along the way, it kept releasing its Spiritual Awareness to sense around.

Two days later, the Ice Cold Flame got excited all of a sudden. It didn't wait for Shi Yan's order, flying towards a ten-thousand-meter tall mountain.

## Chapter 495: Two beautiful sisters

---

That snow mountain pierced the sky. At first glance, people could see the glistening glacier at the flank of the mountain. Cold brilliance dazzled the eyes, stirring people's minds with a cold feeling.

The Ice Cold Flame seemed to have made some discovery, turning into a beam of light and got into the glacier directly, disappearing in a flash.

Shi Yan knew this could be the coldest snow mountain the flame told him about, which could produce the Cold Chalcedony.

Shi Yan flew to that snow mountain while releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense what was anomalous inside.

"Eh?"

Two not too feeble souls showed up behind the mountain. When his Soul Consciousness got near that area, these two souls reacted, rippling their Soul Consciousness like a gust of wind blowing on his Soul Consciousness, making it shiver.

It seemed that their Soul Consciousness was one grade higher than his, as they could make his Soul Consciousness generate a cold feeling that affected his Host Soul, giving him shivers.

But Shi Yan wasn't anxious. He retrieved his Soul Consciousness as his body was swift as an electric current, shooting towards the source of the two Soul Consciousness.

The back of the snow mountain was a shaded area that had never been exposed to sunlight. Snow there was thick like layers of ice.

Lying amidst the long snow block was a stream from where cold air emitted. The water there was extremely cold. Surrounding the stream was some sort of plants, around 30 centimeters tall, and brilliant as a crystal.

These plants looked roughly two hundred years old with the same height. They fanned out, radiating light with a faint aroma.

Standing in the middle of these plants were two bright-skinned girls, wearing a snow-white fur coat. They looked like the two snowflakes in the snow mountain, looking at him with unfriendly complexions.

These two girls were around twenty years old. Their looks and manners were pretty similar. They should be sisters.

Cold air spread out from them. As their physique seemed to have cold attributes, they should be warriors of the Ice Emperor City. They had an extraordinary cultivation base at the Third Sky of Sky Realm.

"Who are you? Why do you come to the snow mountain of our Ice Emperor city?" The older girl shouted coldly with her ice cold voice. "Are you here to steal the Cold Heart Grass?"

"It's obvious," The other pretty pouted her lips, her face indignant. "There's only this mountain in our Ice Emperor city that has more cold class spirit herbs. People always want to steal them. I'm so sick of it! You aren't cultivating cold class cultivation method, so why do you need the Cold Heart Grass? Well, it's obvious that you want to sell them, don't you?"

This pair of beautiful sisters had considered Shi Yan a thief right away. Their manners weren't good, and they had a cold voice. They seemed ready to take action.

"No. I just crossed this place by chance. I felt your aura, so I came to check. I have no other intention." Shi Yan smiled, relaxing his nerves. "I've just crossed through the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist to get here. I haven't met any warrior along the way. I was curious when I found you two. I don't want to steal your spirit herbs."

"Are you trying to fool us?" The little beauty cracked a cold smile from the corner of her mouth, but she still looked naïve. "People

came from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist had come back two years ago. The ones who didn't come back should have died inside the dark mist. It's been so long, and now you say that you walked out of that place. Liar!"

"What do you want?" The older beauty said with her cold face. "This is the territory of the Ice Emperor City. Even people from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist have to notify us before they arrive. People from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, I've met them all. However, I have no impression of you."

"Argh. I didn't come to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist from the Ice Emperor City." Shi Yan shook his head, talking deliberately. "I've entered the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist from the Endless Sea. Of course, you haven't met me before."

"The Endless Sea?"

The two sisters were surprised and shouted in awe, but he could see the trail of doubt in their eyes.

The Ice Emperor City was in the far West of the Divine Great Land, the Bitter Cold Land, the other sea area, and the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist separated it from the Endless Sea. The Ice Emperor City was a force of the Divine Great Land, which was nearest to the Endless Sea. If these two sisters were the citizens of the Ice Emperor city, they should have heard about the Endless Sea.

However, they had never heard that people of the Endless Sea could cross the extremely dangerous Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist to enter the Divine Great Land.

"It's true. I'm from the Endless Sea." Shi Yan thought he didn't need to conceal anything. "In your eyes, the Endless Sea is a barren place and the warriors of the Endless Sea are barbarians, right?"

"Everybody thinks so," The younger one nodded. "Such a rural area can't have any strong warriors. Even the cultivating materials

are poor, and the secret treasures are always in a shortage. Of course, you can't have any peak warrior. Well, isn't it true?"

She was talking naturally and interrogating Shi Yan.

"No matter how rural the area is, it can always have strong warriors. You could only say that the Divine Great Land is much luckier with more strong warriors." Shi Yan frowned and explained to them patiently.

He was waiting for the Ice Cold Flame before continuing his journey. Since he had nothing to do in the meanwhile, a little chitchat with these two beautiful sisters brought no harm but help him to kill time.

"Are you from the Endless Sea?"

The little beauty eyed him. It seemed her curiosity was growing just like she had just found an ape. "Are there more warriors like you in the Endless Sea, who have the Sky Realm cultivation base? Is your hometown very poor? Do people eat human meat there? I heard that the Endless Sea is so uncivilized that many people starve to death." The little girl spoke continually like she was singing and couldn't stop it.

In her thoughts, the Endless Sea was a place of barbarians, and people there were living like the ancient times, uncivilized with so strange traditions beyond her comprehension.

Shi Yan's face darkened.

He finally knew how the people of the Divine Great Land thought about other people from other places. These people were born with the feeling of superiority, as they always thought that they were the center of the Grace Mainland.

For them, people from outside were all barbarians, stupid and weak with all sorts of eccentric traditions.

"Is it true?"

The little beauty stopped her questionnaire on seeing Shi Yan's countenance. She studied him with curiosity and then continued.

"No, it's not."

"So how is it?"

"Same as you guys."

"Argh, I don't buy it."

"Up to you."

"You stink. An outsider like you who comes to our land should be honest. Don't let others teach you a lesson."

"Ha ha."

"Alright," the older girl was obviously losing her patience. She interrupted them coldly, waving her hand like she was shooing insects away. "Move. Don't linger here. You aren't allowed to stay near this tallest mountain. If we see you again, you won't be able to live comfortably."

Shi Yan shrugged, his face faint. "Goodbye."

Then, he left the place, flying to somewhere not far from there to find a quiet place and wait for the Ice Cold Flame.

According to the Ice Cold Flame, the Cold Chalcedony stayed hidden inside the freezing snow mountain, and even he couldn't enter that place.

The Cold Ice Flame had a special shape, along with its especially cold features. Shi Yan believed that if the Cold Chalcedony did exist inside the coldest mountain, the Ice Cold Flame could take it with ease. Thus, he didn't need to join it or be anxious, just waiting for the flame like an outsider waiting for good news.

"Jie-jie, do you believe him?" After Shi Yan left, the little sister Bing Wei (lit. the ice flowering fern – TL) asked while plucking the Cold Heart Grass with care.

"I don't care where he comes from as long as he doesn't affect our work here." Bing Qiang (lit. ice wild rose – TL) frowned. "Mei-mei, we should be careful on the way back. I felt something wrong when we came here. Currently. There're some rumors in the city saying that some elder has a close relationship with the Heaven Temple. I'm afraid something bad would happen."

"I know who!" Bing Wei snorted, "Should be that woman! Previously, she had left the Ice Emperor, so she could visit the Heaven Temple. She always wanted to replace our adoptive mother to be the host of our city. Well, she's been consistent in her conspiracy for too long, I guess she couldn't hold it now."

"You are not allowed to say these words!" Bing Qiang rolled her eyes. "Even our adoptive mother doesn't dare to say that. Don't babble. If she hears it, even our adoptive mother can't protect you. Remember, even if you are indignant, don't show it!"

"No one's here. Why do you need to be so tense?" Bing Wei didn't care. "She wants to be the master of the city so much that she's crazy now. I didn't expect that she wanted to use the force of the Heaven Temple. That b\*tch doesn't have any sense of honor indeed."

"Don't call her 'b\*tch.' No matter what, she's our senior." Bing Qiang was begrudging. "You little girl don't know how to keep your mouth shut. That's why you always cause grudges. If they didn't catch you because of your bad verbal behavior, we wouldn't need to be here to harvest this stupid Cold Heart Grass."

"Jie-jie, sorry. It's my bad you have to be here with me," Bing Wei cocked her head, feeling pitiful.

"We're sisters, don't say that. You should pay more attention." Bing Qiang mused for a while. "You are openly against her. With her habit of bearing grudges, she would trouble you more for sure. It's inconvenient for her to take action against you in the Ice Emperor City, but she knows we will be there for these plants. I'm

afraid she would send someone to attack us. Be careful, don't let her men attack us."

"Our adoptive mother's still in the city. Does she dare?"

"She even wants to replace our mother. What else does she not dare? Sigh. Little girl, you're too naïve. The city's complicated now. Our adoptive mother sent us here so that we can avoid the surging tide. Too bad we don't know who has disclosed that we'd be here. There should be her henchman staying near our mother."

"Ah, what should we do?"

"We can't do much. Protecting ourselves well will also be a help to her."



# Chapter 496: Retrieve

---

In the world of ice and snow, Shi Yan was waiting for the Ice Cold Flame in silence.

A long time passed after the pair of pretty sisters had collected enough Cold Heart Grass and left. They were always careful, as if they were guarding against something.

Shi Yan didn't pay much attention to their story.

After four hours, the Ice Cold Flame had finally come back, turning into a white flame floating in front of him. It looked a bit distressed, and even its flame didn't flicker lively.

"What happened?"

"The Cold Chalcedony exists. But someone has taken it. I didn't find it anywhere."

Shi Yan smiled as if he had known the results beforehand.

Since the Bitter Cold Land was under the control of the Ice Emperor Land, and there weren't many types of cultivating materials there, the authority should have taken all materials they could reach in this area. The Cold Chalcedony that his Ice Cold Flame mentioned was extremely precious, which was much useful to warriors cultivating ice class methods.

Most of the warriors of the Ice Emperor City had been cultivating using methods of ice class. If they knew this cold snow mountain could produce the Cold Chalcedony, they would never let it slip away.

"It's alright if we couldn't get it. We still have plenty of time. Perhaps we could have it during our journey."

He comforted the Ice Cold Flame and then asked it to come back to the Blood Vein Ring.

The Ice Cold Flame got into the ring and gradually quieted down.

Looking at the fluttering snowflakes covering the place, Shi Yan didn't linger, gliding through the coldest mountain and flying towards the Ice Emperor City.

...

One day later, he suddenly stopped at a shorter snow mountain, furrowing his brows and looking at the event happening in front of him.

That pair of beautiful sisters were in trouble.

Seven warriors wearing the uniform of the Heaven Temple were besieging the beautiful girls. They seemed to want to kill them both.

From five hundred meters away, he concentrated to observe and then let out a low shout. A strange smile cracked on his face.

This world was small indeed.

The Heaven Temple's warriors, who were surrounding the beautiful sisters, had gold-colored silky fibers shooting out of their fingers. Apparently, they were from the Ning family of the Heaven Temple.

Different from the other new outstanding forces of the Divine Great Land like the Fighting Union, the Heaven Temple had a long history. It was formed by several ancient families, and the Ning family was one of them. This family was famous for their insects and worm taming skills. His Devouring Gold Silkworm came from this family.

He had bumped into Ning Ze from this family in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. The Devouring Gold Silkworm staying in his Blood Vein Ring also belonged to this family.

The Ning family of the Heaven Temple.

They were using the secret technique gold silky fibers. Gold light radiated brilliantly from those silkworm fibers dancing in the air

like gold snakes, surrounding the two sisters and narrowing their clamps. As this situation accelerated, these two pretty sisters would have no leeway not long afterward.

Apparently, the Devouring Gold Silkworm could feel the surging energy of the gold silk fibers, and it flew out of the Blood Vein Ring.

This Devouring Gold Silkworm was a level 7 beast. However, after taking in four drops of the Immortal Blood, it had grown up several times bigger, with light dazzling on its golden armor. It seemed that this beast would enter the realm of a level 8 beast soon.

Beasts of worm class had to struggle really hard to evolve. However, once they could evolve, their powers would be enhanced greatly.

So, in the world of demonic beasts, beasts with small volume could be more significant after they had their powers improved. For example, the King of Demonic Insect; compared to the same level demonic beasts with a larger build, this level 8 beast was much tougher to play with, as it was agile with had its power concentrated to a greater extent. Also, these small build beasts usually had special additional skills.

If the Devouring Gold Silkworm could make one step further to the realm of level 8 beasts, it could reveal some innate ability, just like the martial spirits of warriors; really magical.

As soon as the Devouring Gold Silkworm appeared, warriors of the Ning family all sensed it. They stopped attacking Bing Wei and Bing Qiang, all looking at Shi Yan with surprise.

"Number Four!"

One warrior exclaimed, his face excited.

"Is that the Number Four!"

The Ning family's warriors screamed, leaving the pair of

beautiful sisters aside and storming towards Shi Yan.

Shi Yan frowned, threw the Devouring Gold Silkworm a glance and discreetly sent it a message. "What's going on?"

"The gold silk fibers they're using come from my body. I want to take them back." The Devouring Gold Silkworm told him, "These strands of gold silk were taken from me. They're a part of my body. When they come back to my body, my general powers could be enhanced. I want to take them back!"

Shi Yan was astounded.

Not waiting for his order, the Devouring Gold Silkworm flew out all of a sudden. Gold light dazzled from its body, rippling out like waves of water. Surging energy of metal class shot towards the seven warriors of the Ning family.

"Damn insect! You dare?"

The Ning warrior who took the lead was a bearded guy with peak Sky Realm strength. He snorted, as a small bell emerged in his palm. Golden light flashed in his eyes, as a strange force started to pour into the bell in his palm, making it jingle with strange sound waves. The Devouring Gold Silkworm trembled and screamed ear-splittingly. It seemed that it got affected by these waves.

That bell was a secret treasure used to control the Devouring Gold Silkworm. The Ning family had experience in raising and training Devouring Gold Silkworm. They knew what kind of noise the Devouring Gold Silkworm was afraid of. The sound wave that came from the bell was the archenemy of the Devouring Gold Silkworm, which could shake its incomplete soul to weaken it and force it to give in.

"Master."

The Devouring Gold Silkworm sent him a message by its feeble soul, seeking Shi Yan's help.

Roar!

Shi Yan gathered his strength, roaring loudly towards the leading Ning warrior. His voice was like a tsunami storming forward, breaking the sound waves of the bell.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm's golden halo strengthened again, rippling out. This made the warriors of the Ning family pale as if they saw their archenemies, trying to avoid it.

The golden halo of the Devouring Gold Silkworm was like a light sword that a warrior could generate, extremely sharp. Once they got hit, it would slash through them.

Warriors of the Ning family understood that clearly, so they were trying their best to avoid that gold halo.

"Kill that brat!"

The leader warrior of the Ning was shaking his bell, pointing at Shi Yan and shouting at his men.

The other six Sky Realm warriors split up, pincer-attacking Shi Yan.

There were three Third Sky of Sky Realm warriors and three Second Sky of Sky Realm warriors among the six of them. With their first moves, they were as swift as six electric currents shooting towards Shi Yan, attempting to kill him in one strike.

"Cold Thorn Ice Beam!"

Bing Qiang's cold, sharp voice arose on time. A misty energy suddenly swarmed over.

In the shower of snowflakes in front of Shi Yan, the cold air had cracked like a giant ice block into ice beams. Cold air expanded from inside the beams just like sharp swords, stabbing the six Sky Realm warriors, who were fiercely storming towards Shi Yan, from behind.

"Cold Ice Energy!"

Bing Wei let out a slight shout, thrusting her white pair of hands

into the ground.

Countless snowflakes gathered to form two snow wolves, which looked really lively and formidable, storming towards the bearded warrior.

The two sisters understood that it was their chance. If Shi Yan died, the next ones to be killed would be them. Thus, they attacked the other without any hesitation.

As they were cultivating the ice technique, in such a place with abundant of snow and ice, their powers were strengthened greatly. Their ambush had released the pressure on Shi Yan.

Three out of six warriors attacking Shi Yan couldn't help but turn back and counter the ice beams shooting towards them, leaving the other three to deal with Shi Yan.

"Scorpio Poisonous Miasma!"

Three warriors of the Ning family coming to him all waved their sleeves. Green poisonous smoke came out violently, together with a strong gust. The poisonous smoke condensed into a scorpion in the sky, swinging its tail while dashing towards him with a pungent smell.

The scorpion made from poisonous smoke was made of a corrosive gas. As it was coming closer, even the air around it was trembling, as green liquid dripped down from the vapors.

Shi Yan didn't change his expression, but his eyes gradually got colder. The Dark Light Shield was activated.

He slightly raised his left hand, waving in the void. Many palms shot out from the Dark Light Shield just like claws of ghosts, snatching the toxic scorpion condensed by the poisonous gas. The big scorpion then split up into numerous smaller scorpions, just like a ripped off sheet of fabric, scattering away.

Thousand Hand Shift!

This was a technique he learned from the Ice Cold Flame. Just like the Electric Shift and Phantom Shift, it was a technique that used the Profound Qi. When he urged it, it would appear as thousands of hands striking together. In a short time, it could create a twisted area with a strong energy. The stronger the energy was, the more terrible the twisted space got.

As soon as the poisonous scorpion was scattered, Shi Yan stormed forward without using the negative energies. An explosion burst out in the void, striking forward like a fiery flame, aiming for one of the Second Sky of Sky Realm warrior.

"You want to die?"

That warrior just smiled coldly, without having any trace of fear. The bones of his entire body were rattling like a toxic scorpion as he twisted his body. Green miasma gushed out one wave after from his ten fingers. The dark, cold air swarmed over, covering Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's face and limbs were motionless, his body shooting out like a shell.

Crack Crack!

Ten fingers of that man clamped on Shi Yan's head, but they couldn't bear such a strong force and his joints burst off.

Right after that, Shi Yan hit his chest, as strong as a collapsing mountain, bringing the force of a ten thousand soldiers.

BANG!

That man simply exploded. The bones all over his body were smashed broken, juttred out from the flesh. He looked pathetically terrible.

He had underestimated Shi Yan's sturdy body. After his Petrification Martial Spirit had mutated, Shi Yan himself could be considered as a small mountain. If he struck with all of his force, he could truly make things explode. The poor man could have never imagined that, so he was bound to fall in such a catastrophic

way.



# Chapter 497: Two sisters of a blended family

---

BANG BANG!

Two warriors of the Ning family utilized all of their powers, using the Scorpio secret technique which contained all kinds of scorpion attacks in its intent domain, pouring out on Shi Yan.

However, even under that fierce, full-force attack, Shi Yan was safe and sound, floating in the air. His firm, upright figure was like a high mountain, that gave people a helpless feeling that he wasn't an easily shaken man.

Shi Yan killed one then stood still, not hurrying to launch another attack, and just let the other two bombard him.

Shi Yan wanted to test the limit of his mutated Petrification Martial Spirit and see what degree of attack it could bear. When the power of the other two attacked him, the strange energy in his flesh was strangely activated, generating a defense that easily dissolved the other two's attack.

The two warriors were all at the Second Sky of Sky Realm. However, even when they had used all of their strength, they couldn't even leave a scratch on Shi Yan.

It seemed the warriors at the same level couldn't threaten him at all, as just the power in his flesh body was enough to deal with their full-force attacks.

After five seconds, Shi Yan got hit at least seventy times, yet he simply stood still.

"Motherf\*cker!"

The two warriors screamed, their face furious but their hearts shivering.

Although they were all warriors at the Second Sky of Sky Realm, Shi Yan stood motionless and let them bombard him as much as

they wanted without moving a finger to defend. This frightened the two, and anxiety grew in them rapidly.

The other three warriors had a higher realm, but they were fighting with the two sisters. After just a glance, they all looked at Shi Yan with astounded faces. They were discreetly afraid inside, not having a clue what kind of a monster Shi Yan was.

"Nonsense."

Shaking his head, Shi Yan declared their death sentence.

The Death Seals were released.

Seven seals leaped up, as a desolate intent domain flooded out from them. In just a flash, it affected the spirit and soul of the two, making them shiver in fear, unable to use their powers anymore.

He was like a sharp sword that could pierce through anything, violently storming towards the other two. After using the Death Seal, he could take their lives at ease.

He had the natural superiority.

As their bodies were weaker, they had to die. Nothing was unexpected. After the Death Seal was released, its intent domain had affected them, which prevented them from launching effective attacks. When they got approached by a furious close-combat warrior like Shi Yan, basically, they had no strength to withstand at all.

Crack Crack!

Their bones were fragmented, and their internal organs were smashed into pieces too.

Two strands of sparkling gold fibers flew out from their bodies. The Devouring Gold Silkworm took them in.

Shi Yan frowned, looking at the leader who was shaking the bell, and thundered. His shout was like a grumbling tsunami, which totally subdued the sound waves from the bell.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm rebelled.

Like a bunch of golden lights, it shot directly towards that man's chest. Ten gold silky fibers darted out like tentacles, covering the man.

The golden strands slashed his body, and he was put to death by dismemberment. His death was extremely terrible.

The other three warriors of the Ning family were fighting Bing Qiang and Bing Wei. Seeing that shocking scene, they screamed in fear and ran for their lives.

The Devouring Gold Silkworm turned into a beam of gold light, chasing after them. With the dazzling gold light chasing after them, the three warriors of the Heaven Temple couldn't escape their deaths. The gold strands cut them into small pieces, and the gold silky fibers that used to belong to the Devouring Gold Silkworm were all taken back.

The essence Qi from the seven Sky Realm warriors flew out, silently entering Shi Yan's acupuncture points.

The battle ended.

Pieces of flesh covered the ground.

The two sisters paled. They looked at the bloody ground, taking in the blood scent. Their faces held a disgust, trying to avoid stepping on the blood on the ground while waving Shi Yan from afar.

After the Devouring Gold Silkworm retrieved its golden strands, it behaved nicely and returned to the Blood Vein Ring, eating the desperate souls of the dead in the strands to purify them.

Shi Yan stood quietly and sensed. He found that the essence Qi he had taken from the seven warriors had been filtered by the Mysterious Martial Spirit, and the negative energies it brought were within his endurance, which would not lead him into insanity. Although he hadn't recognized it yet, his Mysterious

Martial Spirit seemed to have advanced, as it could store more Qi now.

Realizing that it should be no trouble, he smiled and then walked to the two sisters, speaking up coldly. "What should I call you?"

"Bing Qiang."

"Bing Wei."

"Nice to meet you," Shi Yan smiled, "Why did they chase after you guys?"

The two girls kept silent and didn't answer him.

Shi Yan nodded as if he understood something. "Got it, see you later." Then, he was about to leave.

"Wait a minute," Bing Qiang held him.

"What's up?" Shi Yan frowned, his face cold. "You and I aren't familiar. I attacked the Heaven Temple's people not because of you, so need to thank me. Except for that, we have no relation or anything to talk about. So, what do you want to tell me?" He didn't want to be the hero rescuing the beauty. Killing people from the Ning family was because the Devouring Gold Silkworm wanted to take back its gold strands, retrieving a part of the powers that belonged to it.

He didn't think that these two girls would be so touched that they would cry in front of him. To him, it was just a small interlude.

"Whether you did it on purpose or without a purpose, you saved us." Bing Qiang's eyes were bright as she looked at him. "You are going to cross the Ice Emperor City, right? If you don't mind, we can be your host there and treat you well in the Ice Emperor City. Will you give us face?"

"No need," Shaking his head, Shi Yan wore an indifferent visage. "I'm going to cross the Ice Emperor City, but I won't stay there. I

don't need to bother you guys."

"You, why are you so stingy? My sister has never invited a man before. You didn't give her face at all." Bing Wei yelled as if she wanted to take justice for her sister. "Although you've saved us, you can't be too proud or arrogant. We owe you, so we'll pay you back when we get into the city."

Shi Yan was surprised. "Am I too proud and arrogant?"

"Yes, you are."

"Well, say anything you want." Shi Yan burst out laughing, not wanting to talk more to these two girls. He turned around and walked away.

At this moment, Xia Xin Yan was still confined in the Pure Land. He didn't know when they would take her soul. Because of this threat, Shi Yan didn't want to waste time during his journey, as he wanted to visit the Radiant God Cult and use their force to negotiate with the Pure Land in the hope that he could bring Xia Xin Yan back as soon as possible.

"Wait a minute," Bing Qiang, the older girl, stopped him again.

Shi Yan wore an impatient complexion. "What's else?"

"We're having troubles. We can't ensure our safety along the way back. But it'll be alright if we arrive at the Ice Emperor City. Could you please go with us?" This time, Bing Qiang's countenance was a little bit glum. The previous trail of coldness disappeared from her face. It looked like she wasn't used to asking people, so saying these words was hard for her.

"Jie-jie!" Bing Wei yelled, "Don't beg him! The seven of them are all dead. We should be safe."

Bing Qiang shook her head. "It's not that easy. The Ning family has ears and eyes everywhere. There should be more than these seven warriors near the Ice Emperor City. As long as we aren't in the city, we are not safe."

"Are you begging me?" Shi Yan tsk-tsked and smiled.

"Yeah, you can think so." Bing Qiang greeted her teeth, her face grimaced as if she wanted to say something but kept it in. The coldness and pride on her face faded away.

"What's in it for me?"

"You... What do you want?" Bing Qiang revealed her anxious face. "I can see you want the Cold Heart Grass. If you accompany us to the city, I'll give you five pieces of the Cold Heart Grass. What do you think?"

"Not interested." Shi Yan shook his head determinedly. Since he wasn't cultivating cold class techniques, this Cold Heart Grass held no interest for him.

"What do you want then?" Bing Qiang's eyes were flurried. Although her face didn't change, her voice wasn't calm anymore.

Shi Yan frowned, then rubbed his chin, raking his eyes over the two girls. He suddenly burst out laughing.

"Forget it. Never mind. You can go now." Bing Qiang discolored, her tone cold and serious.

"B\*stard!" Bing Wei cursed under her breath, rolling her eyes at him with a cautious face. The cold energy in her body was gathering silently. She was prepared to attack.

"Do you have the Cold Chalcedony?"

As the girls heard his words, their beautiful face paled, their bodies shivering. They now glared at him indignantly.

"Even if you want big, it shouldn't be that big, you know?" Bing Wei disdained. "Do you know the meaning of the Cold Chalcedony to our Ice Emperor City? Well, I didn't expect that you would dare to ask for the Cold Chalcedony. Let alone the fact that we don't have it, even if we had it, we wouldn't give it to you even if we have to die."

"Is that Cold Chalcedony more precious than your lives?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Nonsense!" Bing Wei wasn't polite to him. "The Cold Chalcedony is the most precious treasure of the ice cold class techniques. Even our lives are not worth a drop of the Cold Chalcedony. You know nothing, but you dare to ask for it. Well, it's true that you come from the Endless Sea then."

Bing Qiang eyed him like she was observing a monster. She seemed to think that his request was ridiculous.

"Never mind," Shaking his head, Shi Yan walked away breezily.

"He doesn't want to go with us, but we can always follow him. Although his power is astounding, his flying speed isn't too fast. He can't leave us behind." Bing Wei smiled cunningly. She didn't wait for her sister's response, flying behind Shi Yan like a snow fox.

As Bing Qiang was still stunned, she had flown one kilometer away. Begrudgingly, Bing Qiang had no choice but follow her as she thought that this method wasn't so bad.

She could see that although Shi Yan looked cold, he wasn't a b\*stard. His realm wasn't high, but his pure physical strength was tremendous. His flesh body could be as hard as steel. With a freak like him accompanying them, even if they encountered ambushes, perhaps they could borrow his power to flee away.

Bing Qiang thought and agreed with her little sister's deed. Although it was cheeky, it was okay to save their lives.

# Chapter 498: Ice Emperor City

---

Of course, Shi Yan knew that Bing Qiang and Bing Wei were flying behind him, but he didn't care because he was too lazy to care.

He was flying over the long range of the snow mountains in the Bitter Cold Land at a moderate speed. Three days later, he finally left the snowcapped mountains behind, and a majestic, ice rock city appeared in front of his eyes.

That city was built of rigid ice, just like a ghost hatchet or the work of God. It looked majestically magnificent. Under the sunlight, the whole city was sparkling with a dazzling icy light, as if it were a dreamy, crystal city that overwhelmed people.

Ice Emperor City, one of the seven cities of the Fighting Union.

As he got closer to the Ice Emperor City, he found that the number of warriors operating around was increasing. There were many Nirvana Realm and Sky Realm warriors walking outside the city. They were riding on the snow beasts or flying devices made of ice, which had Profound Qi crystals or demon crystals inlaid to provide energy.

Shi Yan opened his Soul Consciousness to sense when he was still outside the city. He found a strange cold Qi inside the wall of the city, creating a cold air shield which kept the Ice Emperor City cold. Immense cold Qi wandered in the air without dispersing.

Such a big city like this was surrounded by the cold air barrier, that kept the temperature inside the city no higher than the snow mountain.

Warriors who didn't cultivate ice cold technique would find it quite uncomfortable on entering the Ice Emperor City, as they couldn't adapt well to the weather.

Warriors specialized in fire class would have the most



uncomfortable experience visiting the Ice Emperor City. If they stayed there for a long time, their cultivation base wouldn't thrive, and they wouldn't be able to break through their realms.

As the two sisters saw the Ice Emperor City, they breathed out in relief, loosening their tense nerves.

They exchanged looks, then sped up their low pace.

Soon, they came to Shi Yan. Bing Qiang frowned while looking at him, "We're about to enter the city. If you don't mind, we will host you and take you to see the attractions in the city. What do you say?"

"No need. I'm going to cross this city. I won't stay for long." Shi Yan denied her offer with a desolate visage. He nodded at her and then accelerated towards the city's gate.

"He doesn't know how to appreciate kindness." Bing Wei harrumphed, throwing a glance at his back while panting in rage. "You never talk much to strangers. This guy isn't tactful, not giving us face at all. I think such a freak like him will hardly live in peace in our Divine Great Land, even if he has a tremendous, strange strength."

"This man isn't ordinary." Bing Qiang's face was solemn, as light flared from her eyes. "If he really comes from the Endless Sea, we shouldn't look down on him. The opening time of Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist passed one year ago. You know, after the opening time gets over, that place will become five times more dangerous. Let alone the fact that he's just a Sky Realm warrior, even a Spirit Realm warrior can't get out intact if he isn't familiar with the situation in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. Moreover, he has the Devouring Gold Silkworm of the Ning family. I think you've heard that Ning Ze and his group couldn't get out alive from the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist even though they were strong. And now that guy has the Devouring Gold Silkworm. I think you know what it means."

Hearing her sister say so, Bing Wei was a bit surprised. "But his realm isn't so high. How could he cross the closing Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist and take the Devouring Gold Silkworm of the Ning family?"

"That's why I said this guy's mysterious." Bing Qiang frowned and snorted, "Do you really think that I invited him because I appreciated his deed of saving us? I just wanted to probe and see who this man is."

"Ah," Bing Wei got it and was slightly startled, "Too bad he didn't care about us at all. Your scheme was wasted, sister."

"Oh yeah, forget him. We should get into the city first and then tell mother about the previous experience."

After that, Bing Qiang and her sister Bing Wei went into the City. The guards at the gate greeted them with respectful faces.

Handing them a medium quality Qi crystal, Shi Yan got his entry to the city. Observing the ice structures along the way, he thought he was lost in a dreamy crystal kingdom. He really liked the beautiful scenes here.

Shi Yan took a breath of cold air, strolling on the road. His eyes sparkled while he was observing the situation in the Ice Emperor City.

There were many warriors in the Ice Emperor City, and most of them were cultivating techniques with cold attributes. He could recognize this from the features of their bodies and their aura.

The warriors in the city had different realms. Disaster Realm, Earth Realm, Nirvana Realm and Sky Realm. They were everywhere. Sometimes, Shi Yan could even sense hidden cold aura in some corners. This aura felt was like it was merged with the cold air of the city.

They should be Spirit Realm warriors. Warriors at this realm could blend themselves together with nature, as their aura would

be the same as the surrounding ambiance. With just a thought, they could stir a change in heaven and earth. In this realm, they were good at using the powers of nature. In their Sea of Consciousness, they even could project everything happening around them, as if they had the eyes of God.

In Ice Emperor City, there were shops selling stuff to warriors, including cultivating materials, essence Qi jade, spirit herbs or fruits, many kinds of hard metals, and different types of pellets that could draw cold air.

Besides the shops, Ice Emperor City had many strange training courts. Some courts had much higher gravity levels than normal, while the others had thick ice chambers, flaming rooms, or walls decorated with martial technique scriptures.

These training courts were built with special methods to meet the needs of warriors who cultivated special techniques. For instance, the ice chambers always maintained a low temperature for warriors with ice class cultivation. They would choose a suitable place and practice their cold attribute techniques. This environment would help them condense the pure cold Qi, using the cold air as their big support.

The gravity courts divided into different grades. Some had the ten times greater gravity, while the others had twenty times or even a hundred times greater level. When warrior cultivated in this sort of a training court under the extreme gravity, their body's endurance capacity would be enhanced dozen of times. The more load they could bear, the more arduous it was to train in this court, and the bigger benefit they could harvest in the end.

The number of the training courts was more than the number of the shops here. Of course, if they wanted to have a slot to cultivate there, they had to pay with essence Qi crystals.

After taking one round around the city, he found that they had a trihedral ice crystal in front of the main gate. This was the symbol

of the Ice Emperor City. This symbol indicated that all training courts belonged to the Ice Emperor City, part of properties of the City Master.

When Shi Yan was still in the Quiet Cloud and the Endless Sea, these two gathering points didn't lack trading places for warriors, but it was rare to see the facilities like what he was observing in Ice Emperor City, with different attributes training courts for warriors. After taking a tour around the city, Shi Yan felt quite surprised.

Then, Shi Yan came to a place with the same symbol of the City Master's properties. It was a heavy-gravity training yard. Looking at the chambers with a sharp, pointy shape, he suddenly wanted to try the gravity training court.

Since his Petrification Martial Spirit had mutated, the weight of his body had increased sharply. He seldom paid attention to the change of the Petrification Martial Spirit, as he didn't train it much. In his mind, this special martial spirit had reached its peak already, and it should be tough to have another breakthrough.

However, when he knew that these chambers had ten or even dozens of times heavier gravity setting, he suddenly had a thought.

Perhaps, this kind of gravitational chamber could help test the strange situation of his body.

"Are you a warrior from outside? You look strange, eh? Want to cultivate in the gravitational chambers?" When he got through the door, he saw a hefty, dark-skinned man who was around two meters tall. That man was standing in front of a 30x gravitational room. The stranger smiled at him and asked amicably.

This burly man had the Nirvana Realm cultivation base. His look was rough, with a double-bladed silver axe that was around three meters large on his back. However, this man had a simple-minded appearance.

Standing next to him was a female warrior around thirty years old, also having the Nirvana Realm cultivation base. She had a wheatish skin tone, and wore silver leather armor. This woman was about 1.8 meters tall. Her face was not pretty, however, she had a beautiful build with no fat on her tummy. She was long-limbed, and with a hot body.

It seemed that these two came here to whet their cultivation. An imposing aura expanded from them. They obviously had a life full of bloody battles.

"Yeah, I just came to the Ice Emperor City, so I want to practice a bit in the gravitational chamber." Shi Yan nodded to the two of them, his manners neither cold nor friendly.

The gravitational chambers divided into ten big courts. Each court was around one thousand square meters in size. From left to right, there was a pattern of one to ten mountains carved on the doors of the rooms respectively.

The leftmost gravitational room had a small mountain carved on the door. This meant that when warriors entered this place, it would be like they were carrying a small mountain on their back when they had to endure the gravity that was ten times greater.

The rightmost door had ten small mountains, which meant they would experience the load equal to ten mountains on their shoulders in that room. Warriors with low realms could hardly breath well in that room. In severe cases, the gravity would surely break their thigh bones.

A warrior of the Ice Emperor City guarded at the entrance of each chamber to collect the Qi crystals and classify the warriors' levels.

For example, they wouldn't allow the warriors under Disaster Realm to enter the room with seventy or eighty times heavier gravity. Even if they gave them many crystals, they would still shoo those warriors away.

At most, the Disaster Realm warriors could only cultivate arduously in the 60x gravitational room. This was their upper limit. If they tried the 70x gravitational room, not long afterward, even their lives would be in danger. As the owner had considered their well-being, these facilities had clear rules about it.

# Chapter 499: Surpass the limit!

---

"You have the Sky Realm cultivation base. According to our rules, you can whet your practice in the chambers where the gravity is seventy or eighty times greater. These degrees of gravity suit you the best."

The muscular man smiled amicably, flashing his white teeth, "My name's Ba Si Teng. I'm going to the 70x gravitational room. But I only am in the Nirvana Realm. It should be a little bit arduous. Later, when you come in, can you please keep an eye on me? I'll pay you. How about ten crystals of the high-quality Essence Qi?"

Challenging oneself in the gravitational field with high-multiple gravitational chamber would draw a certain degree of danger. Some even got unconscious under the high pressure. Since the chambers here were big and divided into many smaller rooms, if no one found them unconscious, they could die.

Also, in the same room, if someone hated one and hit them when they were unconscious, their death would come even faster.

The Ice Emperor City was responsible for providing the training courts only. Before the warriors got in, they would remind them the rules and the restraint simply. After the warriors got in the gravitational room, they wouldn't care anymore. If something bad happened there, they had no alternatives.

"Oh, I'm sorry. I'm not going to the 70x gravitational room." Shi Yan shook his head, passing Ba Si Teng to the room which had twenty times greater gravity. He handed two medium quality crystals and then got in immediately.

Ba Si Teng and the hot-body woman were dumbstruck on looking at him enter the 20x gravitational room, their face stunned.

"Such a freak. He obviously has the Sky Realm cultivation base, but he wants to enter that 20x room? Such a waste of time!" Ba

Huo shook his head, not understanding the young man's action. He thought that with that man's cultivation realm, he could enter the room of at least seventy times greater gravity.

"Yeah, he's strange. Hard to understand him though." Ba Si Teng also wore a surprised look.

"Forget it, we'll watch over each other. Later when you cultivate, I will take care of you." Ba Huo mused and said. "When you don't feel well, just stop. We'll take turns to train. It should be no problem."

"Yeah, we can do that." Ba Si Teng didn't want to waste time. The two of them identified the room then handed the fee, entering the room that had seventy times the gravity.

The twenty times gravity room was almost empty. The one-thousand-square-meter ice room had many giant icicles. All kinds of stone tables and steel-iron discs were there to train warriors' power. There were many small holes in the walls of the room, which contained fresh water for the warriors to use.

This degree of gravitational chambers was suitable for Nascent Realm and Human Realm warriors to train their powers. Perhaps even the Second Sky and the Third Sky of Human Realm warriors disdained this place.

However today, it welcomed a Second Sky of Sky Realm warrior.

Right after he entered the room, Shi Yan with his Sky Realm cultivation base, under the circumstances that he didn't urge his Profound Qi, was struck, and even found it hard to walk.

The gravity in this room was just twenty times greater, but he felt like he had an extremely massive mountain put on his shoulders. Each step was really hard to take naturally.

His body was a hundred times heavier than a normal person originally.

After his Petrification Martial Spirit had mutated, besides the



intensity of his body that leaped up massively, the most obvious feature was that he became incredibly heavy.

He believed that even a steel or iron block with the same volume as him couldn't be as heavy as he was now.

Because he understood his body's situation well, he didn't choose the 70x gravitational chamber. Otherwise, he would be pushed to the ground with the extreme pressure there.

Without the power of the Profound Qi, Shi Yan was sauntering in the room with only the strange energy inside his flesh and tendons. He drenched his whole body with sweat after walking for just one hundred meters.

Under the twenty times greater pressure, at each step he took, the fibers of his muscles enlivened, while the strange power in his muscle fibers was like many small energy strings that naked eyes couldn't see operating. They generated small beams of electric current, getting absorbed in his entire body from the muscles.

To Shi Yan, dealing with this 20x gravitational room was much more strenuous than fighting a Sky Realm warrior.

Due to his tremendous weight, compared to the ordinary people, it was tough for him to adapt to this level of the gravitational chamber. Even the Human Realm warriors could feel comfortable training in this room, but to him, it was like a giant mountain put on his shoulder. If he didn't have the intimidating power in his flesh, he wouldn't even be able to walk.

Under these circumstances, every time he walked, the muscles in his legs bulged.

This was the situation where he didn't use the Profound Qi but only his energy from the flesh body. The reason why he did that was to activate the divine power residing in his muscles.

Inside the gravitational room, Shi Yan was soaking in his sweat while walking around the room. His face reddened as if he were

fighting strenuously with an invisible opponent.

"Phew phew!"

Gasping for his breath, Shi Yan sat down at a round table. His eyes were swollen and reddened, looking intimidating.

After one hour of training, he felt exhausted and couldn't bear it anymore. A part of the mysterious power hidden inside his muscles had been drained quickly. In just a short time, he could feel that this strange power had been used by one-third.

It was tougher than fighting with a Sky Realm warrior. But still, he didn't plan to urge his Profound Qi.

He needed to use the advantage of this gravitational room to whet his flesh body, urging the strange power in his muscles and seeking a way to supplement or even make it thrive faster.

A long time ago, he found that his muscles could store a part of that mysterious power. Different from the Profound Qi or the negative energy, it was a fierce, turbulent brute force. Once he urged it during a fight, it could immediately enhance the power of his attacks, rocketing up his powers.

Part of the reason why he could defeat enemies at higher realms was this brutal force in his muscles, besides the rampage he could urge from negative energies.

As the negative energy was increasing along with the absorption of the Profound Qi, they would gradually grow together. He had found this feature a long time ago.

However, a part of the mysterious energy in his muscles hadn't been supplemented or grown more after his Petrification Martial Spirit had completed its mutation.

If he could solve this problem, he could supplement the consumed amount of the mysterious energy in his muscles, or even help it thrive continually. He could have a way to steady his increasing powers this way.

Originally, he had usually searched for a way to break through this bottleneck. However, he made no progress. This time, as he had arrived the Ice Emperor City and seen the amazing training court, he suddenly had a good premonition.

When his weight had rocketed one hundred times heavier, it was much more strenuous for him to deal with the gravity than normal people.

Before he had arrived at the Grace Mainland, he was an extreme madman who had interest in extreme activities. After he entered this world, although he had been through so much stuff, this nature of his had never changed.

He loved challenges, risks and arduous training.

After taking a short break, he got up again and frowned, with his face slightly fierce. He started to walk around the gravitational room.

After two hours, the mysterious, strange energy in his muscles had been consumed completely.

He didn't stop because of that, and continued walking with great effort in the room. At this moment, without the support of the mysterious energy, his body started to shake.

This was way beyond his endurance.

However, Shi Yan wasn't frightened but quite happy.

His face was covered with sweat, his eyes red, and his face fierce. But, he suddenly burst out laughing in the room.

Only if he could surmount the extreme limit, his power could thrive more.

This was like a weightlifting athlete. Only if he could lift the hefty weight could he push his muscles to the extreme, which would damage his muscles. When these muscles got normal and repaired again, they would get bigger.

They were different situations but the same principles. At the moment, his muscles were shaking, and he recognized the tough question that troubled him a lot perhaps could be solved now.

He drew a heavy stone. It was unknown what material the stone was. His body was shaking as he was risking his strength to squeeze off the endurance limit of his flesh body.

Shi Yan didn't use a beam of Profound Qi or borrow any external force. He purely stood on the intrinsic potential of his fleshy body, pliable and insistent.

'Limit! Limit! You can't continue. Otherwise, you'll die!'

A voice screamed crazily in his head, asking him to stop immediately. It didn't allow him to risk his life like that.

He shut both his ears and eyes. Gritting his teeth under the formidable pressure, he continued.

Puff!

A tendon in his left leg broke under this life-threatening pressure.

So painful!

The broken tendon made his leg shiver. The tearing pain struck his nerves, spreading into his Sea of Consciousness.

But Shi Yan still insisted.

"Come on!"

Puff! Puff! Puff!

His tendons were getting stressed too much and ruptured. His legs went soft as they couldn't endure anymore. He fell on the ground.

Unbearable fatigue and pain flooded, invading him.

The extreme limit!

Shi Yan fainted at the spot.

Inside the room of 20x gravity, Shi Yan's body was cracked. Blood covered him as he was lying in a blood puddle. His body got wounded badly.

A white flame flew out in silence from the Blood Vein Ring. Waves of cold, white mist expanded, sealing the area around him in just a blink.

This gravitational chamber suddenly became the coldest place in the Ice Emperor City.

...

The City Master Palace.

A woman was cultivating her cold class technique, bringing her spirit, Qi, and soul into the cold air moving around the city. All of a sudden, she opened her eyes.

"The Ice Cold Flame!"

The woman shouted, then flew out of the City Master's Palace without any hesitation. She turned into an ice light, shooting towards Shi Yan's location.

At the same time.

In some corners of the Ice Emperor City, some Spirit Realm warriors at a certain level could feel the aura of the Ice Cold Flame, getting out from their training courts and flying towards the position at all cost.

# Chapter 500: Ice, Chill, Cold, and Frost

---

To warriors cultivating cold technique, the Ice Cold Flame was one of the most precious treasures in the world.

If the warriors cultivating this method could integrate the Ice Cold Flame into their bodies, the marvelous benefit could hardly be described with words. No matter it was their realm or the powers of their techniques, all were enhanced significantly.

In the same way, the warriors cultivating cold technique were more sensitive to the cold Qi released by the Ice Cold Flame.

The Spirit Realm warriors had an extremely delicate sense of changes in the heaven and earth, and the cold class warriors understood deeply about the cold energies.

Therefore, after the Ice Cold Flame revealed itself in the Ice Emperor City, some Spirit Realm warriors almost caught its aura right away.

These warriors couldn't restrain the excitement in their hearts for the magic spirit living beings in the legends like the Ice Cold Flame, as they put forth everything to get to the place first.

The Master of the Ice Emperor City had four adopted daughters. She used 'Ice (Bing), Chill (Han), Cold (Leng), and Frost (Shuang)' to name them. After she failed to enter the True God Realm, she handed the ruling role to Bing Qing Tong (lit. clear red ice – TL). So now, Bing Qing Tong was the current Master of the Ice Emperor City.

Han Cui (lit. cold green jade –TL), Leng Dan Qing (lit. cold painting – LT), and Shuang Yu Zhu (lit. frost and raindrop on a bamboo tree – TL) became the three grand elders of the Ice Emperor City. Together with Bing Qing Tong, they ruled the Ice Emperor City as the most powerful trinity of the Ice Emperor City.

Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, Leng Dan Qing, and Shuang Yu Zhu

followed the tradition of the Ice Emperor City to adopt some daughters with the innate endowment. Bing Qiang and Bing Wei were the adoptive daughters of Bing Qing Tong. When the ruling position of the city was to be handed over to the next generation, they would have to compete with daughters of Han Cui, Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu.

Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, Leng Dan Qing, and Shuang Yu Zhu all had the Spirit Realm cultivation base, in which, Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were at the Second Sky while Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu were one level lower, at the First Sky of Spirit Realm.

After they sensed the Ice Cold Flame's aura in the Ice Emperor City, the four most powerful women of the Ice Emperor City didn't hesitate at all, flying in Shi Yan's direction with their max speed.

Shortly, Bing Qing Tong appeared in the training court.

Warriors of the Ice Emperor City watching over the gravitational rooms were leisurely discussing the news of the city in front of the chambers. As they saw Bing Qing Tong, they were startled, bending down to greet her.

Bing Qing Tong swayed her snow-white hand, didn't say anything and got into the 20x gravity room where Shi Yan was lying.

Inside the room, the shattered wounds on Shi Yan's body had been healed. The magical resiliency of his Immortal Martial Spirit had healed half of his broken tendons and veins. As long as he had time, it would take around ten minutes more to restore all of his ruptured tendons and veins, which would leave no side effects to him.

His simple blue warrior clothing was dyed with red blood. Shi Yan was still unconscious, and not yet awakened.

The Ice Cold Flame turned into a white flame, floating behind

Shi Yan like snowflakes.

A pair of beautiful eyes that could move people hearts were mounted on Bing Qing Tong's painting-like face, like a pair of shining stars. She was wearing a white, royal dress, with small jade beads hanging on the hem. The cold and arrogant aura of a ruler expanded from her graceful body.

Her slender willow-leaf eyebrows slightly frowned, raking over Shi Yan. Then, her eyes shifted to the Ice Cold Flame and brightened. Her red lips shivered as she was too excited.

It was the Ice Cold Flame indeed!

At first glance, she could confirm that the white flame bobbing next to Shi Yan was the most precious treasure that the cold class warriors always yearned for.

If she could get this strange treasure, her competence would leap up to another level in just a blink of an eye. The bottleneck she had faced for quite a long time should be broken through too.

Whizz Whizz Whizz!

Three strange sounds echoed at the same time as three beams of light appeared. Immediately, in this 20x gravity room, there were three more beautiful women with mesmerizing appearance that could be seen. They all had the cold aura, wearing white or silvery dresses covering their beautiful bodies. Their manners were noble, and their realms weren't low either.

After the three beautiful women appeared, they didn't bother to give Shi Yan a look as they fixed their eyes on the Ice Cold Flame. Their eyes were sparkling excitedly as if they were beholding the most beautiful gem in the world. Their bodies were fixed, unable to move.

"It's the Ice Cold Flame! The ice-cold heaven flame in legends!"

Han Cui's voice trembled. Her delicate body shook as she couldn't help but step forward, extending her left arm. A Snow



Frost Cold Grass spiritual herb with dense cold attribute emerged in her palm. The Snow Frost Cold Grass released a thick cold air, swaying and overflowing the place with its intoxicating fragrance. Suddenly, it flew toward the Ice Cold Flame.

The Snow Frost Cold Grass was a kind of spiritual herb with cold attributes. This thing was a luxury item which had a special effect on the Ice Cold Flame, as it could enhance the flame's intelligence.

At first move, Han Cui had offered the precious Snow Frost Cold Grass in an attempt to please the Ice Cold Flame and make it consider her as its master. Creatures with intelligence would naturally have the intention to get close to the ones who offered them goodwill. They could even make the ones their masters. However, it didn't apply to the Ice Cold Flame.

When the Snow Frost Cold Grass approached it, the Ice Cold Flame didn't react, just floating next to Shi Yan. It didn't have the intention to take the grass.

"Oh!"

Han Cui let out a slight scream. She beamed a smile that charmed people's hearts. Her aura was as cold as ice, but this smile appeared to be the acme of her beauty and deportment. "Boy, you don't like this Snow Frost Cold Grass? Don't worry, I have some other spiritual herbs and stuff of the cold class which are very suitable for you. If you're willing to follow me, I'll give you it all. How does it sound?"

The Ice Cold Flame was aloof.

"Sister, don't waste your mind on it. It has a master already." Bing Qing Tong said coldly. "Don't you see that it revealed itself because it wanted to protect the unconscious guy over there? This spiritual being has intellect. It won't get close to you because of your favor."

"I know it has a master."

Han Cui smiled wickedly, as murderous intention flared up from her eyes. She looked at Shi Yan, "Kill him. It has no master then, right? How simple this option is. Why do you need to calculate more? You came here first. Are you going to wait for its master to wake up and negotiate with him? Da-jie, since when you've become that kind?"

Leng Dan Qing was surprised, showing her smiling but not actually smiling face. She mocked, throwing a glance at Bing Qing Tong.

This woman had a pair of phoenix eyes, with deep, dark, and cold aura. Her appearance was so extraordinary that it could move people's mind, but it gave people a gloomy feeling as well.

"Da-jie has something worrying her." Shuang Yu Zhu was closer to Bing Qing Tong, as she spoke up to give way to the other. "Da-jie, this young man has only the Sky Realm cultivation base. He seems to be meeting a bottleneck in this gravitational training court. Do you see anything improper?"

"This is the 20x gravity room," said Bing Qing Tong with a soft voice.

"What?" Han Cui was shocked, burst out laughing. "A Sky Realm warrior fainted in the 20x gravity room? This is silly, but lovely though. Haha... I don't know what luck he had to cultivate to the Sky Realm. He also has the Ice Cold Flame. Interesting, indeed."

"Each heaven flame has its own consciousness. They will choose an extraordinary company. Regarding making the judgment, the heaven flames are more accurate than us. Anyway, a good company with strong potential and innate endowment is crucial for their growth in hundreds or even thousands of years. Every kind of heaven flame's very cautious with this."

Bing Qing Tong's face was solemn, "The Ice Cold Flame isn't dumb. The one it has chosen should have something special. This man has the Sky Realm cultivation base, but he chose to cultivate

in the twenty times greater gravity. Don't you see it's weird? Do you really think that he's stupid or what? "

"Well, whether he's really stupid or not, he's just Sky Realm warrior. Is he worth your worry?" Han Cui disdained with a cold smile. "Da-jie, the higher your position is, the more chickened you have become. Why is that? The chance of once in a blue moon is right in front of you. Will you let it slip away like that?

"I'm not going to take action on him." Bing Qing Tong mused and then took one step backward, speaking with her cold tone. "If you want to do anything, my advice is to wait for him to wake up. Let's observe first to see if anything is abnormal."

"You're too cautious." Han Cui chuckled coldly. "You do worry too much. He's just a Sky Realm warrior. No wonder why our Ice Emperor City is still the lowest ranked city among the seven cities of the Fighting Union. Sigh, don't blame my mouth. It's not okay, you know. You failed our adoptive mother's wishes."

"Da-jie, you really just want to stand and stare?" worried Shuang Yu Zhu.

"Fourth Sister, don't concern yourself with it. We will just watch." Bing Qing Tong said softly, as a strange light sparkled in her beautiful eyes.

Shuang Yu Zhu was stunned. Later on, she quieted down and nodded, not saying anything further.

She knew Bing Qing Tong wasn't an unwise leader. Whenever her pretty eyes sparkled with this strange light, it meant she had found something, and had other perfect plans for the matter.

"Third Sister, you join hands with me. We're going to tame the Ice Cold Flame together." Han Cui looked at Leng Dan Qing.

"I'll follow you," Leng Dan Qing smiled. The two pretty women exchanged looks and then stepped towards the Ice Cold Flame with caution. The powers of their bodies started to gather.

However, at this moment, Shi Yan's brows convulsed. This meant he was about to wake up.

The Ice Cold Flame suddenly released a pure cold air, pouring into Shi Yan and directly entering deep inside his Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan was still unconscious. With the urge of this cold current, he jolted up, looking at the beautiful ladies walking towards him with a cold, brutish face.

# Table of Contents

## [God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Rampage](#)

[Chapter 402: Mistaken](#)

[Chapter 403: Diamond Martial Spirit](#)

[Chapter 404: Hit to deform it!](#)

[Chapter 405: Sky Realm](#)

[Chapter 406: The Mysterious Gate](#)

[Chapter 407: Blacksmith' Secret of Success](#)

[Chapter 408: Restore the original shape](#)

[Chapter 409: Nine types of Heaven Flames](#)

[Chapter 410: The abnormal underground](#)

[Chapter 411: Sentimental Selection](#)

[Chapter 412: Swallow hollow spirits](#)

[Chapter 413: The heart with a grudge](#)

[Chapter 414: Slap on the face](#)

[Chapter 415: Submitted](#)

[Chapter 416: Spin Cocoon](#)

[Chapter 417: The swamp's terrifying changes.](#)

[Chapter 418: Corpse-eating Demonic Insect](#)

[Chapter 419: Life Original Fluid](#)

[Chapter 420: Take it on](#)

[Chapter 421: Surging tide mind](#)

[Chapter 422: King of Demonic Insects](#)

[Chapter 423: Kill them all!](#)

[Chapter 424: Promise](#)

[Chapter 425: Exchange](#)

[Chapter 426: The God Blood's magical effects](#)

[Chapter 427: Farewell](#)

[Chapter 428: The Return Journey](#)

[Chapter 429: The Dark Dwellers](#)

[Chapter 430: Tear the mask](#)

[Chapter 431: Shi Yan's influence](#)

[Chapter 432: Seabed](#)

[Chapter 433: The Naga Tribe](#)

[Chapter 434: I like a woman who smiles at me!](#)  
[Chapter 435: Changes of Temperature in human emotions](#)  
[Chapter 436: A turn for the better? Shi Yan?](#)  
[Chapter 437: The most difficult time comes](#)  
[Chapter 438: All forces join hands](#)  
[Chapter 439: Strong wine grows murderous spirit](#)  
[Chapter 440: Enter the stage!](#)  
[Chapter 441: Bloody Repression](#)  
[Chapter 442: Reversal](#)  
[Chapter 443: It was good to have you here](#)  
[Chapter 444: Domineering](#)  
[Chapter 445: Attention](#)  
[Chapter 446: Arch the eyebrow](#)  
[Chapter 447: Must change!](#)  
[Chapter 448: Force you to give in!](#)  
[Chapter 449: The Matriarch of the Naga Tribe](#)  
[Chapter 450: Wild Schemes](#)  
[Chapter 451: Rich Blacksmith Resources](#)  
[Chapter 452: Pacifying](#)  
[Chapter 453: Memory transmission](#)  
[Chapter 454: First time doing blacksmith job!](#)  
[Chapter 455: Top Dog](#)  
[Chapter 456: The strongest warrior!](#)  
[Chapter 457: Famous reputation spreads far and wide](#)  
[Chapter 458: See clearly](#)  
[Chapter 459: Entourage of Eight](#)  
[Chapter 460: Silver Stone Fort](#)  
[Chapter 461: The Sea Races' Banquet](#)  
[Chapter 462: Shi Yan from the Yang Family!](#)  
[Chapter 463: Safely Free](#)  
[Chapter 464: Look, you are not strong enough!](#)  
[Chapter 465: Vicious Qi overflows firmament](#)  
[Chapter 466: Second Sky of Sky Realm](#)  
[Chapter 467: Remaining might](#)  
[Chapter 468: Awaken](#)  
[Chapter 469: The War Devil](#)  
[Chapter 470: Come out!](#)  
[Chapter 471: Rip in half!](#)  
[Chapter 472: Strong Crowd](#)

[Chapter 473: Imposing](#)  
[Chapter 474: Boldness](#)  
[Chapter 475: Final decision](#)  
[Chapter 476: Strong Wind](#)  
[Chapter 477: Exposing](#)  
[Chapter 478: Those upholding justice will find help everywhere](#)  
[Chapter 479: Fulfill expectations](#)  
[Chapter 480: Showing remarkable ability](#)  
[Chapter 481: Corpse Mount, Corpse Sea](#)  
[Chapter 482: Wind and clouds discolor](#)  
[Chapter 483: Cao Qiu Dao](#)  
[Chapter 484: Yang Tian Emperor](#)  
[Chapter 485: Determine firmament and earth!](#)  
[Chapter 486: Spoils of War](#)  
[Chapter 487: Master?](#)  
[Chapter 488: We'll do as you say](#)  
[Chapter 489: New legend!](#)  
[Chapter 490: Visit the old place](#)  
[Chapter 491: Sweep away!](#)  
[Chapter 492: Proper arrangement](#)  
[Chapter 493: Pay the favor with the body ?](#)  
[Chapter 494: The coldest place](#)  
[Chapter 495: Two beautiful sisters](#)  
[Chapter 496: Retrieve](#)  
[Chapter 497: Two sisters of a blended family](#)  
[Chapter 498: Ice Emperor City](#)  
[Chapter 499: Surpass the limit!](#)  
[Chapter 500: Ice, Chill, Cold, and Frost](#)